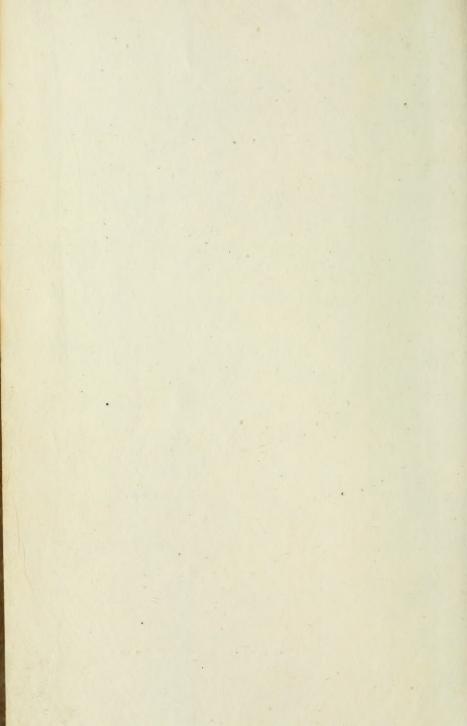
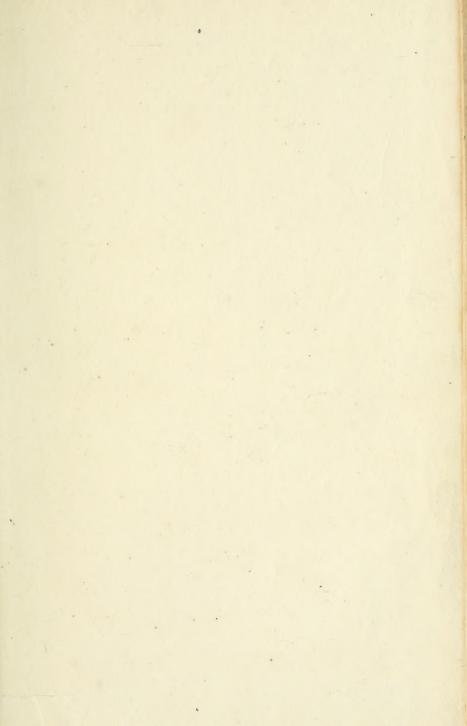
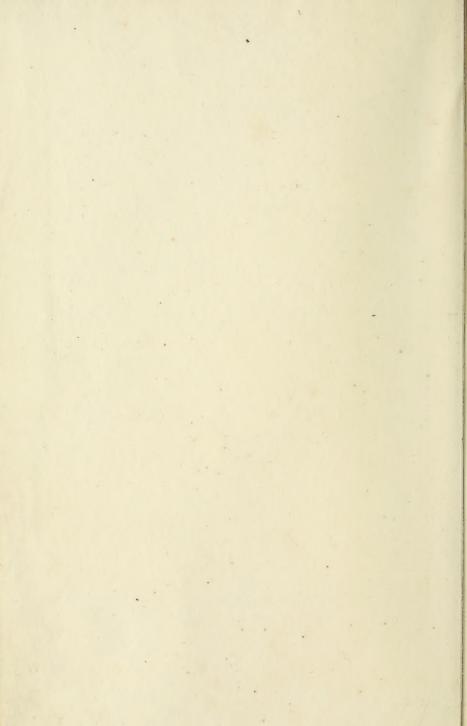


Goldwin Smith.

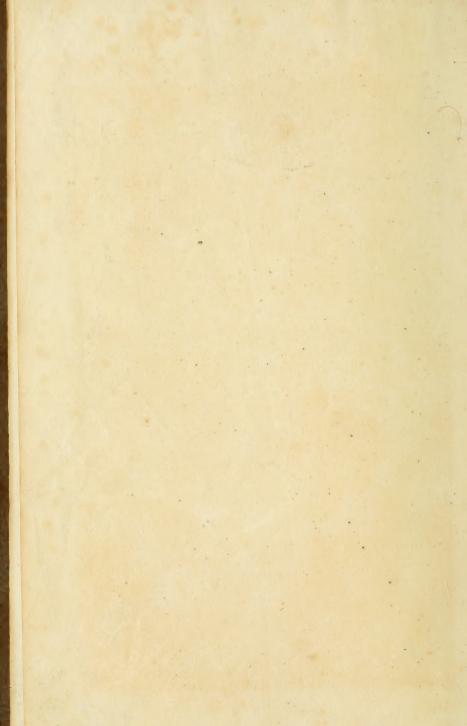


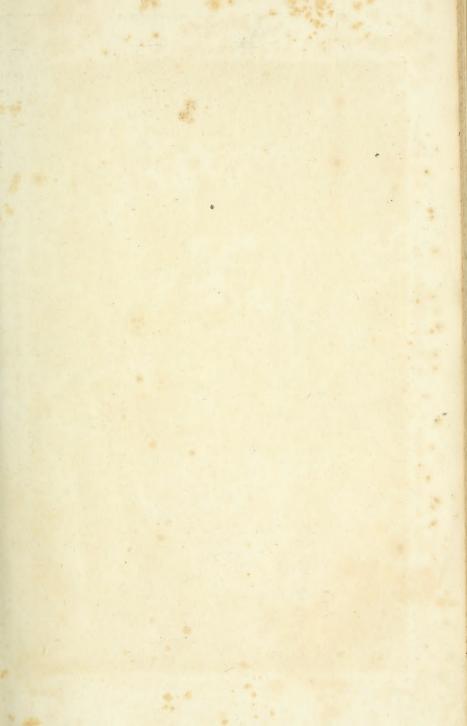


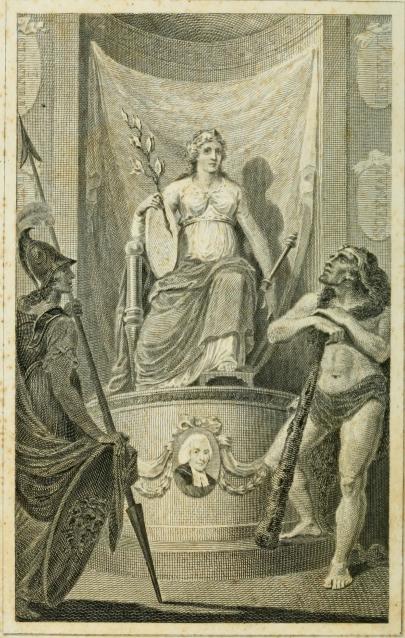












Ansell del.

Peaale sculp!

HG 16528h

THE

HISTORY

OF THE

REIGN

OF THE

EMPEROR CHARLES V.

WITH

A VIEW of the PROGRESS of SOCIETY in EUROPE, from the Subversion of the Roman Empire, to the Beginning of the Sixteenth Century.

IN FOUR VOLUMES.

By WILLIAM ROBERTSON, D.D.

PRINCIPAL OF THE UNIVERSITY OF EDINBURGH,
HISTORIOGRAPHER TO HIS MAJESTY FOR SCOTLAND, AND
MEMBER OF THE ROYAL ACADEMY OF HISTORY AT MADRID.

VOLUME I.

THE ELEVENTH EDITION.

LONDON:

Printed for Cadell and Davies; T. Payne; Vernor, Hood, and Sharpe; R. Lea; J. Nunn; Gray and Son; Cuthell and Martin; E. Jeffery; J. and A. Arch; W. Stewart; J. Carpenter; Phillips and Fardon; R. Flover; J. Booker; J. Murray; S. Bacster; B. Crosby; R. H. Evans; Payne and Mackinlay; and Jos. Harding: and for E. Balfour, at Edinburgh.



KING.

SIR,

I PRESUME to lay before Your Majesty the History of a Period, which, if the abilities of the Writer were equal to the dignity of the Subject, would not be unworthy the attention of a Monarch, who is no less a Judge than a Patron of Literary Merit.

HISTORY claims it as her prerogative to offer inftruction to Kings, as well as to their people. What reflections the Reign of the Emperor

CHARLES V. may fuggeft to Your Majesty, it becomes not me to conjecture. But your fubjects cannot observe the various calamities, which that Monarch's ambition to be diftinguished as a Conqueror, brought upon his dominions, without recollecting the felicity of their own times, and looking up with gratitude to their Sovereign, who, during the fervour of youth, and amidst the career of victory, poffessed such self-command, and maturity of judgment, as to fet bounds to his own triumphs, and prefer the bleffings of peace to the splendour of military glory.

POSTERITY will not only celebrate the wifdom of Your Majesty's choice, but will enumerate the many virtues, which render Your Reign conspicuous for a facred regard to all the duties incumbent on the Sovereign of a Free People.

DEDICATION.

It is our happiness to feel the influence of these Virtues; and to live under the dominion of a Prince, who delights more in promoting the Public Welfare, than in receiving the just Praise of his Royal Beneficence. I am,

SIR,

YOUR MAJESTY's

Most faithful Subject,

And most dutiful Servant,

WILLIAM ROBERTSON.



THE

PREFACE.

NO period in the history of one's own country can be considered as altogether uninteresting. Such transactions as tend to illustrate the progress of its constitution, laws, or manners, merit the utmost attention. Even remote and minute events are objects of a curiosity, which, being natural to the human mind, the gratisfication of it is attended with pleasure,

But, with respect to the history of foreign States, we must set other bounds to our desire of information. The universal progress of science, during the two last centuries, the art of printing, and other obvious causes, have filled Europe with such a multiplicity of histories, and with such vast collections of historical materials, that

the term of human life is too fhort for the fludy or even the perufal of them. It is necessary, then, not only for those who are called to conduct the affairs of nations, but for such as inquire and reason concerning them, to remain satisfied with a general knowledge of distant events, and to confine their study of history in detail chiefly to that period, in which the several States of Europe having become intimately connected, the operations of one power are so felt by all, as to influence their councils, and to regulate their measures.

Some boundary, then, ought to be fixed in order to feparate these periods. An æra should be pointed out, prior to which, each country, little connected with those around it, may trace its own history apart; after which, the transactions of every considerable nation in Europe become interesting and instructive to all. With this intention I undertook to write the history of the Emperor Charles V. It was during his administration that the powers of Europe were formed into one great political system, in which

which each took a ftation, wherein it has fince remained with lefs variation, than could have been expected after the shocks occafioned by so many internal revolutions, and so many foreign wars. The great events which happened then have not hitherto spent their force. The political principles and maxims, then established, still continue to operate. The ideas concerning the balance of power, then introduced or rendered general, still influence the councils of nations.

The age of Charles V. may therefore be confidered as the period at which the political state of Europe began to assume a new form. I have endeavoured to render my account of it, an introduction to the history of Europe subsequent to his reign. While his numerous Biographers describe his personal qualities and actions; while the historians of different countries relate occurrences the consequences of which were local or transient, it hath been my purpose to record only those great transactions in his reign, the effects of which were universal, or continue to be permanent.

As my readers could derive little inftruction from fuch a hiftory of the reign of CHARLES V. without fome information concerning the state of Europe previous to the fixteenth century, my defire of fupplying this has produced a preliminary volume, in which I have attempted to point out and to explain the great causes and events, to whose operation all the improvements in the political state of Europe, from the subversion of the Roman Empire to the beginning of the fixteenth century, must be ascribed. I have exhibited a view of the progress of society in Europe, not only with respect to interior government, laws, and manners, but with respect to the command of the national force requifite in foreign operations; and I have described the political constitution of the principal States in Europe at the time when CHARLES V. began his reign.

In this part of my work I have been led into feveral critical disquisitions, which belong more properly to the province of the lawyer or antiquary, than to that of the historian. These I have placed at the end of the first volume, under the title of Proofs and Illustrations. Many of my readers will, probably, give little attention to fuch refearches. To fome they may, perhaps, appear the most curious and interesting part of the work. I have carefully pointed out the fources from which I have derived information, and have cited the writers on whose authority I rely with a minute exactness, which might appear to border upon oftentation, if it were possible to be vain of having read books, many of which nothing but the duty of examining with accuracy whatever I laid before the Public, would have induced me to open. As my inquiries conducted me often into paths which were obscure or little frequented, fuch confiant references to the authors who have been my guides, were not only necessary for authenticating the facts which are the foundations of my reasonings, but may be useful in pointing out the way to fuch as shall hereafter hold the fame course, and in enabling them to carry on their researches with greater facility and fuccess.

4.

EVERY intelligent reader will observe one omifion in my work, the reason of which it is necessary to explain. I have given no account of the conquests of Mexico and Peru, or of the establishment of the Spanish colonies in the continent and islands of America. The history of these events I originally intended to have related at confiderable length. But upon a nearer and more attentive confideration of this part of my plan, I found that the discovery of the new world; the state of fociety among its ancient inhabitants; their character, manners, and arts; the genius of the European fettlements in its various provinces, together with the inflence of these upon the systems of policy or commerce in Europe, were fubjects fo splendid and important, that a fuperficial view of them could afford little fatisfaction; and, on the other hand, to treat of them as extensively as they merited, must produce an episode, disproportionate to the principal work. I have therefore referved these for a separate history; which, if the performance now offered

offered to the Public shall receive its approbation, I purpose to undertake.

Though, by omitting fuch confiderable but detached articles in the reign of CHARLES V. I have circumfcribed my narration within more narrow limits, I am yet perfuaded, from this view of the intention and nature of the work which I thought it necessary to lay before my readers, that the plan must still appear to them too extensive, and the undertaking too arduous. I have often felt them to be fo. But my conviction of the utility of fuch a hiftory prompted me to perfevere. With what fuccess I have excuted it, the Public must now judge. I wait, not without folicitude, for its decifion: to which I shall submit with a respectful silence.

DIRECTIONS to the BINDER.

Place the Head of the Author before the Title Vol. I.

The Head of Charles V. before the Title Vol. II.

Francis before the Title Vol. III.

Charles V. expiring, before the Title Vol. IV.

VIEW

OF THE

PROGRESS OF SOCIETY

IN

EUROPE,

FROM THE

SUBVERSION OF THE ROMAN EMPIRE,

TO THE

BEGINNING OF THE SIXTEENTH CENTURY.

SECTION I.

View of the Progress of Society in Europe, with respect to interior Government, Laws, and Manners.

WO great revolutions have happened in the political state and in the manners of the The effects European nations. The first was occasioned by the progress of the Roman power; the second on the state by the subversion of it. When the spirit of conquest led the armies of Rome beyond the Alps, they found all the countries which they invaded, inhabited by people whom they denominated barbarians, but who were nevertheless brave and Vol. I. B inde-

of the Roman power

of Europe.

SECT.

2

SECT. independent. These defended their ancient pos-

fessions with obstinate valour. It was by the fuperiority of their discipline, rather than that of their courage, that the Romans gained any advantage over them. A fingle battle did not, as among the effeminate inhabitants of Asia, decide the fate of a state. The vanquished people refumed their arms with fresh spirit, and their undisciplined valour, animated by the love of liberty, supplied the want of conduct as well as The defola- of union. During those long and fierce strugtion which gles for dominion or independence, the countries of Europe were successively laid waste, a great part of their inhabitants perished in the field, many were carried into flavery, and a feeble remnant, incapable of further refutance, submitted to the Roman power.

tion which

The improvements which it mfroduced.

THE Romans having thus desolated Europe, fet themselves to civilize it. The form of government which they established in the conquered provinces, though fevere, was regular, and preferved public tranquillity. As a confolation for the lofs of liberty, they communicated their arts, sciences, language, and manners, to their new subjects. Europe began to breathe, and to recover strength after the calamities which it had undergone; agriculture was encouraged; population increased; the ruined cities were rebuilt; new towns were founded; an appearance of profperity fucceeded, and repaired, in some degree, the havock of war.

This state, however, was far from being happy sect. or favourable to the improvement of the human mind. The vanquished nations were disarmed by The bad their conquerors, and overawed by foldiers kept ces of their in pay to restrain them. They were given up as a prey to rapacious governors, who plundered them with impunity; and were drained of their wealth by exorbitant taxes, levied with so little attention to the fituation of the provinces, that the impositions were often increased in proportion to their inability to support them. They were deprived of their most enterprizing citizens, who reforted to a diftant capital in quest of preferment, or of riches; and were accustomed in all their actions to look up to a fuperior, and tamely to receive his commands. Under fo many deprefsing circumstances, it was hardly possible that they could retain vigour or generofity of mind. The martial and independent spirit, which had distinguished their ancestors, became, in a great meafure, extinct among all the people fubjected to the Roman yoke; they loft not only the habit but even the capacity of deciding for themselves, or of acting from the impulse of their own minds; and the dominion of the Romans, like that of all great Empires, degraded and debased the human species [A].

A Society in fuch a flate could not subfift long. There were defects in the Roman government, barbarous even in its most perfect form, which threatened its

confequendominion.

The irrup tion of the

[A] NOTE I.

SECT. diffolution. Time ripened these original seeds of corruption, and gave birth to many new diforders. A constitution, unfound, and worn out, must have fallen into pieces of itself, without any external shock. The violent irruption of the Goths, Vandals, Huns, and other barbarians, haftened this event, and precipitated the downfall of the Empire. New nations feemed to arise, and to rush from unknown regions, in order to take vengeance on the Romans for the calamities which they had inflicted on mankind. These fierce tribes either inhabited the various provinces in Germany which had never been subdued by the Romans, or were fcattered over those vast countries in the north of Europe, and north-west of Asia, which are now occupied by the Danes, the Swedes, the Poles, the subjects of the Russian Empire, and the Tartars. Their condition, and transactions, previous to their invasion of the Empire, are but little known. Almost all our information with respect to these is derived from the Romans; and as they did not penetrate far into countries which were at that time uncultivated and uninviting, the accounts of their original state given by the Roman hittorians, are extremely imperfect. The rude inhabitants themselves, destitute of science, as well as of records, and without leifure, or curiofity to inquire into remote events, retained, perhaps, fome indiffinct memory of recent occurrences, but beyond these, all was buried in oblivion, or involved in darkness and in fable [B].

THE prodigious swarms which poured in upon the Empire from the beginning of the fourth century to the final extinction of the Roman power, State of the have given rife to an opinion that the countries from which whence they iffued were crowded with inhabitants; they iffued, and various theories have been formed to account for fuch an extraordinary degree of population as hath produced these countries the appellation of The Storehouse of Nations. But if we consider, that the countries possessed by the people who invaded the Empire were of vast extent; that a great part of these was covered with woods and marshes; that some of the most considerable of the barbarous nations subfifted entirely by hunting or pafturage, in both which states of society large tracts of land are required for maintaining a few inhabitants; and that all of them were strangers to the arts and industry, without which population cannot increase to any great degree, we must conclude, that these countries could not be so populous in ancient times as they are in the prefent, when they still continue to be less peopled than any other part of Europe or of Asia.

But the same circumstances that prevented the The people barbarous nations from becoming populous, con-fit for dar-ing entertributed to inspire, or to strengthen, the martial prises. spirit by which they were distinguished. Inured by the rigour of their climate, or the poverty of their foil, to hardships which rendered their bodies firm, and their minds vigorous; accustomed to a course of life which was a continual preparation for action; and difdaining every occupation but

SECT.

that of war or of hunting; they undertook and profecuted their military enterprifes with an ardour and impetuofity, of which men foftened by the refinements of more polifhed times can scarcely form any idea [C].

The motives of their first excursions.

THEIR first inroads into the Empire proceeded rather from the love of plunder, than from the defire of new fettlements. Roused to arms by some enterprifing or popular leader, they fallied out of their forests; broke in upon the frontier provinces with irrefisfible violence; put all who opposed them to the fword; carried off the most valuable effects of the inhabitants; dragged along multitudes of captives in chains; wasted all before them with fire or fword; and returned in triumph to their wilds and fastnesses. Their fuccess, together with the accounts which they gave of the unknown conveniences and luxuries that abounded in countries better cultivated, or bleffed with a milder climate than their own, excited new adventurers, and exposed the frontier to new devastations.

Their reafons for fetthing in the countries which they conquered.

When nothing was left to plunder in the adjacent provinces, ravaged by frequent excursions, they marched farther from home, and finding it difficult, or dangerous to return, they began to fettle in the countries which they had subdued. The sudden and short Excursions in quest of booty, which had alarmed and disquieted the Empire, ccased; a more dreadful calamity impended. Great bodies of armed men, with their wives and

[C] NOTE III.

children,

children, and flaves and flocks, iffued forth, like sect. regular colonies, in quest of new settlements. People who had no cities, and feldom any fixed habitation, were fo little attached to their native foil, that they migrated without reluctance from one place to another. New adventurers followed them. The lands which they deferted were occupied by more remote tribes of barbarians. These, in their turn, pushed forward into more The extent fertile countries, and, like a torrent continually of their fettlements. increasing, rolled on, and swept every thing before them. In less than two centuries from their first irruption, barbarians of various names and lineage plundered and took possession of Thrace, Pannonia, Gaul, Spain, Africa, and at last of Italy, and Rome itself. The vast fabrick of the Roman power, which it had been the work of ages to perfect, was in that short period overturned from the foundation.

MANY concurring causes prepared the way for The cirthis great revolution, and enfured fuccess to the which ocnations which invaded the Empire. The Roman cafoned the dewacommonwealth had conquered the world by the fall of the Roman wifom of its civil maxims, and the rigour of its Empire. military discipline. But, under the Emperors, the former were forgotten or despised, and the latter was gradually relaxed. The armies of the Empire in the fourth and fifth centuries bore scarcely any refemblance to those invincible legions which had been victorious wherever they marched. Inflead of freemen, who voluntarily took arms from the



SECT. love of glory, or of their country, provincials and barbarians were bribed or forced into fervice. These were too feeble, or too proud, to fubmit to the fatigue of military duty. They even complained of the weight of their defensive armour as intolerable, and laid it aside. Infantry, from which the armies of ancient Rome derived their vigour and stability, fell into contempt; the effeminate and undisciplined foldiers of later times could hardly be brought to venture into the field but on horseback. These wretched troops, however, were the only guardians of the Empire. The jealoufy of despotism had deprived the people of the use of arms; and subjects, oppressed and rendered incapable of defending themselves, had neither spirit nor inclination to refift their invaders, from whom they had little to fear, because their condition could hardly be rendered more unhappy. At the fame time that the martial spirit became extinct, the revenues of the Empire gradually diminished. The taste for the luxuries of the East increased to fuch a pitch in the Imperial court, that great fums were carried into India, from which, in the channel of commerce, money never returns. By the large fubfidies paid to the barbarous nations, a still greater quantity of specie was withdrawn from circulation. The frontier provinces, wasted by frequent incursions, became unable to pay the customary tribute; and the wealth of the world, which had long centered in the capital of the Empire, ceased to flow thither in the same abundance, or was diverted into other channels. The limits of the Empire continued to be as extensive as ever, while the spirit requisite for its defence declined, and its resources were exhausted. A vast body, languid, and almost unanimated, became incapable of any effort to fave itself, and was easily overpowered. The Emperors, who had the abiolute direction of this disordered system, funk in the foftness of eastern luxury, shut up within the walls of a palace, ignorant of war, unacquainted with affairs, and governed entirely by women and eunuchs, or by ministers equally esseminate, trembled at the approach of danger, and, under circumstances which called for the utmost vigour in counsel as well as in action, discovered all the impotent irrefolution of fear, and of folly.

In every respect, the condition of the barbarous nations was the reverle of that of the Romans. Among the former, the martial spirit was in full the sucreis vigour; their leaders were hardy and enterprifing; burous atthe arts which had enervated the Romans were tions. unknown; and fuch was the nature of their military institutions, that they brought forces into the field without any trouble, and supported them at little expence. The mercenary and effeminate troops stationed on the frontier, astonished at their fierceness, either fled at their approach, or were routed on the first onset. The feeble expedient to which the Emperors had recourse, of taking large bodies of the barbarians into pay, and of employing them to repel new invaders, instead of retarding, hastened the destruction of the Empire. These mercenaries foon turned their arms against their mafters,

cumftances which contributed to of the bai-

SECT. mafters, and with greater advantage than ever: for, by ferving in the Roman armies, they had acquired all the discipline, or skill in war, which the Romans still retained; and, upon adding these to their native ferocity, they became altogether irrefiftible

The Spirit with which they carried on war.

Bur though from these, and many other causes, the progress and conquests of the nations which overran the Empire, became so extremely rapid, they were accompanied with horrible devastations, and an incredible destruction of the human species. Civilized nations, which take arms upon cool reflection, from motives of policy or prudence, with a view to guard against some distant danger, or to prevent some remote contingency, carry on their hostilities with so little rancour or animosity, that war among them is difarmed of half its terrors. Barbarians are strangers to such refinements. They rush into war with impetuosity, and prosecute it with violence. Their fole object is to make their enemies feel the weight of their vengeance; nor does their rage fubfide until it be fatiated with inflicting on them every possible calamity. It is with fuch a spirit that the savage tribes in America carry on their petty wars. It was with the fame foirit that the more powerful and no lefs fierce barbarians in the north of Europe, and of Afia, fell upon the Roman Empire.

The defolation which thev broug'st upon Europe

WHEREVER they marched, their rout was marked with blood. They ravaged or destroyed all around them. They made no distinction between what was facred and what was profane. SECT. They respected no age, or fex, or rank. What escaped the fury of the first inundation, perished in those which followed it. The most fertile and populous provinces were converted into deferts, in which were fcattered the ruins of villages and cities, that afforded shelter to a few miserable inhabitants, whom chance had preferved, or the fword of the enemy, wearied with destroying, had fpared. The conquerors who first settled in the countries which they had wasted, were expelled or exterminated by new invaders, who, coming from regions farther removed from the civilized parts of the world, were still more fierce and rapacious. This brought fresh calamities upon mankind, which did not cease, until the north, by pouring forth fuccessive swarms, was drained of people, and could no longer furnish instruments of destruction. Famine and pestilence, which always march in the train of war, when it ravages with fuch inconfiderate cruelty, raged in every part of Europe, and completed its fufferings. If a man were called to fix upon the period in the history of the world, during which the condition of the human race was most calamitous and afflicted, he would, without hefitation, name that which elapfed from the death of Theodofius the Great, to the establishment of the Lombards in Italy^a. The contemporary authors, who beheld

² Theodosius died A. D. 305, the reign of Alboious in Lombardy began A. D. 571; so that this period was 176 years.

SECT.

that scene of desolation, labour and are at a loss for expressions to describe the horror of it. The scourge of God, The destroyer of nations, are the dreadful epithets by which they distinguish the most noted of the barbarous leaders; and they compare the ruin which they had brought on the world, to the havock occasioned by earthquakes, conflagrations, or deluges, the most formidable and satal calamities which the imagination of man can conceive.

The univerfal change which they occasioned in the state of Europe.

Bur no expressions can convey so perfect an idea of the destructive progress of the barbarians, as that which must strike an attentive observer, when he contemplates the total change which he will discover in the state of Europe, after it began to recover fome degree of tranquillity, towards the close of the fixth century. The Saxons were by that time masters of the southern and more fertile provinces of Britain; the Franks, of Gaul; the Huns, of Pannonia; the Goths of Spain; the Goths and Lombards, of Italy and the adjacent provinces. Very faint vestiges of the Roman policy, jurisprudence, arts, or literature remained. New forms of government, new laws, new manners, new dreffes, new languages, and new names of men and countries, were every where introduced. To make a great or fudden alteration with respect to any of these, unless where the ancient inhabitants of a country have been almost totally exterminated, has proved an undertaking beyond the power of the greatest

greatest conquerors [D]. The great change which the fettlement of the barbarous nations occasioned in the state of Europe, may, therefore, be considered as a more decifive proof than even the testimony of contemporary historians, of the destructive violence with which these invaders carried on their conquests, and of the havock which they had made from one extremity of this quarter of the globe to the other [E].



feeds of order, and endeavour to discover the first rudiments of the policy and laws now established in Europe. To this fource the historians of its different kingdoms have attempted, though with less attention and industry than the importance of the inquiry merits, to trace back the inflitutions and customs peculiar to their countrymen. It is not my province to give a minute detail of the progress of government and manners in each particular nation, whose transactions are the object of the following history. But, in order to exhibit a just view of the state of Europe at the opening of the fixteenth century, it is necessary to look back, and

to contemplate the condition of the northern nations upon their first settlement in those countries which they occupied. It is necessary to mark the great steps by which they advanced from barbarism to refinement, and to point out those general principles and events which, by their uniform as

general wreck of nations, we must fearch for the

In the obscurity of the chaos occasioned by this frate of diforder the laws of government now ettab. lifhed mu? be traced.

[D] NOTE V.

[E] NOTE V.



SECT. well as extensive operation, conducted all of them to that degree of improvement in policy and in manners which they had attained at the period when Charles V. began his reign.

The principles on which the northern nations made their fetrlements in Europe.

WHEN nations subject to despotic government make conquests, these serve only to extend the dominion and the power of their master. But armies composed of freemen conquer for themselves, not for their leaders. The people who overturned the Roman Empire, and fettled in its various provinces, were of the latter class. Not only the different nations that iffued from the north of Europe, which has always been confidered as the feat of liberty, but the Huns and Alans who inhabited part of those countries, which have been marked out as the peculiar region of fervitude, enjoyed freedom and independence in fuch a high degree as feems to be fearcely compatible with a flate of focial union, or with the subordination necessary to maintain it. They followed the chieftain who led them forth in quelt of new fettlements, not by constraint, but from choice; not as soldiers whom he could order to march, but as volunteers who offered to accompany him [F]. They confidered their conquests as a common property, in which all had a title to share, as all had contributed to acquire them [G]. In what manner, or by what principles, they divided among them the lands which they feized, we cannot now determine with any

b De l'esprit des loix, liv. xvii. ch. 3.

[F] NOTE VI.

[G] NOTE VII.

certainty. There is no nation in Europe whose records reach back to this remote period; and there is little information to be got from the uninstructive and meagre chronicles, compiled by writers ignorant of the true end, and unacquainted with the proper objects, of history.



This new division of property, however, together The feudal with the maxims and manners to which it gave ment grarife, gradually introduced a species of government formerly unknown. This fingular institution is now distinguished by the name of the Fendal System: and though the barbarous nations which framed it, fettled in their new territories at different times, came from different countries, spoke various languages, and were under the command of feparate leaders, the feudal policy and laws were established, with little variation, in every kingdom of Europe. This amazing uniformity had induced fome authors to believe that all these nations, notwithstanding so many apparent circumstances of distinction, were originally the fame people. But it may be ascribed, with greater probability, to the nimilar state of society and of manners to which they were accustomed in their native countries, and to the fimilar fituation in which they found themselves on taking poifession of their new domains.

governdually eft biifhed ani vig

As the conquerors of Europe had their acquifitions to maintain, not only against such of the

e Procop. de bello Vandal. ap. Script, Byz. edit. Ven. vol. i. P. 345.

SECT. National defence the great object of feudal policy.

ancient inhabitants as they had spared, but against the more formidable inroads of new invaders, felfdefence was their chief care, and feems to have been the chief object of their first institutions and policy. Instead of those loose affociations, which, though they scarcely diminished their personal independence, had been sufficient for their security while they remained in their original countries, they faw the necessity of uniting in more close confederacy, and of relinquishing some of their private rights in order to attain public fafety. Every freeman, upon receiving a portion of the lands which were divided, bound himself to appear in arms against the enemies of the community. This military fervice was the condition upon which he received and held his lands; and as they were exempted from every other burden, that tenure, among a warlike people, was deemed both easy and honourable. The king or general, who led them to conquest, continuing still to be the head of the colony, had, of course, the largest portion allotted to him. Having thus acquired the means of rewarding past services, as well as of gaining new adherents, he parcelled out his lands with this view, binding those on whom they were bestowed, to refort to his standard with a number of men in proportion to the extent of the territory which they received, and to bear arms in his defence. His chief officers imitated the example of the fovereign, and, in distributing portions of their lands among their dependents, annexed the same condition to the grant. Thus a feudal kingdom resembled a military establishment, rather than a civil institution. The victorious army, cantoned out in the country which it had feized, continued ranged under its proper officers, and subordinate to military command. The names of a foldier and of a freeman were fynonymousd. Every proprietor of land, girt with a fword, was ready to march at the fummons of his superior, and to take the field against the common enemy.

But though the feudal policy feems to be fo The Feudal admirably calculated for defence against the affaults ment defecof any foreign power, its provisions for the interior provisions order and tranquillity of fociety were extremely for interior defective. The principles of disorder and corrupt society. tion are discernible in that constitution under its best and most perfect form. They soon unfolded themselves, and, spreading with rapidity through every part of the system, produced the most fatal effects. The hond of political union was extremely feeble; the fources of anarchy were innumerable. The monarchical and ariftocratical parts of the constitution, having no intermediate power to balance them, were perpetually at variance, and justling with each other. The powerful vaffals of the crown foon extorted a confirmation for life of these grants of land, which being at first purely gratuitous, had been bestowed only during pleasure.

d Du Gange Glossar. voc. Miles.

SECT.

Not fatisfied with this they prevailed to have them converted into hereditary possessions. One step more completed their usurpations, and rendered them unalienable [H]. With an ambition no less enterprising, and more preposterous, they appropriated to themselves titles of honour, as well as offices of power or truft. These personal marks of distinction, which the public admiration bestows on illustrious merit, or which the public confidence confers on extraordinary abilities, were annexed to certain families, and transmitted like fiefs, from father to fon, by hereditary right. The crown vaffals having thus secured the possession of their lands and dignities, the nature of the feudal institutions, which though founded on fubordination verged to independence, led them to new, and still more dangerous encroachments on the prerogatives of the fovereign. They obtained the power of supreme jurisdiction, both civil and criminal, within their own territories; the right of coining money; together with the privilege of carrying on war against their private enemies, in their own name, and by their own authority. The ideas of political subjection were almost entirely lost, and frequently scarce any appearance of feudal subordination remained. Nobles, who had acquired fuch enormous power, scorned to consider themselves as subjects. They aspired openly at being independent: the bonds which connected the principal members of the constitution with the crown, were diffolved.

[H] NOTE VIII.

A kingdom,

A kingdom, confiderable in name and in extent, sect. was broken into as many separate principalities as it contained powerful barons. A thousand causes of jealoufy and difcord fubfifted among them, and gave rife to as many wars. Every country in Europe, wasted or kept in continual alarm during these endless contests, was filled with castles and places of strength erected for the security of the inhabitants; not against foreign force, but against internal hostilities. An universal anarchy, destructive, in a great measure, of all the advantages which men expect to derive from fociety, prevailed. people, the most numerous as well as the most useful part of the community, were either reduced to a state of actual servitude, or treated with the same insolence and rigour as if they had been degraded into that wretched condition [1]. The king, stripped of almost every prerogative, and without authority to enact or to execute falutary laws, could neither protect the innocent, nor punish the guilty. The nobles, superior to all restraint, harassed each other with perpetual wars, oppressed their fellow-subjects, and humbled or infulted their fovereign. To crown all, time gradually fixed, and rendered venerable, this pernicious system, which violence had established.

Such was the state of Europe with respect to the interior administration of government from the likewise feventh to the eleventh century. All the external washing ar operations of its various states, during this period.

It prevented nations from acting in their external operations.

[I] NOTE IX.

SECT.

were, of course, extremely feeble. A kingdom dismembered, and torn with dissension, without any common interest to rouse, or any common head to conduct its force, was incapable of acting with vigour. Almost all the wars in Europe, during the ages which I have mentioned, were trifling, indecifive, and productive of no confiderable event. They resembled the short incursions of pirates or banditti, rather than the steady operations of a regular army. Every baron, at the head of his vaffals, carried on some petty enterprise, to which he was prompted by his own ambition, or revenge. The state itself, destitute of union, either remained altogether inactive, or if it attempted to make any effort, that ferved only to discover its impotence. The fuperior genius of Charlemagne, it is true, united all these disjointed and discordant members, and forming them again into one body, restored to government that degree of activity which distinguishes his reign, and renders the transactions of it, objects not only of attention but of admiration to more enlightened times. But this state of union and vigour, not being natural to the feudal government, was of short duration. Immediately upon his death, the spirit which animated and sustained the vaft fystem which he had established, being withdrawn, it broke into pieces. All the calamities which flow from anarchy and discord, returning with additional force, afflicted the different kingdoms, into which his empire was split. From that time to the eleventh century, a fuccession of uninteresting events, a series of wars, the motives

as well as the consequences of which were unim- SECT. portant, fill and deform the annals of all the nations in Europe.

To these pernicious effects of the feudal anarchy The fatal may be added its fatal influence on the character effects of this state of and improvement of the human mind. If men do fociety on fociences and not enjoy the protection of regular government, arts; together with the expectation of personal security, which naturally flows from it, they never attempt to make progress in science, nor aim at attaining refinement in taste, or in manners. That period of turbulence, oppression, and rapine, which I have described, was ill-suited to favour improvement in any of these. In less than a century after the barbarous nations fettled in their new conquests, almost all the effects of the knowledge and civility, which the Romans had spread through Europe, disappeared. Not only the arts of elegance, which minister to luxury, and are supported by it, but many of the useful arts, without which life can scarcely be considered as comfortable, were neglected or lost. Literature, science, taste, were words little in use during the ages which we are contemplating; or, if they occur at any time, eminence in them is ascribed to persons and productions fo contemptible, that it appears their true import was little understood. Persons of the highest rank, and in the most eminent stations, could not read or write. Many of the clergy did not understand the breviary which they were obliged daily

SECT. to recite; some of them could scarcely read it [K]. The memory of past transactions was, in a great degree, loft, or preserved in annals filled with trifling events, or legendary tales. Even the codes of laws, published by the several nations which established themselves in the different countries of Europe, fell into disuse, while, in their place, customs, vague and capricious, were substituted. The human mind, neglected, uncultivated, and depressed, continued in the most prosound ignorance. Europe, during four centuries, produced few authors who merit to be read, either on account of the elegance of their composition, or the justness and novelty of their fentiments. There are few inventions, useful or ornamental to society, of which that long period can boaft.

upon religion.

EVEN the Christian religion, though its precepts are delivered, and its inftitutions are fixed in Scripture, with a precision which should have exempted them from being misinterpreted or corrupted, degenerated, during those ages of darkness, into an illiberal fuperstition. The barbarous nations, when converted to Christianity, changed the object, not the spirit, of their religious worship. They endeayoured to conciliate the favour of the true God by means not unlike to those which they had employed in order to appeale their false deities. Inflead of aspiring to fanctity and virtue, which alone can render men acceptable to the great Author of

[K] NOTE X.

order

order and of excellence, they imagined that they SECT. fatisfied every obligation of duty by a scrupulous observance of external ceremonies [L]. Religion, according to their conceptions of it, comprehended nothing elfe; and the rites, by which they perfuaded themselves that they should gain the favour of Heaven, were of fuch a nature as might have been expected from the rude ideas of the ages which devised and introduced them. They were either so unmeaning as to be altogether unworthy of the Being to whose honour they were consecrated; or fo abfurd as to be a difgrace to reason and humanity [M]. Charlemagne in France, and Alfred the Great in England, endeavoured to ditpel this darkness, and gave their subjects a short glimpse of light and knowledge. But the ignorance of the age was too powerful for their efforts and inflitutions. The darkness returned, and fettled over Europe more thick and heavy than before.

As the inhabitants of Europe, during these cen- upon the turies, were strangers to the arts which embellish a polished age, they were destitute of the virtues of the huwhich abound among people who continue in a fimple state. Force of mind, a sense of personal dignity, gallantry in enterprise, invincible perseverance in execution, contempt of danger and of death, are the characteristic virtues of uncivilized nations. But these are all the offspring of equa-

[L] NOTE XI.

[M] NOTE XII.

SECT. lity and independence, both which the feudal institutions had destroyed. The spirit of domination corrupted the nobles; the yoke of servitude depressed the people; the generous sentiments inspired by a sense of equality were extinguished, and hardly any thing remained to be a check on ferocity and violence. Human fociety is in its most corrupted state, at that period when men have lost their original independence and fimplicity of manners. but have not attained that degree of refinement which introduces a fense of decorum and of propriety in conduct, as a restraint on those passions which lead to heinous crimes. Accordingly, a greater number of those atrocious actions, which fill the mind of man with aftonishment and horror. occur in the history of the centuries under review, than in that of any period of the same extent in the annals of Europe. If we open the history of Gregory of Tours, or of any contemporary author, we meet with a feries of deeds of cruelty, perfidy, and revenge, fo wild and enormous, as almost to exceed belief.

From the beginning of the eleventh century, government and manners begin solmprove.

Bur, according to the observation of an elegant and profound historiane, there is an ultimate point of depression, as well as of exaltation. from which human affairs naturally return in a contrary progrefs, and beyond which they never pass either in their advancement or decline. When defects, either in the form or in the administration

Hume's History of England, vol. ii. p. 441.

of government, occasion such disorders in society as are excessive and intolerable, it becomes the common interest to discover and to apply such remedies as will most effectually remove them. Slight inconveniences may be long overlooked or endured; but when abuses grow to a certain pitch, the society must go to ruin, or must attempt to reform them. The diforders in the feudal fystem, together with the corruption of taste and manners consequent upon these, which had gone on increasing during a long course of years, seemed to have attained their utmost point of excess towards the close of the eleventh century. From that æra, we may date the return of government and manners in a contrary direction, and can trace a succession of causes and events which contributed, some with a nearer and more conspicuous, others with a more remote and less perceptible influence, to abolish confusion and barbarism, and to introduce order, regularity, and refinement.

In pointing out and explaining these causes and Necessary events, it is not necessary to observe the order of the causes time with a chronological accuracy; it is of more which conimportance to keep in view their mutual connection and dependence, and to show how the opera- improvetion of one event, or one cause, prepared the way for another, and augmented its influence. We have hitherto been contemplating the progress of that darkness, which spread over Europe, from its first approach, to the period of greatest obscuration; a more pleasant exercise begins here; to ob-

to point out and events tribute to wards this ment.

SECT. ferve the first dawnings of returning light, to mark the various accessions by which it gradually increased and advanced towards the full splendour of day.

The tendency of the Crufades to intruduce a change in government and manners.

The more remote caufes of thefe expeditions.

I. THE Crusades, or expeditions in order to rescue the Holy Land out of the hands of Infidels, feemed to be the first event that roused Europe from the lethargy in which it had been long funk, and that tended to introduce any confiderable change in government or in manners. It is natural to the human mind to view those places which have been diftinguished by being the residence of any illustrious personage, or the scene of any great transaction, with some degree of delight and veneration. To this principle must be ascribed the superstitious devotion with which Christians, from the earliest ages of the church, were accustomed to visit that country which the Almighty had felected as the inheritance of his favourite people, and in which the Son of God had accomplished the redemption of mankind. As this distant pilgrimage could not be performed without confiderable expence, fatigue, and danger, it appeared the more meritorious, and came to be confidered as an expiation for almost every crime. An opinion which spread with rapidity over Europe about the close of the tenth, and beginning of the eleventh century, and which gained univerfal credit, wonderfully augmented the number of credulous pilgrims, and increased the ardour with which they undertook this ufelefs voyage.

The thousand years, mentioned by St. John SECT were supposed to be accomplished, and the end of the world to be at hand. A general consternation feized mankind; many relinquished their possesfions; and abandoning their friends and families, hurried with precipitation to the Holy Land, where they imagined that Christ would quickly appear to judge the world 8. While Palestine continued subject to the Caliphs, they had encouraged the refort of pilgrims to Jerusalem; and considered this as a beneficial species of commerce, which brought into their dominions gold and filver, and carried nothing out of them but relics and confecrated trinkets. But the Turks having conquered Syria about the middle of the eleventh century, pilgrims were exposed to outrages of every kind from these fierce barbariansh. This change happening precifely at the juncture when the panic terror, which I have mentioned, rendered pilgrimages most frequent, filled Europe with alarm and indignation. Every person who returned from Palestine related the dangers which he had encountered, in vifiting the holy city, and described with exaggeration the cruelty and vexations of the Turks.

f Revel. xx. 2, 3, 4.

⁸ Chronic. Will. Godelli ap. Bouquet Recueil des Historiens de France, tom. x. p. 262. Vita Abbonis, ibid. p. 332. Chronic. S. Pantaleonis ap. Eccard. Corp. Scrip. medii avi, vol. i. p. 909. Annalista Saxo, ibid. 576.

h Jo. Dan. Schoepflini de facris Gallorum in orientem expeditionibus, p. 4. Argent. 1726. 4to.

SECT. diate occafion of them.

WHEN the minds of men were thus prepared, the zeal of a fanatical monk, who conceived the idea of The imme- leading all the forces of Christendom against the Infidels, and of driving them out of the Holy Land by violence, was fufficient to give a beginning to that wild enterprise. Peter the Hermit, for that was the name of this martial apostle, ran from province to province with a crucifix in his hand. exciting princes and people to this Holy War, and wherever he came kindled the fame enthufiaftic ardour for it with which he himself was animated. The council of Placentia, where upwards of thirty thousand persons were affembled, pronounced the scheme to have been suggested by the immediate inspiration of Heaven. In the council of Clermont. still more numerous, as foon as the measure was proposed, all cried out with one voice, "It is the " will of God." Persons of all ranks catched the contagion; not only the gallant nobles of that age, with their martial followers, whom we may suppose apt to be allured by the boldness of a romantic enterprise, but men in the more humble and pacific stations of life; ecclesiastics of every order, and even women and children, engaged with emulation in an undertaking, which was deemed facred and meritorious. If we may believe the concurring testimony of contemporary authors, fix millions of persons assumed the cross, which was the badge that diffinguished such as devoted themfelves to this holy warfare. All Europe, fays the

Princess

Fulcherius Carnotenfis ap. Bongarfii Gesta Dei per Francos, vol. i. 387. edit. Han. 1611.

Princels Anna Comnena, torn up from the foun- SECT. dation, seemed ready to precipitate itself in one united body upon Afiak. Nor did the fumes of this enthusiastic zeal evaporate at once: the frenzy was as lasting as it was extravagant. During two centuries, Europe feems to have had no object but to recover, or keep poffession of, the Holy Land; and through that period vast armies continued to march thither [N].

THE first efforts of valour, animated by enthusi- The fuccess asm, were irresistible; part of the lesser Asia, all Syria of the Crufades. and Palestine, were wrested from the Infidels; the banner of the cross was displayed on Mount Sion; Constantinople, the capital of the Christian empire in the East, was afterwards seized by a body of those adventurers, who had taken arms against the Mahometans, and an Earl of Flanders, and his descendants, kept possession of the Imperial throne during half a century. But though the first impression of the Crufaders was fo unexpected that they made their conquests with great ease, they found infinite difficulty in preserving them. Establishments so distant from Europe, surrounded by warlike nations, animated with fanatical zeal fcarcely inferior to that of the Crusaders themselves, were perpetually in danger of being overturned. Before the ex- A.D. 1291. piration of the thirteenth century, the Christians were driven out of all their Afiatic possessions, in acquiring of which incredible numbers of men had

* Alexias, lib. x. 2p. Byz. script. vol. xi. p. 224. [N] NOTE XIII.

perished,

SECT. perished, and immense sums of money had been wasted. The only common enterprise in which the European nations ever engaged, and which they all undertook with equal ardour, remains a fingular monument of human folly.

The beneficial effects of the Crufades on manners.

Bur from these expeditions, extravagant as they were, beneficial confequences followed, which had neither been foreseen nor expected. In their progress towards the Holy Land, the followers of the cross marched through countries better cultivated and more civilized than their own. Their first rendezvous was commonly in Italy, in which Venice, Genoa, Pisa, and other cities, had begun to apply themselves to commerce, and had made considerable advances towards wealth as well as refinement. They embarked there, and landing in Dalmatia, purfued their route by land to Constantinople, Though the military spirit had been long extinct in the eastern Empire, and a despotism of the worst species had annihilated almost every public virtue, vet Constantinople, having never felt the destructive rage of the barbarous nations, was the greatest, as well as the most beautiful city in Europe, and the only one in which there remained any image of the ancient elegance in manners and arts. The naval power of the eastern Empire was confiderable. Manufactures of the most curious fabric were carried on in its dominions. Constantinople was the chief mart in Europe for the commodities of the East Indies. Although the Saracens and Turks had torn from the Empire many of its richest provinces. 17

vinces, and had reduced it within very narrow srct. bounds, yet great wealth flowed into the capital from these various sources, which not only cherished such a taste for magnificence, but kept alive fuch a relish for the sciences, as appears considerable, when compared with what was known in other parts of Europe. Even in Asia, the Europeans, who had affumed the crofs found the remains of the knowledge and arts which the example and encouragement of the Caliphs had diffused through their Empire. Although the attention of the historians of the Crusades was fixed on other objects than the state of society and manners among the nations which they invaded, although most of them had neither tafte nor discernment enough to describe these, they relate, however, such signal acts of humanity and generofity in the conduct of Saladin, as well as fome other leaders of the Mahometans, as give us a very high idea of their manners. It was not possible for the Crusaders to travel through fo many countries, and to behold their various customs and institutions, without acquiring information and improvement. Their views enlarged; their prejudices wore off; new ideas crowded into their minds; and they must have been fensible, on many occasions, of the rusticity of their own manners, when compared with those of a more polished people. These impressions were not fo flight as to be effaced upon their return to their native countries. A close intercourse substitled between the East and West during two centuries; new armies were continually marching from Eu-



SECT. rope to Asia, while former adventurers returned home and imported many of the customs to which they had been familiarized by a long residence abroad. Accordingly, we discover, soon after the commencement of the Crufades, greater splendour in the courts of princes, greater pomp in public ceremonies, a more refined taste in pleasure and amusements, together with a more romantic spirit of enterprise spreading gradually over Europe; and to these wild expeditions, the effect of superstition or folly, we owe the first gleams of light which tended to dispel barbarism and ignorance.

Their influence on the State of property.

But these beneficial consequences of the Crusades. took place flowly; their influence upon the flate of property, and confequently of power, in the different kingdoms of Europe, was more immediate as well as difcernible. The nobles who affumed the cross, and bound themselves to march to the Holy Land, foon perceived that great fums were necessary towards defraying the expence of such a distant expedition, and enabling them to appear with fuitable dignity at the head of their vaffals. But the genius of the feudal system was averse to the imposition of extraordinary taxes; and subjects in that age were unaccustomed to pay them. No expedient remained for levying the fums requisite, but the sale of their possessions. As menwere inflamed with romantic expectations of the splendid conquests which they hoped to make in Asia, and possessed with such zeal for recovering the

Holy

Holy Land as swallowed up every other passion, SECT. they relinquished their ancient inheritances without any reluctance, and for prices far below their value, that they might fally forth as adventurers in quest of new settlements in unknown countries. The monarchs of the great kingdoms in the west, none of whom had engaged in the first Crusade, eagerly feized this opportunity of annexing confiderable territories to their crowns at fmall expence1. Befides this, feveral great barons, who perished in the Holy War, having left no heirs, their fiefs reverted of course to their respective sovereigns; and by these accessions of property, as well as power taken from the one scale and thrown into the other, the regal authority rose in proportion as that of the aristocracy declined. The absence, too, of many potent vaffals, accustomed to controul and give law to their fovereigns, afforded them an opportunity of extending their prerogative, and of acquiring a degree of weight in the conflitution which they did not formerly possess. To these circumstances, we may add, that as all who affumed the crofs, were taken under the immediate protection of the church, and its heaviest anathemas were denounced against such as should disquiet or annoy those who had devoted themselves to this service; the private quarrels and hostilities which banished tranquillity from a feudal kingdom, were fulpended or extingrifhed; a more general and fleady administration of justice began to be introduced, and some ad-

1 Willelm. Malmibur. Guibert. Abbas ap. Bongarf. vol. i. 481.

SECT.

vances were made towards the establishment of regular government in the feveral kingdoms of Europe m [O].

Their commercial effeet.

THE commercial effects of the Crusades were not less considerable than those which I have already mentioned. The first armies under the standard of the cross, which Peter the hermit and Godfrey of Bouillon led through Germany and Hungary to Constantinople, suffered so much by the length of the march, as well as by the fierceness of the barbarous people who inhabited those countries, that it deterred others from taking the fame route; and rather than encounter so many dangers, they chose to go by sea. Venice, Genoa, and Pifa furnished the transports on which they embarked. The fum which these cities received merely for freight from fuch numerous armies was immense. This, however, was but a small part of what they gained by the expeditions to the Holy Land; the Crufaders contracted with them for military stores and provisions; their fleets kept on the coast as the armies advanced by land; and fupplying them with whatever was wanting, engroffed all the profits of a branch of commerce which, in every age, has been extremely lucrative. The fuccess which attended the arms of the Crutaders was productive of advantages still more

[O] NOTE XIV.

[&]quot; Du Cange Gloffar. voc. Cruce fignatus. Guil. Abbas ap. Bongarf. vol. i. 480. 482.

a Muratori Antiquit. Italic, medii Ævi, vol. ii. 905.

permanent. There are charters yet extant, containing grants to the Venetians, Pifans, and Genoese, of the most extensive immunities in the several fettlements which the Christians made in Asia. All the commodities which they imported or exported are thereby exempted from every impofition; the property of entire fuburbs in some of the maritime towns, and of large streets in others, is vested in them; and all questions, arising among persons settled within their precincts, or who traded under their protection, are appointed to be tried by their own laws, and by judges of their own appointment °. When the Crufaders feized Conflantinople, and placed one of their own leaders on the Imperial throne, the Italian States were likewife gainers by that event. The Venetians, who had planned the enterprife, and took a confiderable part in carrying it into execution, did not neglect to fecure to themselves the chief advantages redounding from its fuccess. They made themselves masters of part of the ancient Peloponnesus in Greece, together with some of the most fertile islands in the Archipelago. Many valuable branches of the commerce, which formerly centered in Conflantinople, were transferred to Venice, Genoa, or Pifa. Thus a fuccession of events, occasioned by the Holy War, opened various fources, from which wealth flowed in fuch abundance into thefe cities, as enabled them, in concurrence with

º Muratori Antiquit. Italic. medii Ævi, vol. ii. 906, &c.

P Villehardouin Hist. de Constant. sous l'Empereurs François, 205, &c.

SECT. another institution, which shall be immediately mentioned, to fecure their own liberty and independence.

The eftablithment of communities favourable to government and order.

II. The inflitution to which I alluded was the forming of cities into communities, corporations, or bodies politic, and granting them the privilege of municipal jurisdiction, which contributed more, perhaps, than any other cause, to introduce regular government, police, and arts, and to diffuse them over Europe. The feudal government had degenerated into a fystem of oppression. The usurpations of the nobles were become unbounded and intolerable: they had reduced the great body of the people into a state of actual servitude: the condition of those dignified with the name of freemen, was often little preferable to that of the other. Nor was fuch oppression the portion of those alone who dwelt in the country, and were employed in cultivating the estate of their master. Cities and villages found it necessary to hold of fome great lord, on whom they might depend for protection, and became no less subject to his arbitrary jurisdiction. The inhabitants were deprived of those rights, which, in focial life, are deemed most natural and inalienable. could not dispose of the effects which their own industry had acquired, either by a latter will, or by any deed executed during their life9. They

The ancient state of cities.

⁹ Dacherii. Spiceleg, tom. xi. 374, 375. edit. in 4to. Ordonances des Rois de France, tom. iii. 204. No. 2. 6.

had no right to appoint guardians for their SECT. children during their minority. They were not permitted to marry without purchasing the confent of the lord on whom they depended'. If once they had commenced a law-fuit, they durft not terminate it by an accommodation, because that would have deprived the lord, in whose court they pleaded, of the perquifites due to him on passing sentence'. Services of various kinds, no less disgraceful than oppressive, were exacted from them without mercy or moderation. The fpirit of industry was checked in some cities by absurd regulations, and in others by unreafonable exactions; nor would the narrow and oppressive maxims of a military aristocracy have permitted it ever to rife to any degree of height or vigour t.

But as foon as the cities of Italy began to turn The freetheir attention towards commerce, and to conceive dom of cities first fome idea of the advantages which they might established derive from it, they became impatient to shake off the yoke of their infolent lords, and to establish among themselves such a free and equal government, as would render property fecure, and induf-

Ordonances des Rois de France, tom. i. p. 22. tom. iii. 203. No. 1. Murat. Antiquit. Ital. vol. iv. p. 20. Dacher. Spicel. vol. xi. 325. 341.

⁵ Dacher. Spicel. vol. ix. 182.

^{&#}x27; M. l'Abbé Mably Observat. sur l'hist. de France, tom. ii. p. 2. 96.

SECT. try flourishing. The German emperors, especially those of the Franconian and Suabian lines, as the feat of their government was far distant from Italy, possessed a feeble and imperfect jurisdiction in that country. Their perpetual quarrels, either with the popes or with their own turbulent vassals, diverted their attention from the interior police of Italy, and gave constant employment to their arms. These circumstances encouraged the inhabitants of fome of the Italian cities, towards the beginning of the eleventh century, to assume new privileges, to unite together more closely, and to form themselves into bodies politic under the government of laws established by common consent". The rights, which many cities acquired by bold or fortunate rufurpations, others purchased from the emperors, who deemed themselves gainers when they received large fums for immunities which they were no longer able to withhold; and some cities obtained them gratuitously, from the generosity or facility of the princes on whom they depended. The great increase of wealth which the Crusades brought into Italy, occasioned a new kind of fermentation and activity in the minds of the people, and excited fuch a general paffon for liberty and independence, that, before the conclusion of the last Crusade, all the confiderable cities in that country had either purchased or had extorted large immunities from the emperors [P].

> u Murat. Antiquit. Ital. vol. iv. p. g. [P] NOTE XV.

This innovation was not long known in Italy SECT. before it made its way into France. Louis le Gros, in order to create some power that might coun- Is introterbalance those potent vassals who controlled, brance and or gave law to the crown, first adopted the plan of countries of conferring new privileges on the towns fituated Europe.
A.D. 1108 within his own domaine. These privileges were -1137. called charters of community, by which he enfranchifed the inhabitants, abolished all marks of servitude, and formed them into corporations or bodies politic, to be governed by a council and magistrates of their own nomination. These magistrates had the right of administering justice within their own precincts, of levying taxes, of embodying and training to arms the militia of the town, which took the field when required by the fovereign, under the command of officers appointed by the community. The great barons imitated the example of their monarch, and granted like immunities to the towns within their territories. They had wasted such great sums in their expeditions to the Holy Land, that they were eager to lay hold on this new expedient for raising money, by the fale of those charters of liberty. Though the instition of communities was as repugnant to their maxims of policy, as it was adverse to their power, they difregarded remote confequences, in order to obtain present relief. In less than two centuries, servitude was abolished in most of the towns in France, and they became free corporations, instead of dependent villages, without jurisdiction or privileges. D 4

SECT.

vileges [Q]. Much about the fame period, the great cities in Germany began to acquire like immunities, and laid the foundation of their prefent liberty and independence [R]. The practice spread quickly over Europe, and was adopted in Spain, England, Scotland, and all the other feudal kingdoms [S].

Its happy effects upon the condition of the inhabitants;

The good effects of this new inftitution were immediately felt, and its influence on government as well as manners was no less extensive than falutary. A great body of the people was released from fervitude, and from all the arbitrary and grievous impositions to which that wretched condition had subjected them. Towns, upon acquiring the right of community, became so many little republics, governed by known and equal laws. Liberty was deemed such an effential and characteristic part in their constitution, that if any slave took refuge in one of them, and resided there during a year without being claimed, he was instantly declared a freeman, and admitted as a member of the community.

upon the nobithe nobiinty; As one part of the people owed their liberty to the crection of communities, another was indebted to them for their fecurity. Such had been the flate of Europe during feveral centuries, that felf-

[Q] NOTE XVI.

[R] NOTE XVII.

[5] NOTE XVIII.

w Statut. Humberti Bellojoci Dacher. Spicel. vol. ix. 182. 385. Charta Comit, Forenf. ibid. 193.

preservation

preservation obliged every man to court the patron- SECT. age of some powerful baron, and in times of danger his castle was the place to which all resorted for fafety. But towns furrounded with walts, whose inhabitants were regularly trained to arms, and bound by interest. as well as by the most iolemn engagements, reciprocally to defend each other, afforded a more commodious and fecure retreat. The nobles began to be confidered as of lefs importance when they ceafed to be the fole guardians to whom the people could look up for protection against violence.



Ir the nobility suffered some diminution of their upon the power of credit and power by the privileges granted to the the crown; cities, the crown acquired an increase of both. As there were no regular troops kept on foot in any of the feudal kingdoms, the monarch could bring no army into the field, but what was composed of soldiers furnished by the crown vaffals, always jealous of the regal authority; nor had he any funds for carrying on the public fervice but fuch as they granted him with a very sparing hand. But when the members of communities were permitted to bear arms, and were trained to the use of them, this in some degree supplied the first defect, and gave the crown the command of a body of men, independent of its great vaffals. The attachment of the cities to their fovereigns, whom they respected as the first authors of their liberties, and whom they were obliged to court as the protectors of their immunities

SECT. munities against the domineering spirit of the no. bles, contributed fomewhat towards removing the fecond evil, as, on many occasions, it procured the crown supplies of money, which added new force to government x.

upon the increase of industry.

THE acquisition of liberty made such a happy change in the condition of all the members of communities, as roused them from that inaction into which they had been funk by the wretchedness of their former state. The spirit of industry revived. ommerce became an object of attention, and beto flourish. Population increased. Indedence was established; and wealth flowed into ties which had long been the feat of poverty and Wealth was accompanied by its usual oppression. attendants, oftentation and luxury; and though the former was formal and cumbersome, and the latter inelegant, they led gradually to greater refinement in manners, and in the habits of life. Together with this improvement in manners, a more regular species of government and police was introduced. As cities grew to be more populous, and the occasions of intercourse among men increased, statutes and regulations multiplied of course, and all became fensible that their common fafety depended on observing them with exactness, and on punishing such as violated them, with promptitude and rigour. Laws and subordination, as well as

x Ordon, des Rois de France, tom. i. 602. 785; tom. ii. 318. 422. polished

polished manners, taking their rise in cities, sect. diffused themselves insensibly through the rest of the fociety.



III. THE inhabitants of cities, having obtained The inhabitants of personal freedom and municipal jurisdiction, soon cities acacquired civil liberty and political power. It was tical power, a fundamental principle in the feudal system of as members policy, that no freeman could be subjected to new stitution. laws or taxes unless by his own consent. In confequence of this, the vaffals of every baron were called to his court, in which they established, by mutual confent, fuch regulations as they deemed most beneficial to their small society, and granted their fuperior fuch fupplies of money, as were proportioned to their abilities, or to his wants. The barons themselves, conformably to the same maxim, were admitted into the fupreme affembly of the nation, and concurred with the fovereign in enacting laws, or in imposing taxes. As the superior lord, according to the original plan of feudal policy, retained the direct property of those lands which he granted, in temporary possession, to his vassals; the law, even after fiefs became hereditary, still supposed this original practice to subsist. The great council of each nation, whether diftinguished by the name of a parliament, a diet, the Cortes, or the States-general, was composed entirely of such barons, and dignified ecclefiaftics, as held immediately of the crown. Towns, whether fituated within the royal domaine or on the lands of a fubject, depended



pended originally for protection on the lord of whom they held. They had no legal name, no political existence, which could entitle them to be admitted into the legislative affembly, or could give them any authority there. But as foon as they were enfranchifed, and formed into bodies corporate, they became legal and independent members of the constitution, and acquired all the rights effential to freemen. Amongst these, the most valuable was, the privilege of a decisive voice in enacting public laws, and granting national jubfidies. It was natural for cities, accustomed to a form of municipal government, according to which no regulation could be established within the community, and no money could be raised but by their own consent, to claim this privilege. The wealth, the power, and confideration, which they acquired on recovering their liberty, added weight to their claim; and favourable events happened, or fortunate conjectures occurred, in the different kingdoms of Europe, which facililitated their obtaining possession of this important right. In England, one of the first countries in which the representatives of boroughs were admitted into the great council of the nation, the A.D. 1265, barons who took arms against Henry III. fummoned them to attend parliament, in order to add greater popularity to their party, and to strengthen the barrier against the encroachment of regal power. In France, Philip the Fair, a monarch no less sagadious than enterprifing, confidered them as infruments

Aruments which might be employed with equal ad- secr. vantage to extend the royal prerogative, to counterbalance the exorbitant power of the nobles, and to facilitate the imposition of new taxes. With these views, he introduced the deputies of such towns as were formed into communities, into the States-general of the nation '. In the empire, the wealth and immunities of the imperial cities placed them on a level with the most considerable members of the Germanic body. Confcious of their own power and dignity, they pretended to the privilege of forming a separate bench in the diet; and A.D. 1293, made good their pretentionz.



But in what way foever the representatives of The happy cities first gained a place in the legislature, that this upon event had great influence on the form and genius of governgovernment. It tempered the rigour of ariffocratical oppression with a proper mixture of popular liberty: It secured to the great body of the people, who had formerly no representatives, active and powerful guardians of their rights and privileges: It established an intermediate power between the king and the nobles, to which each had recourse alternately, and which at fome times opposed the usurpations of the former, on other occasions checked the encroachments of the latter. As foon

Pasquier Recherches de la France, p. 81. edit. Par. 1633.

² Pfessel Abregè de l'histoire & droit d'Allemagne, p. 403. 451.



as the representatives of communities gained any degree of credit and influence in the legislature, the spirit of laws became different from what it had formerly been; it flowed from new principles; it was directed towards new objects; equality, order, the public good, and the redress of grievances, were phrases and ideas brought into use, and which grew to be familiar in the statutes and jurisprudence of the European nations. Almost all the efforts in fayour of liberty in every country of Europe, have been made by this new power in the legislature. In proportion as it rose to consideration and influence, the severity of the aristocratical spirit decreased; and the privileges of the people became gradually more extensive, as the ancient and exorbitant jurisdiction of the nobles was abridged [T].

The people acquire liberty by enfranchifement.

IV. The inhabitants of towns having been declared free by the charters of communities, that part of the people which refided in the country, and was employed in agriculture, began to recover liberty by enfranchifement. During the rigour of feudal government, as hath been already observed, the great body of the lower people was reduced to fervitude. They were flaves fixed to the foil which they cultivated, and together with it were transferred from one proprietor to another, by sale, or by conveyance. The spirit of feudal policy did not favour the enfranchifement of that order of men. It was an established maxim, that no vasial

could legally diminish the value of a fief, to the de- sect. triment of the lord from whom he had received it. In confequence of this, manumission by the authority of the immediate master was not valid; and unless it was confirmed by the superior lord of whom he held, flaves belonging to the fief did not acquire a complete right to their liberty. Thus it became necessary to ascend through all the gradations of feudal holding to the King, the lord Paramount 2. A form of procedure fo tedious and troublesome, discouraged the practice of manumission. Domestic or personal flaves often obtained liberty from the humanity or beneficence of their mafters, to whom they belonged in absolute property. The condition of flaves fixed to the foil, was much more unalterable.



But the freedom and independence which one The mopart of the people had obtained by the inflitution tives and of communities, inspired the other with the most this. ardent defire of acquiring the same privileges; and their fuperiors, fenfible of the various advantages which they had derived from their former concelfions to their dependants, were less unwilling to gratify them by the grant of new immunities. The enfranchisement of flaves became more frequent; and the monarchs of France, prompted A.D. 1315, by necessity no less than by their inclination to and 1318. reduce the power of the nobles, endeavoured to

² Etablissemens de St. Louis, liv. ii. ch. 34. Ordon. tom. i. 283, not. (a).



SECT. render it general. Louis X. and Philip the Long. iffued ordinances, declaring, "That as all men were by nature free-born, and as their kingdom was called the kingdom of Franks, they determined that it should be so in reality as well as in name; therefore they appointed that enfranchisements should be granted throughout the whole kingdom, upon just and reasonable conditions b." These edicts were carried into immediate execution within the royal domaine. The example of their fovereigns, together with the expectation of confiderable fums which they might raise by this expedient, led many of the nobles to fet their dependants at liberty; and fervitude was gradually abolished in almost every province of the kingdom [U]. In Italy, the establishment of republican government in their great cities, the genius and maxims of which were extremely different from those of the feudal policy, together with the ideas of equality, which the progress of commerce had rendered familiar, gradually introduced the practice of enfranchifing the ancient predial flaves. In some provinces of Germany, the persons who had been subject to this species of bondage, were released; in others, the rigour of their state was mitigated. In England, as the spirit of liberty gained ground, the very name and idea of perfonal fervitude, without any formal interposition of the legislature to prohibit it, was totally banished.

> b Ordon. tom. i. p. 583. 653. [U] NOTE XX.

THE effects of fuch a remarkable change in the SEET. condition of fo great a part of the people, could not fail of being confiderable and extensive. The The effects of this upon husbandman, master of his own industry, and secure the imof reaping for himself the fruits of his labour, be- of focusty. came the farmer of the fame fields where he had formerly been compelled to toil for the benefit of another. The odious names of mafter and of flave, the most mortifying and depressing of all distinctions to human nature, were abolished. New prospects opened, and new incitements to ingenuity and enterprise presented themselves to those who were emancipated. The expectation of bettering their fortune, as well as that of raifing themselves to a more honourable condition, concurred in calling forth their activity and genius; and a numerous class of men, who formerly had no political existence, and were employed merely as instruments of labour, became useful citizens, and contributed towards augmenting the force or riches of the fociety which adopted them as members.

provement

V. THE various expedients which were em- The introployed in order to introduce a more regular, equal, and vigorous administration of justice, contributed gular admigreatly towards the improvement of fociety. What of juttice, were the particular modes of dispensing justice, in their feveral countries, among the various barba- provement rous nations which overran the Roman Empire, and took possession of its different provinces, cannot now be determined with certainty. We may conclude, from the form of government established Vol. I.

a more reniftration contributes to the imof fociety,

among



SECT. among them, as well as from their ideas concerning the nature of fociety, that the authority of the magistrate was extremely limited, and the independence of individuals proportionally great. Hiftory and records, as far as these reach back, justify this conclusion, and represent the ideas and exercise of justice in all the countries of Europe, as little different from those which must take place, in the most simple state of civil life. To maintain the order and tranquillity of fociety by the regular execution of known laws; to inflict vengeance on crimes destructive of the peace and safety of individuals, by a profecution carried on in the name, and by the authority of the community; to confider the punishment of criminals as a public example to deter others from violating the laws; were objects of government little understood in theory, and less regarded in practice. The magistrate could hardly be faid to hold the fword of justice; it was left in the hands of private persons. Resentment was almost the fole motive for profecuting crimes; and to gratify that paffion, was confidered as the chief end in punishing them. He who suffered the wrong, was the only perfon who had a right to purfue the aggreffor, and to exact or to remit the punishment. From a system of judicial procedure, fo crude and defective, that it feems to be scarcely compatible with the subfistence of civil society, diforder and anarchy flowed. Superstition concurred with this ignorance concerning the nature of government, in obstructing the administration of justice, or in rendering it capricious and unequal.

unequal. To provide remedies for these evils, so as to give a more regular course to justice, was, during feveral centuries, one great object of political wifdom. The regulations for this purpole may be reduced to three general heads: To explain thefe, and to point out the manner in which they operated, is an important article in the history of fociety among the nations of Europe.



I. THE first considerable step towards establish- This effecting an equal administration of justice, was the lishing the abolishment of the right which individuals claimed of waging war with each other, in their own name, and by their own authority. To repel injuries, and to revenge wrongs, is no lefs natural to man, than to cultivate friendship: and while society remains Original in its most simple state, the former is considered as a personal right no less unalienable than the latter. judice. Nor do men in this fituation deem that they have a title to redress their own wrongs alone; they are touched with the injuries done to those with whom they are connected, or in whose honour they are interested, and are no less prompt to avenge them. The favage, how imperfectly foever he may comprehend the principles of political union, feels warmly the fentiments of focial affection, and the obligations arising from the ties of blood. On the appearance of an injury or affront offered to his family or tribe, he kindles into rage, and pursues the authors of it with the keenest resentment. He considers it as cowardly to expect redrefs from any arm but his own, and as infamous to give up to another the right

war.

SECT. of determining what reparation he should accept, or with what vengeance he should rest satisfied.

Thefe lead to the practice of private war.

THE maxims and practice of all uncivilized nations, with respect to the prosecution and punishment of offenders, particularly those of the ancient Germans, and other Barbarians who invaded the Roman Empire, are perfectly conformable to these ideasc. While they retained their native simplicity of manners, and continued to be divided into small tribes or focieties, the defects in this imperfect fystem of criminal jurisprudence (if it merits that name) were less sensibly felt. When they came to fettle in the extensive provinces which they had conquered, and to form themselves into great monarchies; when new objects of ambition presenting themselves, increased both the number and the violence of their diffensions, they ought to have adopted new maxims concerning the redrefs of injuries, and to have regulated, by general and equal laws, that which they formerly left to be directed by the caprice of private passion. But fierce and haughty chieftains, accustomed to avenge themselves on such as had injured them, did not think of relinquishing a right which they considered as a privilege of their order, and a mark of their independence. Laws enforced by the authority of princes and magistrates, who possessed little power, commanded no great degree of reverence. The administration of justice among rude illiterate

e Tacit. de Mor. German. cap. 21. Vell, Paterc. lib. ii, c. 118.

people, was not so accurate, or decisive, or uniform, SECT. as to induce men to fubmit implicitly to its determinations. Every offended baron buckled on his armour, and fought redrefs at the head of his vassals. His adversary met him in like hostile Neither of them appealed to impotent laws, which could afford them no protection. Neither of them would fubmit points, in which their honour and their passions were warmly interested, to the slow determination of a judicial inquiry. Both trutled to their fwords for the decision of the contest. The kindred and dependants of the aggresfor, as well as of the defender, were involved in the quarrel. They had not even the liberty of remaining neutral. Such as refused to act in concert with the party to which they belonged, were not only exposed to infamy, but subjected to legal penalties.

THE different kingdoms of Europe were torn The perniand afflicted, during several centuries, by intestine cious effects of it, wars, excited by private animofities, and carried on with all the rage natural to men of fierce manners, and of violent passions. The estate of every baron was a kind of independent territory, disjoined from those around it, and the hostilities between them feldom ceased. The evil became so inveterate and deep-rooted, that the form and laws of private war were afcertained, and regulations concerning it made a part in the system of jurisprudence, in the fame manner as if this practice had

d Beaumanoir Coustumes de Beauvoisis, ch. 59, et les notes de Thaumassiere, p. 447.

SECT. been founded in some natural right of humanity. or in the original constitution of civil society.

Various methods employed in order to abolish it.

So great was the diforder, and fuch the calamities, which these perpetual hostilities occasioned, that various efforts were made to wrest from the nobles this pernicious privilege. It was the interest of every sovereign to abolish a practice which almost annihilated his authority. Charlemagne prohibited it by an express law, as an invention of the devil to destroy the order and happiness of fociety*; but the reign of one monarch, however vigorous and active, was too fhort to extirpate a custom so firmly established. Instead of enforcing this prohibition, his feeble fucceffors durft venture on nothing more than to apply palliatives. They declared it unlawful for any person to commence war, until he had fent a formal defiance to the kindred and dependants of his adversary; they ordained that, after the commission of the trespass or crime which gave rife to a private war, forty days must elapse before the person injured should attack the vaffals of his adversary; they enjoined all persons to suspend their private animosities, and to cease from hottilities, when the king was engaged in any war against the enemies of the nation. The church co-operated with the civil magillrate, and interposed its authority in order to extirpate a practice to repugnant to the spirit of Christianity. Various councils issued decrees, prohibiting all private wars; and denounced the

Capitul. A. D. 801. Edit. Baluz. vol. i. p. 371.

heaviest anathemas against such as should disturb SECT. the tranquillity of fociety, by claiming or exercifing that barbarous right. The aid of religion was called in to combat and fubdue the ferocity of the times. The Almighty was faid to have manifested, by visions and revelations to different persons, his disapprobation of that spirit of revenge, which armed one part of his creatures against the other. Men were required, in the name of God, to sheath their swords, and to remember the facred ties which united them as Christians, and as members of the same society. But this junction of civil and ecclefiaftic authority, though ftrengthened by every thing most apt to alarm and to overawe the credulous spirit of those ages, produced no other effect than some temporary suspensions of hostilities, and a ceffation from war on certain days and feafons confecrated to the more folemn acts of devotion. The nobles continued to affert this dangerous privilege; they refused to obey some of the laws calculated to annul or circumscribe it; they eluded others; they petitioned; they remonstrated; they ftruggled for the right of private war, as the highest and most honourable distinction of their order. Even fo late as the fourteenth century, we find the nobles, in feveral provinces of France. contending for their ancient method of terminating their differences by the fword, in preference to that of submitting them to the decision of any judge. The final abolition of this practice in that kingdom, and the other countries in which it prevailed, is not to be ascribed so much to the force of sta-

SECT.

tutes and decrees, as to the gradual increase of the royal authority, and to the imperceptible progress of juster sentiments concerning government, order, and public security [X].

The prolibition of trial by judicial combat, another improvement in the administration of juitice.

2. THE prohibition of the form of trial by judicial combat, was another confiderable step towards the introduction of fuch regular government, as secured public order and private tranquillity. As the right of private war left many of the quarrels among individuals to be decided, like those between nations, by arms; the form of trial by judicial combat, which was established in every country of Europe, banished equity from courts of justice, and rendered chance or force the arbiter of their determinations. In civilized nations, all tranfactions of any importance are concluded in writing. The exhibition of the deed or instrument is full evidence of the fact, and ascertains with precision what each party has stipulated to perform. But among a rude people, when the arts of reading and writing were fuch uncommon attainments, that to be master of either entitled a person to the appellation of a clerk or learned man, scarcely any thing was committed to writing but treaties between princes, their grants and charters to their subjects, or fuch transactions between private parties as were of extraordinary consequence, or had an extensive effect. The greater part of affairs in common life and bufiness was carried on by verbal con-

Defects in the judicial proceeding, of the middle ages.

[X] NOTE XXI.

tracts or promises. This, in many civil questions, SECT. not only made it difficult to bring proof fufficient . I. to establish any claim, but encouraged falsehood and fraud, by rendering them extremely eafy. Even in criminal cases, where a particular fact must be ascertained, or an accusation must be disproved, the nature and effect of legal evidence were little underflood by barbarous nations. To define with accuracy that species of evidence which a court had reafon to expect; to determine when it ought to infift on positive proof, and when it should be satisfied with a proof from circumstances; to compare the testimony of discordant witnesses, and to fix the degree of credit due to each; were discussions too intricate and fubtile for the jurisprudence of ignorant ages. In order to avoid encumbering themfelves with these, a more simple form of procedure was introduced into courts as well civil as criminal. In all cases where the notoriety of the fact did not furnish the clearest and most direct evidence, the person accused, or he against whom an action was brought, was called legally, or offered voluntarily, to purge himself by oath; and upon his declaring his innocence, he was instantly acquittedf. This absurd practice effectually screened guilt and fraud from detection and punishment, by rendering the temptation to perjury fo powerful, that it was not easy to result it. The pernicious effects of it were fenfibly felt; and in order to guard against them,

f Leg. Burgund. tit. 8, & 45. Leg. Aleman. tit. 89. Leg. Baiwar. tit. 8, § 5, 2, &c.

SECT. the laws ordained, that oaths should be administered with great folemnity, and accompanied with every circumstance which could inspire religious reverence, or superstitious terror 8. This, however, proved a feeble remedy: these ceremonious rites became familiar, and their impression on the imagination gradually diminished; men who could venture to difregard truth, were not apt to startle at the folemnities of an oath. Their observation of this, put legislators upon devising a new expedient for rendering the purgation by oath more certain and fatisfactory. They required the person accused to appear with a certain number of freemen, his neighbours or relations, who corroborated the oath which he took, by fwearing that they believed all that he had uttered to be true. These were called Compurgators, and their number varied according to the importance of the subject in dispute, or the nature of the crime with which a perfon was charged i. In some cases, the concurrence no less than three hundred of these auxiliary witneffes was requifite to acquit the person accused. But even this device was found to be ineffectual. It was a point of honour with every man in Europe. during leveral ages, not to defert the chief on whom he depended, and to ftand by those with whom the ties of blood connected him. Whoever then was bold enough to violate the laws, was fure of

⁻ Du Cange Gloffar. voc. Juramentum, vol. iii. p. 1607. Edict. Benedict. h Du Cange, ibid. vol. iii. p. 1599.

¹ Spolman Gloffar, voc. Affath. Gregor, Turon. Hist. lib. viii. Ç. ..

devoted adherents, willing to abet, and eager to secr. ferve him in whatever manner he required. The L. formality of calling compurgators proved an apparent, not a real, fecurity against falsehood and perjury; and the fentences of courts, while they continued to refer every point in question to the oath of the defendant, became so flagrantly iniquitous, as excited universal indignation against this method of procedurek.

SENSIBLE of these defects, but strangers to the These inmanner of correcting them, or of introducing a the practice more proper form, our ancestors, as an infallible of appealing to Heamethod of discovering truth, and of guarding against deception, appealed to Heaven, and referred every point in dispute to be determined, as they imagined, by the decisions of unerring wisdom and impartial justice. The person accused, in order to prove his innocence, submitted to trial, in certain cases, either by plunging his arm in boiling water; or by lifting a red-hot iron with his naked hand; or by walking bare-foot over burning plough-shares; or by other experiments equally perilous and formidable. On other occasions, he particularly by judicial challenged his accuser to fight him in fingle combat. All these various forms of trial were conducted with many devout ceremonies; the ministers of religion were employed, the Almighty was called upon to interpose for the manifestation of guilt, and for the protection of innocence; and whoever escaped unhurt, or came off victorious,

Leg. Langebard. lib. ii, tit. 55. 6 34-

SECT. was pronounced to be acquitted by the fudgment of God'.

The introduction of this practice favoured by the superstition of the middie ages;

Among all the whimfical and abfurd inflitutions which owe their existence to the weakness of human reason, this, which submitted questions that affected the property, the reputation, and the lives of men, to the determination of chance, or of bodily strength and address, appears to be the most extravagant and prepofterous. There were circumstances, however, which led the nations of Europe to confider this equivocal mode of deciding any point in contest, as a direct appeal to Heaven, and a certain method of discovering its will. As men are unable to comprehend the manner in which the Almighty carries on the government of the universe, by equal, fixed, and general laws, they are apt to imagine, that in every case which their passions or interest render important in their own eyes, the Supreme Ruler of all ought visibly to display his power in vindicating innocence and punishing guilt. It requires no inconfiderable degree of science and philosophy to correct this popular error. But the jentiments prevalent in Europe during the dark ages, instead of correcting, strengthened it. Religion, for several centuries, consisted chiefly in beheving the legendary hiftory of those faints whose names crowd and difgrace the Romish calendar. The fabulous tales concerning their miracles, had been declared authentic by the bulls of popes, and

¹ Murat. dissertatio de judiciis Dei. Antiquit. Ital. vol. iii. p. 6:2.

the decrees of councils; they made the great fub- sect. ject of the instructions which the clergy offered to the people, and were received by them with implicit credulity and admiration. By attending to thefe, men were accustomed to believe that the established laws of nature might be violated on the most frivelous occasions, and were taught to look rather for particular and extraordinary acts of power under the divine administration, than to contemplate the regular progress and execution of a general plan. One fuperstition prepared the way for another; and whoever believed that the Supreme Being had interpoled miraculoufly on those trivial occasions mentioned in legends, could not but expect his intervention in matters of greater importance, when folemnly referred to his decision.

WITH this superstitious opinion, the martial and like-wife by spirit of Europe, during the middle ages, concurred their marin establishing the mode of trial by judicial combat. To be ready to maintain with his fword whatever his lips had uttered, was the first maxim of honour with every gentleman. To affert their own rights by force of arms, to inflict vengeance on those who had injured or affronted them, were the diffinetion and pride of high-spirited nobles. The form of trial by combat coinciding with this maxim, flattered and gratified these passions. Every man was the guardian of his own honour, and of his own life; the justice of his cause, as well as his future reputation, depended on his own courage and prowefs. This mode of decision was considered, accordingly,

SECT. as one of the happiest efforts of wise policy; and as foon as it was introduced, all the forms of trial by fire or water, and other superstitious experiments, fell into difuse, or were employed only in controversies between persons of inferior rank. As it was the privilege of a gentleman to claim the trial by combat, it was quickly authorized over all Europe, and received in every country with equal fatisfaction. Not only questions concerning uncertain or contested facts, but general and abstract points in law, were determined by the iffue of a combat; and the latter was deemed a method of discovering truth more liberal, as well as more fatisfactory, than that by investigation and argument. Not only might parties, whose minds were exasperated by the eagerness and the hostility of opposition, defy their antagonist, and require him to make good his charge, or to prove his innocence, with his fword; but witnesses, who had no interest in the issue of the question, though called to declare the truth by laws which ought to have afforded them protection, were equally exposed to the danger of a challenge, and equally bound to affert the veracity of their evidence by dint of arms. To complete the abfurdities of this military jurisprudence, even the character of a judge was not facred from its violence. Any one of the parties might interrupt a judge when about to deliver his opinion; might accuse him of iniquity and corruption in the most reproachful terms, and throwing down his gauntlet, might challenge him to defend his integrity in the field; nor could he, without infamy, refuse to accept the defiance, or decline to enter the lifts sect. against such an adversary.

Thus the form of trial by combat, like other It becomes abuses, spread gradually, and extended to all perfons, and almost to all cases. Ecclesiastics, women. minors, fuperannuated and infirm persons, who could not with decency or justice be compelled to take arms, or to maintain their own cause, were obliged to produce champions, who offered from affection, or were engaged by rewards, to fight their battles. The folemnities of a judicial combat were fuch as were natural in an action, which was confidered both as a formal appeal to God, and as the final decision of questions of the highest moment. Every circumstance relating to them was regulated by the edicts of princes, and explained in the comments of lawvers, with a minute and even fuperstitious accuracy. Skill in these laws and rights was frequently the only science of which warlike nobles boafted, or which they were ambitious to attain m.

By this barbarous custom, the natural course of The perproceeding, both in civil and criminal questions, feets of its was entirely perverted. Force usurped the place of equity in courts of judicature, and justice was banished from her proper mansion. Discernment, learning, integrity, were qualities less necessary to a

m See a curious discourse concerning the laws of judicial combat, by Thomas of Woodstock, duke of Gloucester, uncle to Richard II. in Spelman's Gloffar, voc. Campus.

judge,

64

SECT.

judge, than bodily strength and dexterity in the use of arms. Daring courage, and superior vigour or address, were of more moment towards securing the favourable iffue of a fuit, than the equity of a cause, or the clearness of the evidence. Men, of course, applied themselves to cultivate the talents which they found to be of greatest utility. As strength of body and address in arms were no less requisite in those lists which they were obliged to enter in defence of their private rights, than in the field of battle, where they met the enemies of their country, it became the great object of education, as well as the chief employment of life, to acquire these martial accomplishments. The administration of justice, instead of accustoming men to listen to the voice of equity, or to reverence the decisions of law, added to the ferocity of their manners, and taught them to confider force as the great arbiter of right and wrong.

Various expedients for abolifhing this practice. These pernicious effects of the trial by combat were so obvious, that they did not altogether escape the view of the unobserving age in which it was introduced. The clergy, from the beginning, remonstrated against it as repugnant to the spirit of Christianity, and subversive of justice and order. But the maxims and passions which savoured it, had taken such hold of the minds of men, that they disregarded admonitions and censures, which, on other occasions, would have struck them with terror. The evil was too great and inveterate to yield to that remedy, and continuing to increase,

ⁿ Du Cange Glossar, voc. Duellum, vol. ii. p. 1675.

the civil power at length found it necessary to in- SECT. terpose. Conscious, however, of their own limited authority, monarchs proceeded with caution, and their first attempts to restrain, or to set any bounds to this practice, were extremely feeble. One of the earliest restrictions of this practice which occurs in the history of Europe, is that of Henry I. of England. It extended no farther than to prohibit the trial by combat in questions concerning property of fmall value°. Louis VII. of France imitated his example, and issued an edict to the same effect. St. Louis, whose ideas as a legislator were far superior to those of his age, endeavoured to introduce a more perfect jurisprudence, and to subflitute the trial by evidence, in place of that by combat. But his regulations, with respect to this, were confined to his own domains; for the great vaffals of the crown poffeifed fuch independent authority, and were fo fondly attached to the ancient practice, that he had not power to venture to extend it to the whole kingdom. Some barons voluntarily adopted his regulations. The fpirit of courts of justice became averse to the mode of decision by combat, and discouraged it on every occasion. The nobles, nevertheless, thought it fo honourable to depend for the fecurity of their lives and fortunes on their own courage alone, and contended with fo much vehemence for the preservation of this favourite privilege of their

order, that the fuccessors of St. Louis, unable to

Vol. I.

[·] Bruffel Usage des Fiess, vol. ii. p. 962.

P Ordon. tom. i. p. 15.

SECT. oppose, and afraid of offending such powerful subjects, were obliged not only to tolerate, but to authorife the practice which he had attempted to abolish q. In other countries of Europe, efforts equally zealous were employed to maintain the established custom; and similar concessions were extorted from their respective sovereigns. It continued, however, to be an object of policy with every monarch of abilities or vigour, to explode the trial by combat: and various edicts were iffued for this purpofe. But the observation which was made concerning the right of private war, is equally applicable to the mode of trial under review. No custom, how abfurd soever it may be, if it has subsisted long, or derives its force from the manners and prejudices of the age in which it prevails, was ever abolished by the bare promulgation of laws and statutes. The fentiments of the people must change, or some new power, sufficient to counteract the prevalent custom, must be introduced. Such a change accordingly took place in Europe, as fcience gradually increased, and society advanced towards more perfect order. In proportion as the prerogative of princes extended, and came to acquire new force. a power, interested in suppressing every practice favourable to the independence of the nobles, was introduced. The struggle, nevertheless, subsisted for feveral centuries; fometimes the new regulations and ideas feemed to gain ground; fometimes ancient habits recurred: and though, upon the whole, the trial by combat went more and

⁹ Ordon. tom. i. p. 328. 390. 435.

more into disuse, yet instances of it occur, as late SECT. as the fixteenth century, in the history both of France and of England. In proportion as it declined, the regular administration of justice was reflored, the proceedings of courts were directed by known laws, the fludy of these became an object of attention to judges, and the people of Europe advanced fast towards civility, when this great cause of the ferocity of their manners was removed [Y],

3. By authorifing the right of appeal from the The privicourts of the baron to those of the king, and lege of appealing fubjecting the decisions of the former to the review from he of the latter, a new step, not less considerable the burons, than those which I have already mentioned, was great imtaken towards establishing the regular, consistent, in the adand vigorous administration of justice. Among ministraall the encroachments of the feudal nobles on lice. the prerogative of their monarchs, their usurping the administration of justice with supreme authority, both in civil and criminal causes, within the precincts of their own estates, was the most fingular. In other nations, subjects have contended with their fovereigns, and have endeavoured to extend their own power and privileges; but in the hiftory of their struggles and pretensions, we discover nothing fimilar to this right which the feudal barons claimed, and obtained. It must Origin of have been fomething peculiar in their genius and preme and manners that fuggefted this idea, and prompted entirely them to insist on such a claim. Among the rude dection of thenobility

courts of another provement

independ-

SECT. people who conquered the various provinces of the Roman Empire, and established new kingdoms there, the passion of resentment, too impetuous to bear controul, was permitted to remain almost unrestrained by the authority of laws. The person offended, as has been observed, retained not only the right of profecuting, but of punishing his adversary. To him it belonged to inflict fuch vengeance as fatiated his rage, or to accept of such satisfaction as appealed it. But while fierce barbarians continued to be the fole judges in their own cause, their enmities were implacable and immortal; they fet no bounds either to the degree of their vengeance, or to the duration of their refentment. The excesses which this occasioned, proved so destructive of peace and order in fociety, as to render it necessary to devise fome remedy. At first, recourse was had to arbitrators, who by perfuafion or intreaty prevailed on the party offended to accept of a fine or composition from the aggresior, and to drop all farther profecution. But as fubmiffion to perfons who had no legal or magisterial authority was altogether voluntary, it became necessary to establish judges, with power fufficient to enforce their own decifions. The leader whom they were accustomed to follow and to obey, whose courage they respected, and in whose integrity they placed confidence, was the person to whom a martial people naturally committed this important prerogative. Every chieftain was the commander of his tribe in war, and their judge in peace. Every baron led his vassals to the field, and administered justice SECT. to them in his hall. The high-spirited dependants would not have recognized any other authority, or have submitted to any other jurisdiction. But in times of turbulence and violence, the exercise of this new function was attended not only with trouble, but with danger. No person could assume the character of a judge, if he did not possess power fufficient to protect the one party from the violence of private revenge, and to compel the other to accept of fuch reparation as he enjoined. In confideration of the extraordinary efforts which this office required, judges, besides the fine which they appointed to be paid as a compensation to the person or family who had been injured, levied an additional fum as a recompence for their own labour; and in all the feudal kingdoms the latter was not only as precifely afcertained, but as regularly exacted, as the former.

Thus, by the natural operation of circum- The extent stances peculiar to the manners or political state of and bad effects of this the feudal nations, separate and territorial jurisdic- privilege. tions came not only to be established in every kingdom, but were established in such a way, that the interest of the barons concurred with their ambition in maintaining and extending them. It was not merely a point of honour with the feudal nobles to dispense justice to their vassals; but from the exercise of that power arose one capital branch of their revenue; and the emoluments of their courts were frequently

the

10

SECT: the main support of their dignity. It was with infinite zeal that they afferted and defended this high privilege of their order. By this institution however, every kingdom in Europe was fplit into as many separate principalities as it contained powerful barons. Their vaffals, whether in peace or in war, were hardly tenfible of any authority, but that of their immediate superior lord. They felt themselves subject to no other command. They were amenable to no other jurisdiction. The ties which linked together these smaller confederacies became close and firm; the bonds of public union relaxed, or were diffolyed. nobles strained their invention in devising regulations which tended to afcertain and perpetuate this distinction. In order to guard against any appearance of subordination in their courts to those of the crown, they frequently constrained their monarchs to prohibit the royal judges from entering their territories, or from claiming any jurisdiction there; and if, either through mistake, or from the ipirit of encroachment, any royal judge ventured to extend his authority to the vasfals of a baron, they might plead their right of exemption, and the lord of whom they held could not on'y rescue them out of his hands, but was intitled to legal reparation for the injury and affront offered to him. The jurisdiction of the royal judges fcarcely reached beyond the narrow limits of the king's demesnes. Instead or a regular gradation of courts, all acknowledging the authority

of the same general laws, and looking up to these as the guides of their decisions, there were in every feudal kingdom a number of independent tribunals, the proceedings of which were directed by local customs and contradictory forms. The collision of jurisdiction among these different courts often retarded the execution of justice: The variety and caprice of their modes of procedure must have for ever kept the administration of it from attaining any degree of uniformity or perfection.

ALL the monarchs of Europe perceived these Expedients encroachments on their jurification, and bore in order to them with impatience. But the usurpations of the limit or abolish it. nobles were fo firmly established, and the danger of endeavouring to overturn them by open force was fo manifest, that kings were obliged to remain fatisfied with attempts to undermine them. Various expedients were employed for this purpose; each of which merit attention, as they mark the progress of law and equity in the several kingdoms of Europe. At first, princes endeavoured to circumscribe the jurisdiction of the barons, by conterding that they ought to take cognizance only of smailer offences, reserving those of greater moment, under the appellation of Pleas of the Crown, and Royal Causes, to be tried in the king's courts. This, however, affected only the barons of infaior note; the more powerful nobles fcorned fuch a diffunction, and not only claimed unlimited jurildction, but obliged their fovereigns to grant them charters, conveying or recognizing this privilege

SECT. vilege in the most ample form. The attempt, nevertheless, was productive of some good consequences, and paved the way for more. It turned the attention of men towards a jurisdiction distinct from that of the baron whose vassals they were; it accustomed them to the pretensions of superiority which the crown claimed over territorial judges; and taught them, when oppressed by their own fuperior lord, to look up to their fovereign as their protector. This facilitated the introduction of appeals, by which princes brought the decisions of the barons' courts under the review of the royal judges. While trial by combat fubfifted in full vigour, no point decided according to that mode could be brought under the review of another court. It had been referred to the judgment of God; the issue of battle had declared his will; and it would have been impious to have called in question the equity of the divine decision. But as toon as that barbarous custom began to fall into difuse, princes encouraged the vaffals of the barons to fue for redrefs, by appealing to the royal courts. The progress of this practice, however, was flow and gradual. The first instances of appeals were on account of the delay or the refusal of justice in the barons' court; and as these were countenanced by the ideas of fubordination in the feudal conflitution, the nobles allowed them to be introduced without much opposition. But when these were followed by appeals on account of the justice or iniquity of the sentence, the nobles then began to be sersible,

that if this innovation became general, the shadow SECT. of power alone would remain in their hands, and all real authority and jurifdiction would centre in those courts which poffested the right of review. They inftantly took the alarm, remonstrated against the encroachment, and contended boldly for their ancient privileges. But the monarchs in the different kingdoms of Europe purfued their plan with fteadineis and prudence. Though forced to fufpend their operations on some occasion, and seemingly to yield when any formidable confederacy of their vaffals united against them, they refumed their measures as soon as they observed the nobles to be remiss or feeble, and pushed them with vigour. They appointed the royal courts, which originally were ambulatory, and irregular with respect to their times of meeting, to be held in a fixed place, and at stated seasons. They were folicitous to name judges of more diffinguished abilities than fuch as usually prefided in the courts of the barons. They added dignity to their character, and splendour to their affemblies. They laboured to render their forms regular, and their decrees confiftent. Such judicatories became, of course, the objects of public confidence as well as veneration. The people, relinquishing the tribunals of their lords, were eager to bring every subject of contest under the more equal and difcerning eye of those whom their fovereign had chosen to give judgment in his name. Thus kings became once more the heads of the community, and the dispensers of justice to their fubjects. The barons, in some kingdoms, ceafed



SECT. ceased to exercise their right of jurisdiction, because it sunk into contempt; in others, it was circumscribed by such regulations as rendered it innocent, or it was enthery abolished by express statutes. Thus the administration of justice taking its rife from one fource, and following one direction, held its course in every state with more uniformity, and with greater force [Z].

The regulations of the canon law promote a mere perfect adminiftration.

VI. THE forms and maxims of the canon law, which were become universally respectable from their authority in the spiritual courts, contributed not a little towards those improvements in jurifprudence which I have enumerated. If we confider the canon law politically, and view it either as a fystem framed on purpose to assist the clergy in usurping powers and jurisdiction no less repugnant to the nature of their function, than inconfistent with the order of government; or as the chief instrument in establishing the dominion of the popes, which shook the throne, and endangered the liberties of every kingdom in Europe, we must pronounce it one of the most formidable engines ever formed against the happiness of civil society. But if we contemplate it merely as a code of laws respecting the rights and property of individuals. and attend only to the civil effects of its decisions concerning these, it will appear in a different, and a much more favourable light. In ages of

[Z] NOTE XXIII.

The proclefinftical

ignorance and credulity, the ministers of religion SECT. are the objects of superstitious veneration. When the barbarians who over-ran the Roman Empire grees of ecfirst embraced the Christian faith, they found the usurpation, clergy in possession of considerable power; and they naturally transferred to those new guides the profound tubmiffion and reverence which they were accustomed to yield to the priests of that religion which they had for aken. They deemed their perfons to be equally facred with their function; and would have confidered it as impious to subject them to the profane jurisdiction of the laity. The clergy were not blind to these advantages which the weakness of mankind afforded them. They established courts, in which every question relating to their own character, their function, or their property, was tried. They pleaded, and obtained an almost total exemption from the authority of civil judges. Upon different pretexts, and by a multiplicity of artifices, they communicated this privilege to fo many perfons, and extended their jurifdiction to such a variety of cases, that the greater part of those affairs which gave rise to contest and litigation, was drawn under the cognizance of the spiritual courts.

But, in order to dispose the laity to suffer these Theplan of usurpations without murmur or opposition, it was cal jurifnecessary to convince them, that the administration of justice would be rendered more perfect by the establishment of this new jurisdiction. This was avidcounts

ecclefiaftiprudence more perfect than that in the



not a difficult undertaking at that period, when ecclefiaftics carried on their encreachments with the greatest success. That scanty portion of science which ferved to guide men in the ages of darkness, was almost entirely engrossed by the clergy. They alone were accustomed to read, to enquire, and to reason. Whatever knowledge of ancient jurisprudence had been preferved, either by tradition, or in fuch books as had escaped the destructive rage of barbarians, was possessed by them. Upon the maxims of that excellent fystem, they founded a code of laws confonant to the great principles of equity. Being directed by fixed and known rules, the forms of their courts were ascertained, and their decisions became uniform and confistent. Nor did they want authority sufficient to enforce their sentences. Excommunication and other ecclefiastical censures, were punishments more formidable than any that civil judges could inflict in support of their decrees.

The good cheets of inntating and adopting it.

It is not surprising then, that ecclesiastical jurisprudence thould become such an object of admiration and respect, that exemption from civil
jurisdiction was courted as a privilege, and conferred as a reward. It is not surprising, that, even
to rude people, the maxims of the canon law
should appear more equal and just than those of
the ill-digested jurisprudence which directed all proceedings in civil courts. According to the latter,
the differences between contending barons were
terminated,

terminated, as in a state of nature, by the sword; SECT. according to the former, every matter was fub- iected to the decision of laws. The one, by permitting judicial combats, left chance and force to be arbiters of right or wrong, of truth or falfehood; the other, paffed judgment with respect to these by the maxims of equity, and the testimony of witnesses. Any error or iniquity in a fentence pronounced by a baron to whom feudal jurisdiction belonged, was irremediable, because originally it was subject to the review of no superior tribunal; the ecclefiaftical law established a regular gradation of courts, through all which a cause might be carried by appeal, until it was determined by that authority which was held to be fupreme in the church. Thus the genius and principles of the canon law prepared men for approving those three great alterations in the feudal jurisprudence which I have mentioned. But it was not with respect to these points alone that the canon law fuggested improvements beneficial to fociety. Many of the regulations, now deemed the barriers of personal fecurity, or the fafeguards of private property, are contrary to the spirit, and repugnant to the maxims of the civil jurisprudence known in Europe during feveral centuries, and were borrowed from the rules and practice of the ecclefiastical courts. By observing the wildom and equity of the decisions in these courts, men began to perceive the necessity either of deferting the martial tribunals

SECT. tribunals of the barons, or of attempting to reform them [AA].

The revival of the Roman law contributes towards ideas concerning juftice and order.

VII. The revival of the knowledge and study of the Roman law co-operated with the causes which I have mentioned, in introducing more moreliberal just and liberal ideas concerning the nature of government, and the administration of justice. Among the calamities which the devastations of the barbarians who broke in upon the empire brought upon mankind, one of the greatest was their overturning the fystem of Roman jurisprudence, the noblest monument of the wisdom of that great people, formed to fubdue and to govern the world. The laws and regulations of a civilfr m which ized community were repugnant to the manners and ideas of these fierce invaders. They had respect to objects of which a rude people had no conception; and were adapted to a state of society with which they were entirely unacquainted. For this reason, wherever they settled, the Roman juriforudence foon funk into oblivion, and lay buried for some centuries under the load of those inflitutions which the inhabitants of Europe dignified with the name of laws. But towards the middle of the twelfth century, a copy of Justinian's Pandects was accidentally discovered in Ita'v. that time, the state of society was so far advanced, and the ideas of men fo much enlarged and

The circumftances. the Roman law fell into oblivion.

[AA] NOTE XXIV.

improved

improved by the occurrences of feveral centuries, during which they had continued in political union, that they were flruck with admiration of a system Circumwhich their ancestors could not comprehend. which fa-Though they had not hitherto attained fuch a voured the revivalorita degree of refinement, as to acquire from the ancients a relish for true philosophy or speculative science; though they were still insensible, in a great degree, to the beauty and elegance of clasfical composition; they were sufficiently qualified to judge with respect to the merit of their system of laws, in which the many points most interesting to mankind were fettled with differnment, precision, and equity. All men of letters studied this new science with eagerness; and within a few years after the discovery of the Pandects, professors of civil law were appointed, who taught it publicly in most countries of Europe.

THE effects of having fuch an excellent model The effects to study and to imitate were immediately perceived Men, as foon as they were acquainted with fixed and general laws, perceived the advantage of them, fation of and became impatient to afcertain the principles and forms by which judges should regulate their decifions. Such was the ardour with which they carried on an undertaking of fo great importance to fociety, that, before the close of the twelfth century, the feudal law was reduced into a regular fystem; the code of canon law was enlarged and methodized; and the loofe uncertain customs of different

of this upon e dens of me , and the dispenjustice.

SECT. different provinces or kingdoms were collected and arranged with an order and accuracy acquired from the knowledge of Roman jurisprudence. In some countries of Europe the Roman law was adopted as fubfidiary to their own municipal law; and all cases to which the latter did not extend, were decided according to the principles of the former. In others, the maxims as well as forms of Roman jurisprudence, mingled imperceptibly with the laws of the country, and had a powerful, though less sensible, influence, in improving and perfecting them [BB].

From all thefe arofe a distinction in profestions.

THESE various improvements in the system of jurisprudence, and administration of justice, occafioned a change in manners, of great importance, and of extensive effect. They gave rise to a distinction of professions; they obliged men to cultivate different talents, and to aim at different accomplishments, in order to qualify themselves for the various departments and functions which became necessary in society r. Among uncivilized nations, there is but one profession honourable. that of arms. All the ingenuity and vigour of the human mind are exerted in acquiring military skill or address. The functions of peace are few and fimple; and require no particular course of

[BE] NOTE XXV.

education

Dr. Ferguson's Essay on the History of Civil Society, part iv. fect. I.

education or of study, as a preparation for discharg- SECT. ing them. This was the state of Europe during feveral centuries. Every gentleman, born a foldier, fcorned any other occupation; he was taught no fcience but that of war; even his exercises and pattimes were feats of martial prowefs. Nor did the judicial character, which persons of noble birth were alone entitled to affume, demand any degree of knowledge beyond that which fuch untutored foldiers possessed. To recollect a few traditionary customs which time had confirmed, and rendered respectable; to mark out the lists of battle with due formality; to observe the iffue of the combat; and to pronounce whether it had been conducted according to the laws of arms; included every thing that a baron, who acted as a judge, found it neceffary to understand.

But when the forms of legal proceedings were fixed, when the rules of decition were committed of this on to writing, and collected into a body, law became fociety. a science, the knowledge of which required a regular course of study, together with long attention to the practice of courts. Martial and illiterate nobles had neither leifure nor inclination to undertake a task so laborious, as well as so foreign from all the occupations which they deemed entertaining, or fuitable to their rank. They gradually relinquished their places in courts of justice, where their ignorance exposed them to contempt. They became weary of attending to the discussion of cases. VOL. I. which



SECT. which grew too intricate for them to comprehend. Not only the judicial determination of points which were the subject of controversy, but the conduct of all legal business and transactions, was committed to persons trained by previous study and application to the knowledge of law. An order of men, to whom their fellow-citizens had daily recourse for advice, and to whom they looked up for decision in their most important concerns, naturally acquired confideration and influence in fociety. They were advanced to honours which had been confidered hitherto as the peculiar rewards of military virtue. They were entrusted with offices of the highest dignity and most extensive power. Thus, another profession than that of arms came to be introduced among the laity, and was reputed honourable. The functions of civil life were attended to. The talents requifite for discharging them were cultivated. A new road was opened to wealth and eminence. The arts and virtues of peace were placed in their proper rank, and received their due recompence [CC].

The fpirit of Chivalry introduces more liberal fentiments, and more generous manners.

VIII. WHILE improvements, fo important with respect to the state of society and the administration of justice, gradually made progress in Europe, fentiments more liberal and generous had begun to animate the nobles. These were inspired by the fpirit of chivalry, which, though confidered, commonly, as a wild institution, the effect of caprice, and the fource of extravagance, arose naturally from the state of society at that period, and had a very ferious influence in refining the manners of the European nations. The feudal state was a state Origin of of almost perpetual war, rapine, and anarchy; during which the weak and unarmed were exposed to infults or injuries. The power of the fovereign was too limited to prevent these wrongs; and the administration of justice too feeble to redress them. The most effectual protection against violence and oppression, was often found to be that which the valour and generofity of private persons afforded. The fame spirit of enterprise which had prompted fo many gentlemen to take arms in defence of the oppressed pilgrims in Palestine, incited others to declare themselves the patrons and avengers of injured innocence at home. When the final reduction of the Holy Land under the dominion of Infidels put an end to these foreign expeditions, the latter was the only employment left for the activity and courage of adventurers. To check the infolence of overgrown oppressors; to rescue the helpless from captivity; to protect, or to avenge women, orphans, and ecclefiaftics, who could not bear arms in their own defence; to redress wrongs, and to remove grievances; were deemed acts of the highest prowess and merit. Valour, humanity, courtely, justice, honour, were the characteristic qualities of chivalry. To these were added religion, which mingled itself with every passion and institution during the middle ages, and by infusing a large proportion of enthusiastic zeal, gave them such force



Chivalry.



SECT. as carried them to romantic excess. Men were trained to knighthood by a long previous discipline; they were admitted into the order by folemnities no less devout than pompous; every person of noble birth courted that honour; it was deemed a diffinction superior to royalty; and monarchs were proud to receive it from the hands of private gentlemen.

Its beneficial effects.

This fingular inftitution, in which valour, gallantry, and religion, were fo ftrangely blended, was wonderfully adapted to the tafte and genius of martial nobles; and its effects were foon visible in their manners. War was carried on with less ferocity, when humanity came to be deemed the ornament of knighthood no less than courage. More gentle and polished manners were introduced, when courtely was recommended as the most amiable of knightly virtues. Violence and oppression decreated, when it was reckoned meritorious to check and to punish them. A scrupulous adherence to truth, with the most religious attention to fulfil every engagement, became the diftinguishing characteristic of a gentleman, because chivalry was regarded as the school of honour, and inculcated the most delicate sensibility with respect to those points. The admiration of these qualities, together with the high diffinctions and prerogatives conferred on knighthood in every part of Europe, infpired perfons of noble birth on fome occations with a fpecies of military fanaticiim, and led them to extra-

vagant

vagant enterprises. But they deeply imprinted on SECT. their minds the principles of generofity and honour. Thele were strengthened by every thing that can affect the fentes or touch the heart. The wild exploits of those romantic knights who fallied forth in quest of adventures, are well known, and have been treated with proper ridicule. The political and permanent effects of the fpirit of chivalry have been less observed. Perhaps, the humanity which accompanies all the operations of war, the refinements of gailantry, and the point of honour, the three chief circumstances which distinguish modern from ancient manners, may be atcribed in a great meature to this institution, which has appeared whimfical to superficial observers, but by its effects has proved of great benefit to mankind. The fentiments which chivalry inspired, had a wonderful influence on manners and conduct durring the twelfth, thirtcenth, fourteenth, and fifteenth centuries. They were fo deeply rooted, that they continued to operate after the vigour and reputation of the inflitution itself began to decline. Some confiderable transactions, recorded in the following history, refemble the adventurous exploits of chivalry, rather than the well-regulated operations of found policy. Some of the most eminent personages, whose characters will be delineated, were strongly tinctured with this romantic spirit. Francis I. was ambitious to distinguish himself by all the qualities of an accomplished knight, and endeavoured to imitate the enter-

prifing genius of chivalry in war, as well as its pomp and courtefy during peace. The fame which the French monarch acquired by these splendid actions, fo far dazzled his more temperate rival. that he departed on some occasions from his usual prudence and moderation, and emulated Francis in deeds of prowefs, or of gallantry [DD].

The progrefs of fcience has great influence on the manners and character of men.

IX. THE progress of science, and the cultivation of literature, had confiderable effect in changing the manners of the European nations, and introducing that civility and refinement by which they are now distinguished. At the time when their empire was overturned, the Romans, though they had loft that correct tafte which has rendered the productions of their ancestors standards of excellence, and models of imitation for fucceeding ages, still preserved their love of letters, and cultivated the arts with great ardour. But rude barbarians were fo far from being struck with any admiration of these unknown accomplishments, that they despised them. They were not arrived at that state of fociety, when those faculties of the human mind, which have beauty and elegance for their objects, begin to unfold themselves. They were strangers to most of those wants and desires which are the parents of ingenious invention; and as they did not comprehend either the merit or utility of the Roman arts, they destroyed the monuments of them with an industry not inferior to that

Ignorance of the middle ages.

[DD] NOTE XXVII.

with

with which their posterity have since studied to preferve or to recover them. The convultions occafioned by the fettlement of fo many unpolished tribes in the Empire; the frequent as well as violent revolutions in every kingdom which they established; together with the interior defects in the form of government which they introduced, banished fecurity and leifure; prevented the growth of taste, or the culture of science; and kept Europe, during feveral centuries, in that state of ignorance which has been already described. But the events and institutions which I have enumerated, produced great alterations in fociety. As foon as their operation, in restoring liberty and independence to one part of the community, began to be felt; as foon as they began to communicate to all the members of fociety some taste of the advantages arising from commerce, from public order, and from personal fecurity, the human mind became conscious of powers which it did not formerly perceive, and fond of occupations or purfuits of which it was formerly incapable. Towards the beginning of the twelfth century, we discern the first symptoms of its awakening from that lethargy in which it had been long funk, and observe it turning with curiofity and attention towards new objects.

THE first literary efforts, however, of the Euro- The first lipean nations in the middle ages, were extremely forts ill-diill-directed. Among nations, as well as indivi- rected and the causes duals, the powers of imagination attain fonce degree of this,



SECT. of vigour before the intellectual faculties are much exercised in speculative or abstract disquisition. Men are poets before they are philosophers. They feel with fensibility, and describe with force, when they have made but little progress in investigation or reasoning. The age of Homer and of Hesiod long preceded that of Thales or of So rates. But, unhappily for literature, our ancestors, deviating from this course which nature points out, plunged at once into the depths of abstrute and metaphyfical inquiry. They had been converted to the Christian faith, soon after they settled in their new conquests But they did not receive it pure. The prefumption of men had added to the simple and instructive doctrines of Christianity the theories of a vain philotophy, that attempted to penetrate into mysteries, and to decide questions which the limited faculties of the human mind are unable to comprehend or to refolve. These over-curious speculations were incorporated with the fystem of religion, and came to be confidered as the most effential part of it. As foon, then, as curiofity prompted men to inquire and to reason, these were the subjects which first presented themselves, and engaged their attention. The scholastic the logy, with its infinite train of bold disquisitions, and subtile distinctions concerning points which are not the object of human reason, was the first production of the spirit of inquiry after it began to resume some degree of activity and visour in Europe. It was not, however, this circumstance alone, that gave fuch

fuch a wrong turn to the minds of men, when they began again to exercise talents which they had so long neglected. Most of the perions who attempted to revive leterature in the twelfth and thirteenth centuries, had received instruction, or derived their principles of teience from the Greeks in the Eastern Empire, or from the Arabians in Spain and Africa. Both these people, acute and inquisitive to excefs, had corrupted those sciences which they cultivated. The former rendered theology a fystem of speculative remement, or of endless controverly. The latter communicated to philosophy a spirit of metaphysical and frivolous subtlety. Misled by these guides, the persons who first applied to science were involved in a maze of intricate inquiries. Inflead of allowing their fancy to take its natural range, and to produce fuch works of invention as might have improved their tafte, and refined their fentiments; instead of cultivating those arts which embellish human life, and render it comfortable; they were fettered by authority, they were led aftray by example, and wasted the whole force of their genius in speculations as unavailing as they were difficult.

Bur fruitless and ill-directed as these specula- They had, tions were, their novelty roused, and their boldiness however, interested the human mind. The ardour with which able effects. men pursued these uninviting studies was astonishing. Genuine philosophy was never cultivated, in any enlightened age, with more zeal. Schools, upon the model of those instituted by Charlemagne,

SECT. were opened in every cathedral, and almost in every monastery of note. Colleges and universities were erected and formed into communities or corporations, governed by their own laws, and invested with feparate and extensive jurisdiction over their own members. A regular course of studies was planned. Privileges of great value were conferred on mafters and scholars. Academical titles and honours of various kinds were invented as a recompence for both. Nor was it in the schools alone that superiority in science led to reputation and authority; it became an object of respect in life, and advanced such as acquired it to a rank of no inconfiderable eminence. Allured by all these advantages, an incredible number of students resorted to those new feats of learning, and crowded with eagerness into that new path which was opened to fame and distinction.

A circumfrance vented their heing more extensive.

But how confiderable soever these first efforts which pre- may appear, there was one circumstance which prevented the effects of them from being as extensive as they naturally ought to have been. All the languages in Europe, during the period under review, were barbarous. They were destitute of elegance, of force, and even of perspicuity. No attempt had been hitherto made to improve or to polish them. The Latin tongue was confecrated by the Church to religion. Cutlom, with authority scarcely less facred, had appropriated it to literature. All the sciences cultivated in the twelfth and thirteenth centuries were taught in Latin. All books with respect

respect to them were written in that language. It SECT. would have been deemed a degradation of any important subject, to have treated of it in a modern language. This confined science within a very narrow circle. The learned alone were admitted into the temple of knowledge; the gate was shut against all others, who were fuffered to remain involved in their former darkness and ignorance.

But though science was thus prevented, during Its influfeveral ages, from diffusing itself through society, ence on manners and its influence was much circumfcribed; the progress which it made may be mentioned, nevertheless, among the great causes which contributed to introduce a change of manners into Europe. The ardent, though ill-judged spirit of inquiry which I have described, occasioned a fermentation of mind that put ingenuity and invention in motion, and gave them vigour. It led men to a new employment of their faculties, which they found to be agreeable, as well as interesting. It accustomed them to exercises and occupations which tended to foften their manners, and to give them some relish for the gentle virtues, peculiar to people among whom fcience has been cultivated with fuccess [EE].

X. THE progress of commerce had considerable The proinfluence in polishing the manners of the European grees of nations, and in establishing among them order, had great equal laws, and humanity. The wants of men, in on manners

and government.

[EE] NOTE XXVIII.



Low flate of commerce in the middle ages.

SECT. the original and most simple state of society, are so few, and their defires so limited, that they rest contented with the natural productions of their climate and foil, or with what they can add to these by their own rude industry. They have no superfluities to dispose of, and few necessities that demand a supply. Every little community subfissing on its own domestic stock, and satisfied with it, is either little acquainted with the states around it, or at variance with them. Society and manners must be considerably improved, and many provisions must be made for public order and personal security, before a liberal intercourse can take place between different nations. We find, accordingly, that the first effect of the lettlement of the barbarians in the empire was to divide those nations which the Roman power had united. Europe was broken into many separate communities. The intercourse between these divided states ceased almost entirely during several centuries. Navigation was dangerous in feas infested by pirates; nor could strangers trust to a friendly reception in the ports of uncivilized nations. Even between distant parts of the same kingdom, the communication was rare and difficult. The lawless rapine of banditti, together with the avowed exactions of the nobles, tearcely let's formidable and oppressive, rendered a journey of any length a perilous enterprise. Fixed to the spot in which they refided, the greater part of the inhabitants of Europe loft, in a great measure, the knowledge of remote regions, and were unacquainted

quainted with their names, their fituations, their sect. climates, and their commodities [FF].

VARIOUS causes, however, contributed to revive Causes of the spirit of commerce, and to renew, in some degree, the intercourse between different nations. The Italians, by their connection with Constantinople, and other cities of the Greek empire, had preferved in their own country confiderable relish for the precious commodities and curious manufactures of the East. They communicated some knowledge of these to the countries contiguous to Italy. But this commerce being extremely limited, the intercourse which it occasioned between different nations was not confiderable. The Crufades, by leading multitudes from every corner of Europe into Afia, opened a more extensive communication between the East and West, which sublisted for two centuries; and though the object of these expeditions was conquest and not commerce; though the iffue of them proved as unfortunate as the motives for undertaking them were wild and enthusiastic; their commercial effects, as hath been thown, were both beneficial and permanent. During the continuance of the Crufades, the great cities in Italy, and in other countries of Europe, acquired liberty, and together with it fuch privileges as rendered them respectable and independent communities. Thus, in every state, there was formed a new order of citizens, to whom commerce prefented itself as their proper object, and opened to them a certain

[FF] NOTE XXIX.



path to wealth and confideration. Soon after the close of the Holy War, the mariner's compass was invented, which, by rendering navigation more secure, encouraged it to become more adventurous, facilitated the communication between remote nations, and brought them nearer to each other.

First among the Italians;

THE Italian States, during the same period, established a regular commerce with the East in the ports of Egypt, and drew from thence all the rich products of the Indies. They introduced into their own territories manufactures of various kinds, and carried them on with great ingenuity and vigour. They attempted new arts; and transplanted from warmer climates, to which they had been hitherto deemed peculiar, feveral natural productions which now furnish the materials of a lucrative and extended commerce. All these commodities, whether imported from Asia, or produced by their own skill, they disposed of to great advantage among the other people of Europe, who began to acquire fome tafte for an elegance in living unknown to their ancestors, or despited by them. During the twelfth and thirteenth centuries, the commerce of Europe was almost entirely in the hands of the Italians, more commonly known in those ages by the name of Lombards. Companies or focieties of Lombard merchants fettled in every different kingdom. They were taken under the immediate protection of the feveral governments. They enjoyed extensive privileges and immunities. The operation of the ancient barbarous laws concerning ftrangers, was fuspended 13

fuspended with respect to them. They became the SECT. carriers, the manufacturers, and the bankers of all Europe.

WHILE the Italians, in the South of Europe, then by the were cultivating trade with fuch industry and fuccels, the commercial ipirit awakened in the North and League. towards the middle of the thirteenth century. As the nations around the Baltic were, at that time, extremely barbarous, and infested that sea with their piracies, the cities of Lubec and Hamburgh, foon after they began to open fome trade with thefe people, found it necessary to enter into a league of mutual defence. They derived fuch advantages from this union, that other towns acceded to their confederacy, and, in a short time, eighty of the most confiderable cities scattered through those extenfive countries which stretch from the bottom of the Baltic to Cologne on the Rhine, joined in the famous Hanseatic league, which became so formidable, that its alliance was courted, and its enmity was dreaded by the greatest monarchs. The members of this powerful affociation formed the first fystematic plan of commerce known in the middle ages, and conducted it by common laws enacted in their general affemblies. They supplied the rest of Europe with naval stores, and pitched on different towns, the most eminent of which was Bruges in Flanders, where they established staples in which their commerce was regularly carried on. Thither the Lombards brought the productions of India, together

SECT. together with the manufactures of Italy, and exchanged them for the more bulky, but not less useful commodities of the North. The Hanseatic merchants disposed of the cargoes which they received from the Lombards, in the ports of the Baltic, or carried them up the great rivers into the interior parts of Germany.

Commerce makes pro-Netherlands:

This regular intercourse opened between the gress in the nations in the North and South of Europe, made them fensible of their mutual wants, and created fuch new and increasing demands for commodities of every kind, that it excited among the inhabitants of the Netherlands a more vigorous spirit in carrying on the two great manufactures of wool and flax, which feem to have been confiderable in that country as early as the age of Charlemagne. As Bruges became the centre of communication between the Lombard and Hanseatic merchants, the Flemings traded with both in that city to fuch extent as well as advantage, as spread among them a general habit of industry, which long rendered Flanders and the adjacent provinces the most opulent, the most populous, and best cultivated countries in Europe.

and in England.

STRUCK with the flourishing state of these provinces, of which he discerned the true cause, Edward III. of England endeavoured to excite a spirit of industry among his own subjects, who, blind to the advantages of their fituation, and ignorant

of the fource from which opulence was destined to secr. flow into their country, were so little attentive to their commercial interests, as hardly to attempt those manufactures, the materials of which they furnished to foreigners. By alluring Flemish artifans to fettle in his dominions, as well as by many wife laws for the encouragement and regulation of trade, Edward gave a beginning to the woollen manufactures of England, and first turned the active and enterprising genius of his people towards those arts which have raifed the English to the highest rank among commercial nations.

This increase of commerce, and of intercourse The beneated between nations, how inconsiderable soever it may of this. appear in respect of their rapid and extensive progress during the last and present age, seems wonderfully great, when we compare it with the state of both in Europe previous to the twelfth century. It did not fail of producing great effects. Commerce tends to wear off those prejudices which maintain diffinction and animofity between nations It foftens and polishes the manners of men. It unites them by one of the strongest of all ties, the defire of fupplying their mutual wants. It disposes them to peace, by establishing in every state an order of citizens bound by their interest to be the guardians of public tranquillity. As foon as the commercial spirit acquires vigour, and begins to gain an afcendant in any fociety, we discover a new genius in its policy, its alliances, its wars, and its VOL. I. negociations. H

SECT.

negociations. Conspicuous proofs of this occur in the history of the Italian states, of the Hanseatic league, and the cities of the Netherlands, during the period under review. In proportion as commerce made its way into the different countries of Europe, they successively turned their attention to those objects, and adopted those manners, which occupy and distinguish polished nations [GG].

[GG] NOTE XXX.

VIEW

OF THE

PROGRESS OF SOCIETY

IN

EUROPE,

FROM THE

SUBVERSION OF THE ROMAN EMPIRE,

TO THE

BEGINNING OF THE SIXTEENTH CENTURY.

SECTION IL

View of the Progress of Society in Europe, with respect to the command of the national force requisite in foreign operations.

CUCH are the events and institutions, which, by their powerful operation, contributed gradually to introduce regular government and polithed State of femanners into the various nations of Europe. When lyimproved we furvey the state of society, or the character of at the beindividuals, at the opening of the fifteenth cen- the fif-

ciety greatginning of teenth cen-

SECT.

H 2

tury, tury.



tury, and then turn back to view the condition of both at the time when the barbarous tribes, which overturned the Roman power, completed their fettlement in their new conquests, the progress which mankind had made towards order and refinement will appear immense.

Still defective with respect to the command of the national force.

GOVERNMENT, however, was still far from having attained that state, in which extensive monarchies act with the united vigour of the whole community, or carry on great undertakings with perseverance and fuccefs. Small tribes or communities, even in their rudest state, may operate in concert, and exert their utmost force. They are excited to act not by the distant objects or the refined speculations, which interest or affect men in polished focieties, but by their present feelings. The infults of an enemy kindle rejentment; the fuccess of a rival tribe awakens emulation: these passions communicate from breaft to breaft, and all the members of the community, with united ardour, rush into the field in order to gratify their revenge, or to acquire distinction. But in widely extended states, fuch as the great kingdoms of Europe, at the beginning of the fifteenth century, where there is little intercourse between the distant members of the community, and where every great enterprise requires previous concert and long preparation, nothing can rouse and call forth their united strength, but the absolute command of a despot, or the powerful influence of regular policy. Of the former, the vast empires in the East are an example; the irrefiftible 18

irrefistible mandate of the fovereign reaches the most remote provinces of his dominions, and compels whatever number of his subjects he is pleased to fummon, to follow his standard. The kingdoms of Europe, in the present age, are an instance of the latter; the prince, by the lefs violent, but no lefs effectual operation of laws and a well-regulated government, is enabled to avail himself of the whole force of his state, and to employ it in enterprises which require strenuous and persevering efforts.

SECT.

But, at the opening of the fifteenth century, The power the political conftitution in all the kingdoms of narchs very Europe was very different from either of these states of government. The several monarchs, though they had fomewhat enlarged the boundaries of prerogative by fuccessful encroachments on the immunities and privileges of the nobility, were possessed of an authority extremely limited. The laws and interior police of kingdoms, though much improved by the various events and regulations which I have enumerated, were still feeble and imperfect. In every country, a numerous body of nobles, who continued to be formidable notwithstanding the various expedients employed to depress them, watched all the motions of their fovereign with a jealous attention, which fet bounds to his ambition, and either prevented his forming schemes of extensive enterprise, or obstructed the execution of them.

SECT.
II.
Their revenues fmall.

THE ordinary revenues of every prince were fo extremely small as to be inadequate to any great undertaking. He depended for extraordinary supplies on the good-will of his subjects, who granted them often with a reluctant, and always with a sparing hand.

Their armies unfit for conquest.

As the revenues of princes were inconfiderable, the armies which they could bring into the field were unfit for long and effectual fervice. Instead of being able to employ troops trained to skill in arms, and to military fubordination, by regular discipline, monarchs were obliged to depend on fuch forces as their vaffals conducted to their standard in consequence of their military tenures. These, as they were bound to remain under arms only for a short time, could not march far from their usual place of residence, and being more attached to the lord of whom they held, than to the fovereign whom they ferved, were often as much disposed to counteract as to forward his Nor were they, even if they had been more subject to the command of the monarch, proper instruments to carry into execution any great and arduous enterprise. The strength of an army, formed either for conquest or defence, lies in infantry. To the stability and discipline of their legions, confifting chiefly of infantry, the Romans, during the times of the republic, were indebted for their victories; and when their descendants, forgetting the institutions which had led them to universal

univerfal dominion, so far altered their military SECT. fystem as to place their principal confidence in a numerous cavalry, the undisciplined impetuosity of the barbarous nations, who fought mostly on foot, was fufficient, as I have already observed, to overcome them. These nations, soon after they fettled in their new conquests, uninstructed by the fatal error of the Romans, relinquished the customs of their ancestors, and converted the chief force of their armies into cavalry. Among the Romans this change was occasioned by the effeminacy of their troops, who could not endure the fatigues of fervice, which their more virtuous and hardy ancestors had sustained with ease. Among the people who established the new monarchies into which Europe was divided, this innovation in military discipline seems to have flowed from the pride of the nobles, who, fcorning to mingle with persons of inferior rank, aimed at being distinguished from them in the field, as well as during peace. The institution of chivalry, and the frequency of tournaments, in which knights, in complete armour, entered the lifts on horseback with extraordinary splendour, displaying amazing address, force, and valour, brought cavalry into still greater esteem. The fondness for that service increased to such a degree, that, during the thirteenth and fourteenth centuries, the armies of Europe were composed almost entirely of cavalry. No gentleman would appear in the field but on horseback. To serve in any other manner, he H 4 would



would have deemed derogatory to his rank. The cavalry, by way of distinction, was called *The battle*, and on it alone depended the fate of every action. The infantry, collected from the dregs and refuse of the people, ill armed and worse disciplined, was almost of no account.

They are incapable of forming any general or extensive plan of operation.

As these circumstances rendered the operations of particular kingdoms less considerable and less vigorous, fo they long kept the princes of Europe from giving fuch attention to the schemes and transactions of their neighbours, as might lead them to form any regular system of public security. They were, of consequence, prevented from uniting in confederacy, or from acting with concert, in order to establish such a distribution and balance of power, as should hinder any state from rising to a fuperiority, which might endanger the general liberty and independence. During several centuries, the nations of Europe appear to have confidered themselves as separate societies, scarcely connected together by any common interest, and little concerned in each others' affairs or operations. An extensive commerce did not afford them an opportunity of observing and penetrating into the schemes of every different state. They had not ambassadors refiding constantly in every court to watch and give early intelligence of all its motions. The expectation of remote advantages, or the prospect of distant and contingent evils, were not fufficient to excite nations to take arms. Such only as were within

the sphere of immediate danger, and unavoidably SECT. exposed to injury or insult, thought themselves interested in any contest, or bound to take precautions for their own fafety.



WHOEVER records the transactions of any of They were the more considerable European states during the needed with two last centuries, must write the history of Europe. Its various kingdoms, throughout that period, have been formed into one great system, so closely united, that each holding a determinate station, the operations of one are fo felt by all, as to influence their counsels and regulate their measures. But previous to the fifteenth century, unless when vicinity of territory rendered the occasions of difcord frequent and unavoidable, or when national emulation fomented or embittered the spirit of hostility, the affairs of different countries are seldom interwoven with each other. In each kingdom of Europe great events and revolutions happened. which the other powers beheld with almost the fame indifference as if they had been uninterested spectators, to whom the effect of these transactions could never extend.

each other

During the violent struggles between France A country and England, and notwithstanding the alarming this from progress which was made towards rendering one of France prince the master of both these kingdoms, hardly one measure which can be considered as the result of a fagacious and prudent policy, was formed in

SECT. order to guard against an event so fatal to Europe. The dukes of Burgundy and Bretagne, whom their fituation would not permit to remain neutral. engaged, it is true, in the contest; but in taking their part they feem rather to have followed the impulse of their passions, than to have been guided by any just discernment of the danger which threatened themselves and the tranquillity of Europe. The other princes, feemingly unaffected by the alternate successes of the contending parties, left them to decide the quarrel by themfelves, or interposed only by feeble and ineffectual negociations.

From those of Spain.

Notwithstanding the perpetual hostilities in which the various kingdoms of Spain were engaged during feveral centuries, and the fuccessive occurrences which visibly tended to unite that part of the Continent into one great monarchy, the princes of Europe hardly took any step from which we may conclude that they gave a proper attention to that important event. They permitted a power to arise imperceptibly, and to acquire ftrength there, which foon became formidable to all its neighbours.

From those ei i er-111207.

Amipar the violent convulsions with which the spirit of domination in the See of Rome, and the turbulent ambition of the German nobles, agitated the empire, neither the authority of the popes, foconded by all their artifices and intrigues, nor

the

the folicitations of the emperors, could induce any of the powerful monarchs in Europe to engage in their quarrel, or to avail themselves of many favourable opportunities of interpoling with effect and advantage.

This amazing inactivity, during transactions so This inactiinteresting, is not to be imputed to any incapacity fined of differning their political confequences. The entirely by power of judging with fagacity, and of acting with governvigour, is the portion of men of every age. The monarchs who reigned in the different kingdoms of Europe during feveral centuries, were not blind to their particular interest, negligent of the public fafety, or strangers to the method of securing both. If they did not adopt that falutary fystem, which teaches modern politicians to take the alarm at the prospect of distant dangers, which prompts them to check the first encroachments of any formidable power, and which renders each state the guardian, in some degree, of the rights and independence of all its neighbours, this was owing entirely to fuch imperfections and diforders in the civil government of each country, as made it impossible for fovereigns to act fuitably to those ideas, which the posture of affairs, and their own observation, must have fuggefted.

vity occa-

Bur during the course of the fifteenth century, Events hapvarious events happened, which, by giving princes ingthe act more entire command of the force in their respectioning, tive dominions, rendered their operations more der the vigorous

ing the 15th which renefforts of

nations mere powerful and extensive.

vigorous and extensive. In consequence of this, the affairs of different kingdoms becoming more frequently as well as more intimately connected, they were gradually accustomed to act in concern and confederacy, and were infenfibly perpared for forming a fystem of policy, in order to exacuth or to preferve such a balance of power as was most confiftent with the general fecurity. It was during the reign of Charles the Fifth, that the ideas, on which this fystem is founded, first came to be fully understood. It was then, that the maxims by which it has been uniformly maintained fince that æra, were univerfally adopted. On this account, a view of the causes and events which contributed to establish a plan of policy, more salutary and extensive than any that has taken place in the conduct of human affairs, is not only a necessary introduction to the following work, but is a capital object in the history of Europe.

The first of their was the deprivand the Freshith of their territories on the contiment.

The first event that occasioned any considerable alteration in the arrangement of affairs in Europe, was the annexation of the extensive territories, which England possessed on the continent, to the crown of France. While the English were masters of several of the most fertile and opulent provinces in France, and a great part of its most martial inhabitants was bound to follow their standard, an English monarch considered himself rather as the rival, than as the vassal of the sovereign of whom he held. The kings of France, circumscribed and thwarted in their schemes and operations

by an adversary no less jealous than formidable, sect. durst not enter upon any enterprile of importance or of difficulty. The English were always at hand, ready to oppose them. They disputed even their right to their crown, and being able to penetrate, with eafe, into the heart of the kingdom, could arm against them those very hands which ought to have been employed in their defence. Timid counsels and feeble efforts were natural to monarchs in fuch a fituation. France, difmembered and overawed, could not attain its proper station in the system of Europe. But the death of Henry V. of England, happily for France, and not unfortunately for his own country, delivered the French from the calamity of having a foreign mafter feated on their throne. The weakness of a long minority, the diffensions in the English court, together with the unsteady and languid conduct which these occasioned, afforded the French a favourable opportunity of recovering the territories which they had loft. The native valour of the French nobility, heightened to an enthusiastic confidence, by a supposed interposition of Heaven in their behalf; conducted in the field by skilful leaders; and directed in the cabinet by a prudent monarch; was exerted with fuch vigour and fuccels, during this favourable juncture, as not only wrested from the English their new conquests, but stript them of their ancient possessions in France, and reduced them within the narrow precincts of Calais, and its petty territory.

The effect of this on increasing the power of the French monarchy.

As foon as fo many confiderable provinces were re-united to their dominions, the kings of France, confcious of this acquifition of strength, began to form bolder schemes of interior policy, as well as of foreign operations. They immediately became formidable to their neighbours, who began to fix their attention on their measures and motions, the importance of which they fully perceived. From this æra, France, possessed of the advantages which it derives from the situation and contiguity of its territories, as well as from the number and valour of its people, rose to new influence in Europe, and was the first power in a condition to give alarm to the jealousy or fears of the states around it.

On the flate of the military force in the nation.

Nor was France indebted for this increase of importance merely to the re-union of the provinces which had been torn from it. A circumstance attended the recovery of these, which, though less confiderable, and less observed, contributed not a little to give additional vigour and decision to all the efforts of that monarchy. During the obstinate struggles between France and England, all the defects of the military system under the feudal government were fenfibly felt. A war of long continuance languished, when carried on by troops bound and accustomed to keep the field only for a short time. Armies, composed chiefly of heavyarmed cavalry, were unfit either for the defence or the attack of the many towns and castles, which it became necessary to guard or to reduce. In order to obtain such permanent and effective force,

as became requisite during these lengthened con- sect. tests, the kings of France took into their pay confiderable bands of mercenary foldiers, levied fometimes among their own subjects, and sometimes in foreign countries. But as the feudal policy provided no fufficient fund for fuch extraordinary fervice, thefe adventurers were dismissed at the close of every campaign, or upon any prospect of accommodation; and having been little accustomed to the restraints of discipline, they frequently turned their arms against the country which they had been hired to defend, and desolated it with cruelty not inferior to that of its foreign enemies.

A Body of troops kept constantly on foot, and It occasions regularly trained to military fubordination, would the introhave supplied what was wanting in the feudal con- standing stitution, and have furnished princes with the means of executing enterprifes, to which they were then unequal. Such an establishment, however, was so repugnant to the genius of feudal policy, and fo incompatible with the privileges and pretentions of the nobility, that during several centuries no monarch was either fo bold, or fo powerful, as to venture on any step towards introducing it. At last, Charles VII. availing himself of the reputation which he had acquired by his fucceffes against the English, and taking advantage of the impressions of terror which fuch a formidable enemy had left upon the minds of his fubjects, executed that which his predeceffors durft not attempt. Under pretence of having always ready a force sufficient to defend

SECT. defend the kingdom against any sudden invasion of the English, he, at the time when he disbanded A.D. 1445. his other troops, retained under arms a body of nine thousand cavalry, and of fixteen thousand infantry. He appropriated funds for the regular payment of these; he stationed them in different places of the kingdom, according to his pleafure; and appointed the officers who commanded and disciplined them. The prime nobility courted this fervice, in which they were taught to depend on their fovereign, to execute his orders, and to look up to him as the judge and rewarder of their merit. The feudal militia, composed of the vasfals whom the nobles could call out to follow their standard, as it was in no degree comparable to a body of foldiers regularly trained to war, funk gradually in reputation. The strength of an army was no longer estimated folely by the number of cavalry which ferved in it. From the time that gunpowder was invented, and the use of cannon in the field became general, horsemen cased in complete armour lost all the advantages which gave them the pre-eminence over other foldiers. The helmet, the shield, and the breast-plate, which refifted the arrow or the ipear, no longer afforded them fecurity against these new instruments of destruction. The service of infantry rose again into esteem, and victories were gained, and conquests made, chiefly by their efforts. The nobles and their military tenants, though fometimes fummoned to the field, according to ancient form, were confidered as an incumbrance upon the troops with

with which they acted; and were viewed with contempt by foldiers accustomed to the vigorous and steady operations of regular service.



Thus the regulations of Charles the Seventh, The effects of this. by establishing the first standing army known in Europe, occasioned an important revolution in its affairs and policy. By taking from the nobles the fole direction of the national military force, which had raifed them to fuch high authority and importance, a deep wound was given to the feudal aristocracy, in that part where its power seemed to be most complete.

France, by forming this body of regular troops, at a time when there was hardly a fquadron or company kept in constant pay in any other part of Europe, acquired fuch advantages over its neighbours, either in attack or defence, that felf-prefervation made it necessary for them to imitate its example. Mercenary troops were introduced into all the confiderable kingdoms on the continent. They gradually became the only military force that was employed or trufted. It has long been the chief object of policy to increase and to support them. It has long been the great aim of princes and ministers to discredit and to annihilate all other means of national activity or defence.

As the Kings of France got the start of other The Mopowers in establishing a military force in their do-narchs of France enminions, which enabled them to carry on foreign couraged VOL. I. operations their re-

regative.

SECT.

operations with more vigour, and to greater extent, fo they were the first who effectually broke the feudal aristocracy, and humbled the great vasfals of the crown, who by their exorbitant power had long circumfcribed the royal prerogative within very narrow limits, and had rendered all the efforts of the monarchs of Europe inconfiderable. Many things concurred to undermine, gradually, the power of the feudal ariftocracy in France. wealth and property of the nobility were greatly impaired during the long wars which the kingdom was obliged to maintain with the English. The extraordinary zeal with which they exerted themfelves in defence of their country against its ancient enemies, exhaufted entirely the fortunes of fome great families. As almost every province in the kingdom was, in its turn, the feat of war, the lands of others were exposed to the depredations of the enemy, were ravaged by the mercenary troops which their fovereigns hired occasionally, but could not pay, or were defolated with rage ftill more destructive by the peasants, in different infurrections. At the same time, the necessities of government having forced their kings upon the desperate expedient of making great and sudden alterations in the current coin of the kingdom, the fines, quit-rents, and other payments fixed by ancient custom, sunk much in value, and the revenues of a fief were reduced far below the fum which it had once yielded. During their contests with the English, in which a generous nobility courted every station where danger appeared, or honour could be gained,

gained, many families of note became extinct, and sect. their fiefs were re-united to the crown. Other fiefs, in a long course of years, fell to female heirs, and were divided among them; were diminished by profuse donations to the church, or were broken and fplit by the fuccession of remote collateral heirs'.

ENCOURAGED by these manifest symptoms of The prodecline in that body which he wished to depress, royal pow-Charles VII. during the first interval of peace with er under Charles England, made feveral efforts towards establishing the regal prerogative on the ruins of the ariftocracy. But his obligations to the nobles were fo many, as well as recent, and their fervices in recovering the kingdom fo splendid, as rendered it necessary for him to proceed with moderation and caution. Such, however was the authority which the crown had acquired by the progress of its arms against the English, and so much was the power of the nobility diminished, that, without any opposition he soon made innovations of great consequence in the constitution. He not only established that formidable body of regular troops, which has been mentioned, but he was the first monarch of France who, by his royal edict, without the concurrence of the States-general of the king- A.D. 144c. dom, levied an extraordinary fubfidy on his people. He prevailed likewise with his subjects, to render feveral taxes perpetual, which had formerly been imposed occasionally, and exacted during a short

s Boulainvilliers Histoire de Gouvernement de France, Lettre xii.

SECT. II. time. By means of all these innovations, he acquired such an increase of power, and extended his prerogative so far beyond its ancient limits, that, from being the most dependent prince who had ever sat upon the throne of France, he came to possess, during the latter years of his reign, a degree of authority which none of his predecessors had enjoyed for several ages.

Under Louis XI.

THAT plan of humbling the nobility which Charles began to execute, his fon Louis XI. carried on with a bolder spirit, and with greater success. Louis was formed by nature to be a tyrant; and at whatever period he had been called to afcend the throne, his reign must have abounded with schemes to oppress his people, and to render his own power absolute. Subtle, unfeeling, cruel; a stranger to every principle of integrity, and regardless of decency, he scorned all the restraints which a sense of honour, or the defire of fame, impose even upon ambitious men. Sagacious, at the fame time, to difcern what he deemed his true interest, and influenced by that alone, he was capable of purfuing it with a persevering industry, and of adhering to it with a systematic spirit, from which no object could divert, and no danger could deter him.

His meafures for humbling the nobility;

The maxims of his administration were as profound as they were fatal to the privileges of the nobility. He filled all the departments of govern-

^t Histoire de France par Velly & Villaret, tom. xv. 331, &c. 389. tom. xvi. 324. Variations de la Monarchie Françoise, tom. iii. 162

ment with new men, and often with persons whom SECT. he called from the lowest as well as most despised functions in life, and raifed at pleasure to stations of great power or trust. These were his only confidents, whom he confulted in forming his plans, and to whom he committed the execution of them: While the nobles, accustomed to be the companions, the favourites, and the ministers of their fovereigns, were treated with fuch studied and mortifying neglect, that if they would not fubmit to follow a court in which they appeared without any shadow of their ancient power, they were obliged to retire to their castles, where they remained unemployed and forgotten. Not fatisfied with having rendered the nobles of less confideration, by taking out of their hands the fole direction of affairs, Louis added infult to neglect; and by violating their most valuable privileges, endeavoured to degrade the order, and to reduce the members of it to the same level with other subjects. Persons of the highest rank among them, if so bold as to oppose his schemes, or so unfortunate as to awaken the jealoufy of his capricious temper, were perfecuted with rigour, from which all who belonged to the order of nobility had hitherto been exempt; they were tried by judges who had no right to take cognizance of their actions; and were subjected to torture, or condemned to an ignominious death, without regard to their birth or condition. The people, accustomed to fee the blood of the most illustrious personages shed by the hands of the common executioner, to I 3 behold

SECT.

behold them shut up in dungeons, and carried about in cages of iron, began to view the nobility with less reverence than formerly, and looked up with terror to the royal authority, which seemed to have humbled or annihilated every other power in the kingdom.

and of dividing them.

Ar the fame time, Louis, being afraid that oppression might rouse the nobles, whom the rigour of his government had intimidated, or that felfpreservation might at last teach them to unite, dexterously scattered among them the seeds of discord; and industriously fomented those ancient animofities between the great families, which the spirit of jealousy and emulation, natural to the feudal government, had originally kindled and ftill kept alive. To accomplish this, all the arts of intrigue, all the mysteries and refinements of his fraudulent policy were employed, and with fuch fuccess, that at a juncture which required the most strenuous efforts, as well as the most perfect union, the nobles never acted, except during one short fally of refentment at the beginning of his reign, either with vigour or in concert.

He adds to the number of standing forces. As he ftripped the nobility of their privileges, he added to the power and prerogative of the crown. In order to have at command fuch a body of foldiers as might be fufficient to crush any force that his ditaffected subjects could draw together, he not only kept on foot the regular troops which his father had raised, but, besides augmenting their

number confiderably, he took into his pay fix thousand Swifs, at that time the best disciplined and most formidable infantry in Europe". From the jealousy natural to tyrants, he confided in these foreign mercenaries, as the most devoted instruments of oppression, and the most faithful guardians of the power which he had usurped. That they might be ready to act on the shortest warning, he, during the latter years of his reign, kept a confiderable body of them encamped in one place".

GREAT funds were requisite, not only to defray He augthe expence of this additional establishment, but revenues of to supply the sums employed in the various enterprifes which the reftless activity of his genius prompted him to undertake. But the prerogative that his father had affumed, of levying taxes without the concurrence of the states-general, which he was careful not only to retain but to extend, enabled him to provide in some measure for the increasing charges of government.

What his prerogative, enlarged as it was, could His address not furnish, his address procured. He was the first in managing the asmonarch in Europe who discovered the method of fembly of managing those great affemblies, in which the feudal policy had vested the power of granting fubfidies and of imposing taxes. He first taught other princes the fatal art of beginning their attack on public liberty, by corrupting the fource from which it should flow. By exerting all his

u Mem. de Comines, tom. i. 367. Dan. Hist. de la Milice w Mem. de Com. tom. i. 381. Françoise, tom. i. 182.

SECT. power and address in influencing the election of representatives, by bribing or overawing the members, and by various changes which he artfully made in the form of their deliberations, Louis acquired such entire direction of these assemblies. that, from being the vigilant guardians of the privileges and property of the people, he rendered them tamely subservient towards promoting the most odious measures of his reign*. As no power remained to fet bounds to his exactions, he not only continued all the taxes imposed by his father, but made great additions to them, which amounted to a fum that appeared aftonishing to his contemporaries y.*

Heenlarges the bounds of the French monarchy.

Nor was it the power alone or wealth of the crown that Louis increased; he extended its territories by acquisitions of various kinds. He got possession of Rousillon by purchase; Provence was conveyed to him by the will of Charles de Anjou; and upon the death of Charles the Bold, he seized with a strong hand Burgundy and Artois, which had belonged to that prince. Thus, during the course of a single reign, France was formed into one compact kingdom, and the steady unrelenting policy of Louis XI. not only jubdued the haughty

- Mem. de Comin. tom. i. 136. Chro. Scandal. ibid. tom. y Mem. de Com. tom. i. 334. ii. p. 71.
- * Charles VII. levied taxes to the amount of 1,800,000 francs; Louis XI. raised 4,700,000. The former had in pay 9000 cavalry and 16,000 infantry. The latter augmented the cavalry to 15,000, and the infantry to 25,000. Mem. de Comines, i. 384.

fpirit of the feudal nobles, but established a species of government, scarcely less absolute, or less terrible than eastern despotism.



Bur fatal as his administration was to the liber- By all these ties of his subjects, the authority which he acquired, the refources of which he became mafter, and his freedom from restraint in concerting his plans as active and well as in executing them, rendered his reign ing. active and enterprifing. Louis negociated in all the courts of Europe; he observed the motions of all his neighbours; he engaged, either as principal, or as an auxiliary, in every great transaction; his resolutions were prompt, his operations vigorous; and upon every emergence he could call forth into action the whole force of his kingdom. From the æra of his reign, the kings of France, no longer fettered and circumfcribed at home by a jealous nobility, have exerted themselves more abroad, have formed more extensive schemes of foreign conquests, and have carried on war with a spirit and vigour long unknown in Europe.

the French government rendered more enterprif-

THE example which Louis fet was too inviting Stepstaken not to be imitated by other princes. Henry VII. as foon as he was feated on the throne of England, formed the plan of enlarging his own prerogative, by breaking the power of the nobility. The circumstances under which he undertook to execute it, were less favourable than those which induced Charles VII. to make the fame attempt; and the spirit with which he conducted it, was very different

towards extending the power of the crown in Englanda



SECT. from that of Louis XI. Charles, by the fuccess of his arms against the English, by the merit of having expelled them out of fo many provinces, had established himself so firmly in the confidence of his people, as encouraged him to make bold encroachments on the ancient constitution. The daring genius of Louis broke through every barrier, and endeavoured to furmount or to remove every obstacle that flood in his way. But Henry held the sceptre by a disputed title; a popular faction was ready every moment to take arms against him; and after long civil wars, during which the nobility had often displayed their power in creating and deposing kings, he felt that the regal authority had been fo much relaxed, and that he entered into poffession of a prerogative fo much abridged, as rendered it necessary to carry on his measures deliberately, and without any violent exertion. He endeavoured to undermine that formidable structure, which he durst not attack by open force. His schemes, though cautious and flow in their operation, were well concerted, and productive in the end of great effects. By his laws, permitting the barons to break the entails of their estates, and expose them to sale; by his regulations to prevent the nobility from keeping in their fervice those numerous bands of retainers, which rendered them formidable and turbulent; by favouring the rifing power of the commons; by encouraging population, agriculture, and commerce; by fecuring to his fubjects, during a long reign, the enjoyment of the bleffings which flow from the arts of peace; by accustoming them to an administration of government, SECT. under which the laws were executed with steadiness and vigour; he made imperceptibly confiderable alterations in the English constitution, and transmitted to his fucceffor authority fo extensive, as rendered him one of the most absolute monarchs in Europe, and capable of the greatest and most vigorous efforts.

In Spain, the union of all its crowns by the and in marriage of Ferdinand and Isabella; the glory that Spans they acquired by the conquest of Granada, which brought the odious dominion of the Moors to a period; the command of the great armies which it had been necessary to keep long on foot, in order to accomplish this; the wisdom and steadiness of their administration; and the address with which they availed themselves of every incident that occurred to humble the nobility, and to extend their own prerogative, conspired in raising these monarchs to fuch eminence and authority, as none of their predecessors had ever enjoyed. Though feveral causes, which shall be explained in another place, prevented their attaining the fame powers with the kings of France and England, and preferved the feudal constitution longer entire in Spain, their great abilities supplied the defects of their prerogative, and improved with fuch dexterity all the advantages which they poffeffed, that Ferdinand carried on his foreign operations, which were very extensive, with extraordinary vigour and effect.

WHILE

SECT.
II.

Brents
happened,
which called the feveral monarchs to exert the new powers which they had acquired.

WHILE these princes were thus enlarging the boundaries of prerogative, and taking such steps towards rendering their kingdom capable of acting with union and force, events occurred, which called them forth to exert the new powers which they had acquired. These engaged them in such a series of enterprises and negociations, that the affairs of all the considerable nations in Europe came to be insensibly interwoven with each other; and a great political system was gradually formed, which grew to be an object of universal attention.

The first of these events was the marriage of the heires of the house of Burgundy.

The first event which merits notice, on account of its influence in producing this change in the state of Europe, was the marriage of the daughter of Charles the Bold, the sole heiress of the house of Burgundy. For some years before her father's death, she had been considered as the apparent successor to his territories, and Charles had made proposals of marrying her to several different princes, with a view of alluring them, by that offer, to savour the schemes which his restless ambition was continually forming.

The importance of this to the state of Europe.

This rendered the alliance with her an object of general attention; and all the advantages of acquiring possession of her territories, the most opulent at that time, and the best cultivated of any on this side of the Alps, were perfectly understood. As soon, then, as the untimely death of Charles opened the succession, the eyes of all the princes in Europe were turned towards Mary,

A.D. 1477, January 5.

and

and they felt themselves deeply interested in the secr. choice which she was about to make of the perfon on whom the would bestow that rich inheritance.

Louis XI. from whose kingdom several of the Views of provinces which she possessed had been dismem- withresbered, and whose dominions stretched along the peet to it. frontier of her territories, had every inducement to court her alliance. He had, likewife, a good title to expect the favourable reception of any reafonable proposition he should make, with respect to the disposal of a princess, who was the vasfal of his crown, and detcended from the royal blood of France. There were only two propositions, however, which he could make with propriety. The one was the marriage of the dauphin, the other that of the count of Angouleme, a prince of the blood, with the heiress of Burgundy. By the former, he would have annexed all her territories to his crown, and have rendered France at once the most respectable monarchy in Europe. But the great disparity of age between the two parties, Mary being twenty, and the dauphin only eight years old; the avowed resolution of the Flemings, not to chuse a master possessed of such power as might enable him to form schemes dangerous to their liberties; together with their dread of falling under the odious and oppressive government of Louis, were obstacles in the way of executing this plan, which it was vain to think of furmounting. By the latter, the accomplishment



of which might have been attained with eafe. Mary having discovered some inclination to a match with the count of Angoulemez, Louis would have prevented the dominions of the house of Burgundy from being conveyed to a rival power, and in return for fuch a fplendid establishment for the count of Angouleme, he must have obtained, or would have extorted from him, concessions highly beneficial to the crown of France. But Louis had been accustomed so long to the intricacies of a crooked and infidious policy, that he could not be fatisfied with what was obvious and fimple; and was fo fond of artifice and refinement, that he came to consider these rather as an ultimate object, than merely as the means of conducting affairs. From this principle, no less than from his unwillingness to aggrandise any of his own fubjects, or from his defire of oppressing the house of Burgundy, which he hated, he neglected the course which a prince less able and artful would have taken, and followed one more fuited to his own genius.

The fingular courfe which he followed. He proposed to render himself, by force of arms, master of those provinces which Mary held of the crown of France, and even to push his conquests into her other territories, while he amused her with insisting continually on the impracticable match with the dauphin. In prosecuting this plan, he

² Mem. de Comines, i. 358.

displayed wonderful talents and industry, and ex- sect. hibited fuch scenes of treachery, falsehood, and cruelty, as are amazing even in the history of Louis XI. Immediately upon the death of Charles, he put his troops in motion, and advanced towards the Netherlands. He corrupted the leading men in the provinces of Burgundy and Artois, and seduced them to defert their fovereign. He got admiffion into some of the frontier towns by bribing the governors; the gates of others were opened to him in consequence of his intrigues with the inhabitants. He negociated with Mary; and, in order to render her odious to her subjects, he betrayed to them her most important secrets. He carried on a private correspondence with the two ministers whom she chiefly trufted, and then communicated the letters which he had received from them to the states of Flanders, who, enraged at their perfidy, brought them immediately to trial, tortured them with extreme cruelty, and, unmoved by the tears and entreaties of their fovereign, who knew and approved of all that the ministers had done, they beheaded them in her presence a.

WHILE Louis, by this conduct, unworthy of The effect a great monarch, was fecuring the possession of this, the Burgundy, Artois, and the towns on the Somme, with the the states of Flanders carried on a negociation heires of Burgundy, with the emperor Frederic III. and concluded a A.D. 1427. treaty of marriage between their fovereign and his

^a Meni. de Comines, liv. v. chap. 15. p. 309, &c.

SECT.

fon Maximilian, archduke of Austria. The illustrious birth of that prince, as well as the high dignity of which he had the prospect, rendered the alliance honourable for Mary, while, from the distance of his hereditary territories, and the scantiness of his revenues, his power was so inconsiderable, as did not excite the jealousy or fear of the Flemings.

The influence of that on the state of Europe.

Thus Louis, by the caprice of his temper, and the excess of his refinements, put the house of Austria in possession of this noble inheritance. By this acquisition, the foundation of the future grandeur of Charles V. was laid; and he became master of those territories, which enabled him to carry on his most formidable and decisive operations against France. Thus, too, the same monarch who first united the interior force of France, and established it on such a sooting as to render it formidable to the rest of Europe, contributed, far contrary to his intention, to raise up a rival power, which, during two centuries, has thwarted the measures, opposed the arms, and checked the progress of his successors.

The next confider - able event was the invafion of Italy by Charles VIII.
A. D. 1494.

The next event of consequence in the fifteenth century, was the expedition of Charles VIII. into Italy. This occasioned revolutions no less memorable; produced alterations, both in the military and political system, which were more immediately perceived; roused the states of Europe to bolder efforts; and blended their affairs and interests

interests more closely together. The mild admi- sccr. nistration of Charles, a weak but generous prince,

The mist admir all.

II.

The most tivesof the spirit and genius of the tivesof the spirit and genius of the spirit and French nation, which the rigid despotism of Louis XI. his father, had depressed, and almost extinguifhed. The ardour for military fervice, natural to the French nobility, returned, and their young monarch was impatient to distinguish his reign by fome splendid enterprise. While he was uncertain towards what quarter he should turn his arms, the folicitations and intrigues of an Italian politician, no leis infamous on account of his crimes, than eminent for his abilities, determined his choice. Ludovico Sforza, having formed the defign of deposing his nephew the duke of Milan, and of placing himself on the ducal throne, was so much afraid of a combination of the Italian powers to oppose this measure, and to support the injured prince, with whom most of them were connected by blood or alliance, that he faw the necessity of fecuring the aid of some able protector. The king of France was the person to whom he applied; and without disclosing his own intentions, he saboured to prevail with him to march into Italy, at the head of a powerful army, in order to feize the crown of Naples, to which Charles had pretentions as heir of the house of Anjou. The right to that kingdom, claimed by the Anjevin family, had been conveyed. to Louis XI. by Charles of Anjou, count of Maine and Provence. But that fagacious monarch. shough he took immediate possession of those Voj. 1. 15. tamitadics

SECT.

territories of which Charles was really mafter, totally difregarded his ideal title to a kingdom, over which another prince reigned in tranquillity; and uniformly declined involving himself in the labyrinth of Italian politics. His son, more adventurous, or more inconsiderate, embarked eagerly in this enterprise; and contemning all the remonstrances of his most experienced counsellors, prepared to carry it on with the utmost vigour.

flis refources for thesenterprite.

THE power which Charles possessed was so great, that he reckoned himself equal to this arduous undertaking. His father had transmitted to him such an ample prerogative, as gave him the entire command of his kingdom. He himself had added confiderably to the extent of his dominions, by his prudent marriage with the heirefs of Bretagne, which rendered him mafter of that province, the last of the great fiefs that remained to be annexed to the crown. He foon affembled forces which he thought fufficient; and so impatient was he to enter on his career as a conqueror, that, facrificing what was real, for what was chimerical, he restored Roufillon to Ferdinand, and gave up part of his father's acquifitions in Artois to Maximilian, with a view of inducing these princes not to molest France, while he was carrying on his operations in Italy.

H's preparations for it.

Bur fo different were the efforts of the States of Europe in the fifteenth century, from those which we shall behold in the course of this history,

that

that the army with which Charles undertook this SECT. great enterprife, did not exceed twenty thousand inen. The train of artillery, however, the ammunition, and warlike ftores of every kind provided for its use, were so confiderable, as to bear some refemblance to the immense apparatus of modern warb.

WHEN the French entered Italy, they met with Its success. nothing able to refift them. The Italian powers having remained, during a long period, undifturbed by the invalion of any foreign enemy, had formed a fyslem with respect to their essairs, both in peace and war, peculiar to themtelves. In order to adjust the interests, and balance the power of the different States into which Italy was divided, they were engaged in perpetual and endless negociations with each other, which they conducted with all the fubtlety of a refining and deceitful policy. Their contests in the field, when they had recourse to arms, were decided in mock battles. by innocent and bloodless victories. Upon the first appearance of the danger which now impended, they had recourse to the arts which they had studied, and employed their utmost skill in intrigue in order to avert it. But this proving ineffectual, their bands of effeminate mercenaries, the only military force that remained in the country, being fit only for the parade of fervice, were terrified at the aspect of real war, and shrunk at its

b Mezeray Hist. tom. ii. 777.



approach. The impetuofity of the French valour appeared to them irrefiftible. Florence, Pifa, and Rome, opened their gates as the French army advanced. The prospect of this dreadful invasion flruck one king of Naples with fuch panic terror, that he died (if we may believe historians) of the fright. Another abdicated his throne from the same pufillanimous spirit. A third fled out of his dominions, as foon as the enemy appeared on the Neapolitan frontiers. Charles, after marching thither from the bottom of the Alps, with as much rapidity, and almost as little opposition, as if he had been on a progress through his own dominions, took quiet possession of the throne of Naples, and intimidated or gave law to every power in Italy.

Its effects, perticularly in giving the fortue for the forest and a limit age of power.

Such was the conclusion of an expedition, that must be considered as the first great exertion of those new powers which the princes of Europe had acquired, and now began to exercise. Its effects were no less considerable, than its success had been aftonishing. The Italians, unable to resist the impression of the enemy who broke in upon them, permitted him to hold on his course undisturbed. They quickly perceived that no single power, which they could rouse to action, was an equal match for a monarch who ruled over such extensive territories, and was at the head of such a martial people; but that a consederacy might accomplish what the separate mem-

bers of it durst not attempt. To this expedient, sucr. the only one that remained to deliver or to preferve them from the yoke, they had recourse. While Charles inconfiderately wasted his time at Naples in festivals and triumphs on account of his past successes, or was fondly dreaming of future conquests in the East, to the empire of which he now aspired, they formed against him a powerful combination of almost all the Italian state. fupported by the emperor Maximilian, and Ferdinand king of Aragon. The union of lo many powers, who fulpended or forgot all their particular animofities, that they might act in concert against an enemy who had become formidable to them all, awakened Charles from his thoughtless security. He saw now no projuct of safety but in returning to France. An army of thirty thousand men, assembled by the allies, was ready to obstruct his march; and though the French, with a daring courage, which more than countervailed their inferiority in number, broke through that great body, and gained a victory, which opened to their monarch a rice passing into his own territories, he was stripped of all his conquests in Italy in as short a time as it had taken to acquire them; and the political fifteen in that country refumed the time appearance as before his

THE fudden and decisive effect of this confederays, feems to have inflrusted the princes and K 3

SECT.

II.

This becomes the great object of policy, first in Italy and then in Europe.

statesmen of Italy as much as the irruption of the French had disconcerted and alarmed them. They had extended, on this occasion, to the affairs of Europe, the maxims of that political science which had hitherto been applied only to regulate the operations of the petty states in their own country. They had discovered the method of preventing any monarch from rifing to fuch a degree of power, as was inconfiftent with the general liberty; and had manifeled the importance of attending to that great fecret in modern policy, the prefervation of a proper distribution of power among all the members of the fritem into which the flates of Europe are formed. During all the wars of which Italy from that time was the theatre, and amidst the hostile operations which the imprudence of Louis XII. and the ambition of Ferdinand of Aragon, carried on in that country, with little interruption, from the close of the fifteenth century, to that period at which the subsequent history commences, the maintaining a proper balance of power between the contending parties, became the great object of attention to the flatefmen of Italy. Nor was the idea confined to them. Self-prefervation taught other powers to adopt it. It grew to be fashionable and universal. From this æra we can trace the progress of that intercourse between nations, which has linked the powers of Europe fo closely together; and can difcern the operations of that provident policy, which, during peace, guards against remote and contingent dangers; and, in war, has prevented rapid and destructive con- SECT. quests.

This was not the only effect of the operations The wars in Italy rander which the great powers of Europe carried on in floud ng ar-Italy. They contributed to render general fuch a mies genechange, as the French had begun to make in the state of their troops; and obliged all the princes, who appeared on this new theatre of action, to put the military force of their kingdoms on an establishment similar to that of France. When the feat of war came to be remote from the countries which maintained the contest, the service of the feudal vaffals ceafed to be of any use; and the necessity of employing soldiers regularly trained to arms, and kept in conflant pay, came at once to be evident. When Charles VIII. marched into Italy, his cavalry was entirely composed of those companies of Gendarmes, embodied by Charles VII. and continued by Louis XI.; his infantry confifted partly of Swifs, hired of the Cantons, and partly of Gafcons, armed and disciplined after the Swifs model. To these Louis XII. added a body of Germans, well known in the wars of Italy by the name of the Black Bands. But neither of these monarchs made any account of the feudal militia, or ever had recourse to that military force, which they might have commanded, in virtue of the ancient institutions in their kingdom. Maximilian and Ferdinand, as foon as they began to act in Italy, employed fimilar instru-

SECT. instruments, and trusted the execution of their plans entirely to mercenary troops.

Teach the Luropeins the u c. ior in. Hanc of larantry in war.

This innovation in the military fystem was quickly followed by another, which the custom of employing Soil's in the Italian wars was the occafion of introducing. The arms and discipline of the Swifs were distrept from those of other European nations. During their long and violent struggles in defence of their liberties against the house of Austria, whose armies, like those of other confiderable princes, confifted chiefly of heavyarmed cavalry, the Swils found that their poverty, and the finall number of gentlemen refiding in their country, at that time barren and ill cultivated, put it out of their power to bring into the field any body of horse capable of facing the enemy. Necessity compelled them to place all their confidence in infantry; and in order to render it capable of withstanding the shock of cavalry, they gave the foldiers breaft-plates and helmets as defensive armour; together with long spears, halberts, and heavy fwords, as weapons of offence. They formed them into large battalions, ranged in deep and close array, so that they could present on every side a formidable front to the enemy. The men at arms could make no impression on the solid strength of fuch a body. It repulled the Austrians in all their attempts to conquer Swifferland. It broke the Burgundian Gendarmerie, which was fcarcely

inferior

E Machiavel's Art of War, b. ii. chap. ii. p. 451.

inferior to that of France, either in number or reputation; and when first called to act in Italy, it bore down, by its irreliable force, every enemy that attempted to oppole it. Thele repeated proofs of the decinive effect of infartry, exhibited on fuch conforcuous occations, restored that service to reputation, and gradually re-established the opinion, which had been long exploded, of its fuperior importance in the operations of war. But the glory which the Swifs had acquired, having inforced them with fuch high ideas of their own prowels and confequence as frequently rendered them mutinous and infolent, the princes who emploved them became weary of depending on the caprice of foreign mercenaries, and began to turn their attention towards the improvement of their national infantry.

THE German powers having the command of National men, whom nature has endowed with that steady established courage and perfevering strength which forms them in Gerto be foldiers, ioon modelled their troops in fuch a manner, that they yiel with the Swifs both in difcipline and valour.

THE French monarchs, though more flowly, in France, and with greater difficulty, accustomed the inapetuous spirit of their people to sub rdinution and discipline; and were at such pains to render their national infantry respectable, that as early as the reign of Louis XII. feveral gentlemen of high rank had to far abandoned their ancient ideas,

138

SECT. ideas, as to condescend to enter into that service.

In Spain.

THE Spaniards, whose situation made it difficult to employ any other than their national troops in the fouthern parts of Italy, which was the chief fcene of their operations in that country, not only adopted the Swifs discipline, but improved upon it, by mingling a proper number of foldiers, armed with heavy mulkets, in their battalions; and thus formed that famous body of infantry, which, during a century and a half, was the admiration and terror of all Europe. The Italian states gradually diminished the number of their cavalry, and, in imitation of their more powerful neighbours, brought the strength of their armies to consist in foot foldiers. From this period the nations of Europe have carried on war with forces more adapted to every species of service, more capable of acting in every country, and better fitted both for making conquests, and for preserving them.

The Italian wars occafion an increase of the public revenues in Europe. As their efforts in Italy led the people of Europe to these improvements in the art of war, they gave them likewise the first idea of the expence with which it is accompanied when extensive or of long continuance, and accustomed every nation to the burden of such impositions as are necessary for supporting it. While the seudal policy substituted in sull vigour, while armies were composed of military vassals called forth to attack some

d Brantome, tom. x. p. 18. Mem. de Fleuranges, 143. neigh-

neighbouring power, and to perform, in a short sect. campaign, the fervices which they owed to their fovereign, the expence of war was extremely moderate. A small subsidy enabled a prince to begin and to finish his greatest military operations. But when Italy became the theatre on which the powers of Europe contended for superiority, the preparations requifite for fuch a diffant expedition, the pay of armies kept conftantly on foot, their subsistence in a foreign country, the fieges to be undertaken, and the towns to be defended, fwelled the charges of war immenfely, and, by creating demands unknown in less active times, multiplied taxes in every kingdom. The progress of ambition, however, was fo rapid, and princes extended their operations fo fast, that it was impossible at first to establish funds proportional to the increase of expence which there occasioned. When Charles VIII. invaded Naples, the fums requifite for carrying on that enterprise so far exceeded those which France had been accustomed to contribute for the support of government, that before he reached the frontiers of Italy, his treasury was exhausted, and the domestic resources, of which his extensive prerogative gave him the command, were at an end. As he durst not venture to lay any new imposition on his people, oppressed already with the weight of unufual burdens; the only expedient that remained was, to borrow of the Genoesc as much money as might enable him to continue his march. But he could not obtain a fufficient fum, without confenting to pay annually the exorbitant

SECT. bitant interest of forty-two livres for every hundred that he received. We may observe the same differenciation between the efforts and revenues of other princes, his contemporaries. From this period, taxes went on increasing; and during the reign of Charles V. fuch fums were levied in every flate, as would have appeared enormous at the close of the fifteenth century, and gradually prepared the way for the still more exorbitant exactions of modern times.

The league of Cambray another impertant occurrence.

THE last transaction, previous to the reign of Charles V. that merits attention on account of its influence upon the ftate of Europe, is the league of Cambray. To humble the republic of Venice, and to divide its territorics, was the object of all the powers who united in this confederacy. The civil constitution of Venice, established on a firm basis, had suffered no considerable alteration for feveral centuries; during which, the fenate conducted its affairs by maxims of policy no less prudent than vigorous, and adhered to these with an uniform confistent spirit, which gave that commonwealth great advantage over other states, whose views and measures changed as often as the form of their government, or the persons who administered it. By these unintermitted exertions of wisdom and valour, the Venetians enlarged the dominions of their commonwealth, until it became the most considerable power in Italy; while their extensive commerce, the useful and curious manu-

e Mem. de Comines, lib. vii. c. 5. p. 440.

factures

factures which they carried on, together with the src T. large share which they had acquired of the lucrative commerce with the East, rendered Venice the most opulent flate in Europe.

THE power of the Venetians was the object of The minterror to their Italian neighbours. Their wealth was viewed with envy by the greatest monarchs, who could not vie with many of their private citizens in the magnificence of their buildings, in the richness of their dress and furniture, or in filendour and elegance of living 1. Julius II. whose ambition was superior, and his abilities equal, to those of any pontiff who ever sat on the papar throne, conceived the idea of this league against the Venetians, and endeavoured, by applying to thole paffions which I have mentioned, to perfuade other princes to join in it. By working upon the fearof the Italian powers, and upon the avarice of feveral monarchs beyond the Alps, he induced them, in concurrence with other causes, which it is not my province to explain, to form one of the most powerful confederacies that Surone had ever beheld, against those haughty republicans.

THE emperor, the king of France, the king of the ... Aragon, the pope, were principals in the league in ... of Cambray, to which admost all the princes or there. Italy acceded, the least considerable of them hoping for some share in the 'poils of a state, which the. deemed to be now devoted to defirmation. The

f Heliani oratio apud Goldaflum in polit. Imperies, v. o o. Venetians

SECT. Venetians might have diverted this storm, or have broken its force; but with a prefumptuous rashnefs, to which there is nothing fimilar in the course of their history, they waited its approach. The impetuous valour of the French rendered ineffectual all their precautions for the fafety of the republic; and the fatal battle of Ghiarraddada entirely ruined the army on which they relied for defence. Julius feized all the towns which they held in the ecclefiaffical territories. Ferdinand re-annexed the towns of which they had got possession on the coast of Calabria, to his Neapolitan dominions. Maximilian, at the head of a powerful army, advanced towards Venice on the one fide. The French pushed their conquests on the other. The Venetians, surrounded by fo many enemies, and left without one ally, funk from the height of prefumption to the depths of despair; abandoned all their territories on the continent; and thut themselves up in their capital, as their last refuge, and the only place which they hoped to preferve.

Division arifes among them.

This rapid fuccess, however, proved fatal to the confederacy. The members of it, whose union continued while they were engaged in feizing their prey, began to feel their ancient jealousies and animosities revive, as soon as they had a prospect of dividing it. When the Venetians observed these fymptoms of diffrust and alienation, a ray of hope broke in upon them; the spirit natural to their councils returned; they refumed fuch wifdom and firmness, as made some atonement for their former

imprudence and dejection; they recovered part of the territory which they had loft; they appeared the pope and Ferdinand by well-timed concessions in their favour; and at length diffolved the confederacy, which had brought their commonwealth to the brink of ruin.

SECT.

Julius, elated with beholding the effects of a New obleague which he himfelt had planned, and ima- jects of their policy and gining that nothing was too arduous for him to ambition. undertake, conceived the idea of expelling every foreign power out of Italy, and bent all the force of his mind towards executing a scheme so well fuited to his enterprising genius. He directed his first attack against the French, who, on many accounts, were more odious to the Italians, than any of the foreigners who had acquired dominion in their country. By his activity and address, he prevailed on most of the powers, who had joined in the league of Cambray, to turn their arms against the king of France, their former ally; and engaged Henry VIII. who had lately ascended the throne of England, to favour their operations by invading France. Louis XII. refisted all the efforts of this formidable and unexpected confederacy with undaunted fortitude. Hostilities were carried on. during feveral campaigns, in Italy, on the frontiers of Spain, and in Picardy, with alternate fuccess. Exhausted, at length, by the variety as well as extent of his operations; unable to withstand a confederacy which brought against him superior force, conducted with wildom and acting with perfe-



verance; Louis found it necessary to conclude feparate treaties of peace with his enemies; and the war terminated with the loss of every thing which the French had acquired in Italy, except the castle of Milan, and a few inconsiderable towns in that dutchy.

By this the intercourse among the European nations increases.

The various negociations carried on during this bufy period, and the different combinations formed among powers hitherto little connected with each other, greatly increased that intercourse among the nations of Europe, which I have mentioned as one effect of the events in the fifteenth century; while the greatness of the objects at which different nations aimed, the distant expeditions which they undertook, as well as the length and obstinacy of the contest in which they engaged, obliged them to exert themselves with a vigour and perseverance unknown in the preceding ages.

They are prepared for the transactions of the fix-teenth century.

Those active scenes which the following history will exhibit, as well as the variety and importance of those transactions which distinguish the period to which it extends, are not to be ascribed solely to the ambition, to the abilities, or to the rival-ship of Charles V. and of Francis I. The king-doms of Europe had arrived at such a degree of improvement in the internal administration of government, and princes had acquired such command of the national force which was to be exerted in foreign wars, that they were in a condition to enlarge the sphere of their operations,

to multiply their claims and pretentions, and to increase the vigour of their efforts. Accordingly the fixteenth century opened with the certain prospect of its abounding in great and interesting events.

Vol. I.

[146]

A

VIEW

OF THE

PROGRESS OF SOCIETY

IN

EUROPE,

FROM THE

SUBVERSION OF THE ROMAN EMPIRE,

TO THE

BEGINNING OF THE SIXTEENTH CENTURY.

SECTION III.

View of the political Constitution of the principal States in Europe, at the Commencement of the Sixteenth Century.

A confiderable variety in the confideration of the different nations of Europe

HAVING thus enumerated the principal causes and events, the influence of which was selt in every part of Europe, and contributed either to improve internal order and police in its various states, or to enlarge the sphere of their activity, by giving them more entire command of the force with which foreign operations are carried on; nothing farther seems requisite for preparing my readers to enter, with full information, upon perusing

perusing the History of Charles V., but to give a view of the political constitution and form of civil government in each of the nations which acted any confiderable part during that period. For as the institutions and events which I have endeavoured to illustrate, formed the people of Europe to refemble each other, and conducted them from barbarism to refinement, in the same path, and by nearly equal steps; there were other circumstances which occasioned a difference in their political establishments, and gave rife to those peculiar modes of government, which have produced fuch variety in the character and genius of nations.



IT is no less necessary to become acquainted with Necessary the latter, than to have contemplated the former. the flate of Without a diffinct knowledge of the peculiar form each when and genius of civil government in each state, a began his great part of its transactions must appear altogether mysterious and inexplicable. The historians of particular countries, as they feldom extended their views farther than to the amusement or instruction of their fellow-citizens, by whom they might prefume that all their domestic customs and institutions were perfectly understood, have often neglected to descend into such details with respect to these, as are sufficient to convey to foreigners full light and information concerning the occurrences which they relate. But a history, which comprehends the transactions of so many different countries, would be extremely imperfect, without a pre-

Charles V.

148

SECT.

vious furvey of the conflitution and political state of each. It is from his knowledge of these, that the reader must draw those principles, which will enable him to judge with discernment, and to decide with certainty concerning the conduct of nations.

A MINUTE detail, however, of the peculiar forms and regulations in every country, would lead to deductions of immeasurable length. To sketch out the great lines which distinguish and characterist each government, is all that the nature of my prefent work will admit of, and all that is necessary to illustrate the events which it records.

The flate of Iraly.

Ar the opening of the fixteenth century, the political aspect of Italy was extremely different from that of any other part of Europe. Instead of those extensive monarchies, which occupied the rest of the continent, that delightful country was parcelled out among many small states, each of which postessed lovereign and independent jurisdiction. The only monarchy in Italy was that of Naples. The dominion of the popes was of a peculiar species, to which there is nothing similar either in ancient or modern times. In Venice, Florence, and Genoa, a republican form of government was established. Milan was subject to sovereigns, who had assumed no higher title than that of dukes.

The papel sign ty the height at in Lumpe.

THE Pope was the first of these powers in dignity, and not the least considerable by the extent of his territories.

territories. In the primitive church, the jurisdiction of bishops was equal and co-ordinate. They derived, perhaps, fome degree of confideration from the dignity of the fee in which they prefided. They poffeffed, however, no real authority or pre-eminence, but what they acquired by superior abilities, or fuperior fanctity. As Rome had to long been origin and the feat of empire, and the capital of the world, its progress of the papal bishops were on that account entitled to respect; power, they received it; but during feveral ages they received, and even claimed nothing more. From these humble beginnings, they advanced with such adventurous and well-directed ambition, that they established a spiritual dominion over the minds and fentiments of men, to which all Europe submitted with implicit obedience. Their claim of universal jurisdiction, as heads of the church; and their pretenfions to infallibility in their decisions, as fucceffors of St. Peter, are as chimerical, as they are repugnant to the genius of the Christian religion. But on these foundations, the superstition and credulity of mankind enabled them to erect an amazing tuperstructure. In all ecclesiastical controversies, their decisions were received as the infallible oracles of truth. Nor was the plenitude of their power confined folely to what was spiritual; they dethroned monarchs; disposed of crowns; absolved subjects from the obedience due to heir fovereigns; and laid kingdoms under interdicts. There was not a state in Europe which had not been difquieted by



they had not shaken; nor a prince, who did not tremble at their power.

The territories of the popes inadequate to support their spiritual jurifdiction.

Nothing was wanting to render this empire absolute, and to establish it on the ruins of all civil authority, but that the popes should have possessed fuch a degree of temporal power, as was fufficient to second and enforce their spiritual decrees. Happily for mankind, at the time when their spiritual jurisdiction was most extensive, and most revered, their fecular dominion was extremely limited. They were powerful pontiffs, formidable at a distance; but they were petty princes, without any confiderable domestic force. They had early endeavoured, indeed, to acquire territory by arts similar to those which they had employed in extending their spiritual jurisdiction. Under pretence of a donation from Constantine, and of another from Charlemagne or his father Pepin, they attempted to take poffeffion of fome towns adjacent to Rome. But these donations were fictitious, and availed them little. The benefactions, for which they were indebted to the credulity of the Norman adventurers, who conquered Naples, and to the superstition of the countess Matilda, were real, and added ample domains to the Holy See.

Their auzaority in their own territorics extremely 2imited. But the power of the popes did not increase in proportion to the extent of territory which they had acquired. In the dominions annexed to the Holy See, as well as in those subject to other princes in Italy,

Italy, the fovereign of a flate was far from having the command of the force which it contained. During the turbulence and confusion of the middle ages, the powerful nobility, or leaders of popular factions in Italy, had feized the government of different towns; and after strengthening their fortifications, and taking a body of mercenaries into pay, they aspired at independence. The territory which the church had gained was filled with petty lords of this kind, who left the Pope hardly the shadow of domestic authority.

As these usurpations almost annihilated the It was cirpapal power in the greater part of the towns fub- cumfcribed ject to the church, the Roman barons frequently bitionof the disputed the authority of the popes, even in Rome rons, itself. In the twelfth century, an opinion began to be propagated, " That as the function of ecclefiaftics was purely spiritual, they ought to possess no property, and to claim no temporal jurisdiction; but, according to the laudable example of their predeceffors in the primitive church, should subsist wholly upon their tithes, or upon the voluntary chantons of the people a." This doctrine being addreffed to men, who had beheld the fcandalous manner in which the avarice and ambition of the clergy had prompted them to contend for wealth, and to exercise power, they liftened to it with fond attention. The Roman barons, who had felt most sensibly

² Otto Frifigensis de Gistis Frider. Imp. lib. ii. cap. 10. 1112 L 4

SECT. III. A.D. 1148.

the rigour of ecclesiastical oppression, adopted these fentiments with such ardour that they set themselves instantly to shake off the yoke. They endeavoured to restore some image of their ancient liberty by reviving the inflitution of the Roman fenate, in which they vested supreme authority; committing the executive power fometimes to one chief fenator, fometimes to two, and fometimes to a magistrate dignified with the name of The Patrician. The popes exerted themselves with vigour, in order to check this dangerous encroachment on their jurisdiction. One of them, finding all his endeavours ineffectual, was fo much mortified, that extreme grief cut short his days. Another, having ventured to attack the fenators at the head of fome armed men, was mortally wounded in the fray b. During a confiderable period, the power of the popes, before which the greatest monarchs in Europe trembled, was circumscribed within fuch narrow limits in their own capital, that they durft hardly exert any act of authority, without the permission and concurrence of the fenate.

and by the turbulence of the Rofrom A. D. 1308, to A.D.1377

ENCROACHMENTS were made upon the papal fovereignty, not only by the usurpations of the man people Roman nobility, but by the mutinous spirit of the people. During feventy years of the four-

teenth

b Otto Frifing. Chron. lib. vii. cap. 27. 31. Id. de Geft. Frid. lib. i. c. 27. Muratori Annali d'Italia, vol. ix. 398. 404.

teenth century, the popes fixed their refidence SECT. in Avignon. The inhabitants of Rome, accuftomed to confider themselves as the descendants of the people who had conquered the world, and had given laws to it, were too high-spirited to submit with patience to the delegated authority of those persons to whom the popes committed the government of the city. On many occafions, they oppoied the execution of the papal mandates, and on the flightest appearance of innovation or oppression, they were ready to take arms in defence of their own immunities. Towards the middle of the fourteenth century, being instigated by Nicolas Rienzo, a man of low birth and a feditious spirit, but of popular eloquence, and an enterpriting ambition, they drove all the nobility out of the city, established a democratical form of government, elected Rienzo tribune of the people, and invested him with extensive authority. But though the frantic proceedings of the tribune foon overturned this new fyrlem; though the government of Rome was reinstated in its ancient form; vet every fresh attack contributed to weaken the papal jurisdiction: and the turbulence of the people concurred with the fpirit of independence among the nobility, in circumscribing it more and more c. Gregory VII.

c Histoire Florentine de Giov. Villani, lib. xii. c. 8). 104. ap. Murat. Script. Rerum Ital. vol. xiii. Vita de Cola di Rienzo, ap. Murat. Antiq. Ital. vol. iii. p. 399, &c. Hist. de Nic. Rienzy, par M. de Boiipreiux, p. 91, &c.



and other domineering pontiffs, accomplished those great things which rendered them so formidable to the emperors with whom they contended, not by the force of their arms, or by the extent of their power, but by the dread of their spiritual cenfures, and by the effect of their intrigues, which excited rivals, and called forth enemies against every prince whom they wished to depress or to destroy.

Alexander VI. and Julius II. render the popes confiderable princes.

Many attempts were made by the popes, not only to humble those usurpers, who lorded it over the cities in the ecclefiastical state, but to break the turbulent spirit of the Roman people. These were long unsucceisful. But at last Alexander VI. with a policy no less artful than flagitious, subdued or extirpated most of the great Roman barons, and rendered the popes masters of their own dominions. The enterprising ambition of Julius II. added conquests of no inconsiderable value to the patrimony of St. Peter. Thus the popes, by degrees, became powerful temporal princes. Their territories, in the age of Charles V. were of greater extent than at present; their country seems to have been better cultivated, as well as more populous; and as they drew large contributions from every part of Europe, their revenues far exceeded those of the neighbouring powers, and rendered them capable of more fudden and vigorous efforts.

Defects in of ecclefi-

aftical do-

THE genius of the papal government, however, was better adapted to the exercise of spiritual dominion, than of temporal power. With respect to the nature the former, all its maxims were fleady and invariable. Every new pontiff adopted the plan of his minion. predeceffor. By education and habit, ecclefiaftics were fo formed that the character of the individual was funk in that of the profession; and the passions of the man were facrificed to the interest and honour of the order. The hands which held the reins of administration might change; but the spirit which conducted them was always the fame. While the measures of other governments fluctuated, and the objects at which they aimed varied, the church kept one end in view; and to this unrelaxing constancy of pursuit, it was indebted for its success in the boldest attempts ever made by human · ambition.

But in their civil administration, the popes followed no fuch uniform or confiftent plan. There, as in other governments, the character, the paffions, and the interest of the person who had the fupreme direction of affairs, occasioned a variation both in objects and measures. As few prelates reached the fummit of ecclefiaftical dignity until they were far advanced in life, a change of masters was more frequent in the papal dominions than in other flates, and the political fystem was, of course, less stable and permanent. Every

pope

SECT.

pope was eager to make the most of the short period, during which he had the prospect of enjoying power, in order to aggrandize his own family, and to attain his private ends; and it was often the first business of his successor to undo all that he had done, and to overturn what he had established.

As ecclefiaftics were trained to pacific arts, and early initiated in the mysteries of that policy by which the court of Rome extended or supported its spiritual dominion, the popes in the conduct of their temporal affairs were apt to follow the same maxims, and in all their measures were more ready to employ the refinements of intrigue, than the force of arms. It was in the papal court that address and subtlety in negociation became a science; and during the sixteenth century, Rome was considered as the school in which it might be best acquired.

As the decorum of their ecclefiastical character prevented the popes from placing themselves at the head of their armies, or from taking the command in person, of the military force in their dominions, they were assaid to arm their subjects; and in all their operations, whether offensive or defensive, they trusted entirely to mercenary troops.

As their power and dominions could not defeend to their posterity, the popes were less solicitous

III.

citous than other princes to form or to encou- SECT. rage schemes of public utility and improvement. Their tenure was only for a short life; present advantage was what they chiefly studied; to squeeze and to amass, rather than to meliorate, was their object. They erected, perhaps, fome work of oftentation, to remain as a monument of their pontificate; they found it necessary, at fome times, to establish useful institutions, in order to foothe and filence the turbulent populace of Rome; but plans of general benefit to their subjects, framed with a view to futurity, were rarely objects of attention in the papal policy. The patrimony of St. Peter was worfe governed than any part of Europe; and though a generous pontiff might suspend for a little, or counteract the effects of those vices which are peculiar to the administration of ecclesiastics; the disease not only remained without remedy, but has gone on increasing from age to age; and the decline of the state has kept pace with its progress.

ONE circumstance, farther, concerning the pa- The popes pal government, is fo fingular, as to merit at- advantages tention. As the spiritual supremacy and temporal power were united in one person, and uniformly aided each other in their operations, they temporal became fo blended together, that it was difficult to feparate them, even in imagination. The potentates, who found it necessary to oppose the measures which the popes pursued as temporal princes,

derive fome from the union of their fpiritual and authority's

SECT.

princes, could not eafily divest themselves of the reverence which they imagined to be due to them as heads of the church, and vicars of Jesus Christ. It was with reluctance that they could be brought to a rupture with the head of the church; they were unwilling to push their operations against him to extremity; they liftened eagerly to the first overtures of accommodation, and were anxious to procure it almost upon any terms. Their conscioufness of this encouraged the enterprising pontiffs, who filled the papal throne about the beginning of the fixteenth century, to engage in schemes feemingly the most extravagant. They trusted, that if their temporal power was not fufficient to carry them through with fuccess, the respect paid to their spiritual dignity would enable them to extricate themselves with facility and with honourd.

But

d The manner in which Louis XII. of France undertook and carried on war against Julius II. remarkably illustrates this observation. Louis folemnly consulted the clergy of France, whether it was lawful to take arms against a pope who had wantonly kindled war in Europe, and whom neither the faith of treaties, nor gratitude for favours received, nor the decorum of his character, could restrain from the most violent actions to which the lust of power prompts ambitious princes. Though his clergy authorifed the war, vet Anne of Bretagne, his queen, entertained fcruples with regard to the lawfulness of it. The king himself, from some superstition of the same kind, carried it on faintly; and, upon every fresh advantage, renewed his propositions of peace. Mezeray, Hist. de France. fol. edit. 1685. tom. i. 852. I shall produce another proof of this reverence for the papal character, still more striking. Guicciardini, the most sagacious, perhaps, of all modern historians, and the boldest in painting

But when popes came to take part more frequently SECT. in the contests among princes, and to engage as principals or auxiliaries in every war kindled in Europe, this veneration for their facred character began to abate; and striking instances will occur in the following History of its being almost totally extinct.

Or all the Italian powers, the rebublic of Venice, Constitunext to the papal fee, was most connected with the republic of rest of Europe. The rise of that commonwealth, with its rise during the inroads of the Huns in the fifth cen- and protury; the fingular fituation of its capital in the finall ifles of the Adriatic gulph; and the more fingular form of its civil constitution, are generally known. If we view the Venetian government as calculated for the order of nobles alone, its inftitutions may be pronounced excellent; the deliberative, legislative, and executive powers, are fo admirably distributed and adjusted, that it must be regarded as a perfect model of political wildom. But if we confider it as formed for a numerous body of people subject to its jurisdiction, it will appear a rigid and partial ariftocracy, which lodges all power in the hands of a few members of the community, while it degrades and oppresses the rest.

painting the vices and ambition of the popes, represents the death of Migliau, a Spanish officer, who was killed during the siege of Naples, as a punishment inflicted on him by Heaven, on account of his having opposed the setting of Clement VII. at liberty. Guic. Historia d'Italia. Genev. 1645. vol. ii. lib. 18 p. 467.

Defects in its government, particularly with refpect to its mulitary operations.

THE spirit of government, in a commonwealth' of this species, was, of course, timid and jealous. The Venetian nobles distrusted their own subjects, and were afraid of allowing them the use of arms. They encouraged among them arts of induftry and commerce; they employed them in manufactures and in navigation; but never admitted them into the troops which the state kept in its pay. The military force of the republic confifted entirely of foreign mercenaries. The command of these was never trusted to noble Venetians, lest they should acquire such influence over the army, as might endanger the public liberty; or become accustomed to the exercise of fuch power, as would make them unwilling to return to the condition of private citizens. A foldier of fortune was placed at the head of the armies of the commonwealth; and to obtain that honour, was the great object of the Italian Condottieri, or leaders of bands, who, in the fifteenth and fixteenth centuries, made a trade of war, and raised and hired out soldiers to different states. But the fame fuspicious policy, which induced the Venetians to employ these adventurers, prevented their placing entire confidence in them. noblemen, appointed by the senate, accompanied their army, when it took the field, with the appellation of Proveditori, and, like the field-deputies of the Dutch republic in latter times, observed all the motions of the general, and checked and controuled him in all his operations.

STATE OF EUROPE.

A COMMONWEALTH, with fuch civil and mili- sect. tary institutions, was not formed to make conquests. While its subjects were disarmed, and its nobles excluded from military command, it carried on its warlike enterprifes with great difadvantage. This ought to have taught the Venetians to rest satisfied with making self-preservation, and the enjoyment of domestic security, the objects of their policy. But republics are apt to be feduced by the spirit of ambition, as well as kings. When the Venetians fo far forgot the interior defects in their government, as to aim at extensive conquests, the fatal blow, which they received in the war excited by the league of Cambray, convinced them of the imprudence and danger of making violent efforts, in opposition to the genius and tendency of their constitution.

It is not, however, by its military, but by its Excellence naval and commercial power, that the importance inftitutions of the Venetian commonwealth must be estimated The latter constituted the real force and nerves of the state. The jealousy of government did not extend to this department. Nothing was apprehended from this quarter, that could prove formidable to liberty. The fenate encouraged the nobles to trade, and to serve on board the fleet. They became merchants and admirals. They increased the wealth of their country by their industry. They added to its dominions, by the valour with which they conducted its naval armaments.

VOL. I.

M

COMMERCE



Commerce was an inexhauftible fource of opulence to the Venetians. All the nations in Europe depended upon them, not only for the commodities of the East, but for various manufactures fabricated by them alone, or finished with a dexterity and elegance unknown in other countries. From this extensive commerce, the state derived such immense fupplies, as concealed those vices in its constitution which I have mentioned; and enabled it to keep on foot fuch armies, as were not only an over-match for the force which any of its neighbours could bring into the field, but were fufficient to contend, for some time, with the powerful monarchs beyond the Alps. During its struggles with the princes united against it by the league of Cambray, the republic levied fums which, even in the present age, would be deemed confiderable; and while the king of France paid the exorbitant interest which I have mentioned for the money advanced to him, and the emperor, eager to borrow, but destitute of credit, was known by the name of Maximilian the Money-less, the Venetians raised whatever sums they pleased, at the moderate premium of five in the hundred .

The conftitution of Florence. THE constitution of Florence was perfectly the reverse of the Venetian. It partook as much of democratical turbulence and licentiousness, as the

other

e Hist. de la Ligue seit à Cambray, par M. l'Abbé du Bos, lib. v. Sandi Storia Civil Veneziana, lib. viii. c. 16. p. 891,

was a commercial, not a military democracy. The nature of its inftitutions was favourable to commerce, and the genius of the people was turned towards it. The vast wealth which the family of Medici had acquired by trade, together with the magnificence, the generofity, and the virtue of the first Cosmo, gave him such an ascendant over the affections as well as the councils of his countrymen, that though the forms of popular government were preserved, though the various departments of administration were filled by magistrates distinguished by the ancient names, and elected in the usual manner, he was in reality the head of the commonwealth; and in the station of a private citizen, he possessed supreme authority. Coimo transmitted a considerable degree of this power to his descendants; and during the greater part of the fifteenth century, the political state of Florence was extremely fingular. The appearance of republican government fubfifted, the people were paffionately attached to it, and on fome occasions contended warmly for their privileges, and yet they permitted a fingle family to affirme the direction of their affairs, almost as absolutely as if it had been formally invefted with fovereign power. The jea-

loufy of the Medici concurred with the commercial spirit of the Florentines, in putting the military force of the republic upon the same sooting with that of the other Italian states. The troops, which the Florentines employed in their wars, consisted

other of aristocratical rigour. Florence, however, SECT: was a commercial, not a military democracy.

M 2 almost

SECT.

almost entirely of mercenary soldiers, furnished by the Condottieri, or leaders of bands, whom they took into their pay.

The conftitution of the kingdom of Naples.

In the kingdom of Naples, to which the fovereignty of the island of Sicily was annexed, the feudal government was established in the same form, and with the same defects, as in the other nations of Europe. The frequent and violent revolutions which happened in that monarchy had confiderably increased these defects, and rendered them The fuccession to the crown of more intolerable. Naples had been fo often interrupted or altered, and so many princes of foreign blood had, at different periods, obtained poffession of the throne, that the Neapolitan nobility had loft, in a great measure, that attachment to the family of their fovereigns, as well as that reverence for their perfons, which, in other feudal kingdoms, contributed to fet fome bounds to the encroachments of the barons upon the royal prerogative and power. At the same time, the different pretenders to the crown, being obliged to court the barons who adhered to them, and on whose support they depended for the success of their claims, they augmented their privileges by liberal concessions, and connived at their boldest usurpations. Even when feated on the throne, it was dangerous for a prince, who held his fceptre by a disputed title, to venture on any step towards extending his own power, or circumscribing that of the nobles.

FROM

From all these causes, the kingdom of Naples SECT. was the most turbulent of any in Europe, and the authority of its monarchs the least extensive. Though Ferdinand I., who began his reign in the year one thousand four hundred and fixty-eight, attempted to break the power of the ariftocracy; though his fon Alphonso, that he might crush it at once by cutting off the leaders of greatest reputation and influence among the Neapolitan barons, ventured to commit one of the most perfidious and cruel actions recorded in history; the order of nobles A.D. 1487. was nevertheless more exasperated than humbled by their measures. The refentment which these outrages excited was fo violent, and the power of the male content nobles was still so formidable, that to these may be ascribed, in a great degree, the ease and rapidity with which Charles VIII. conquered the kingdom of Naples8.

THE event that gave rife to the violent contests state of the concerning the fuccession to the crown of Naples disputeconcerning the and Sicily, which brought fo many calamities right of fucupon these kingdoms, happened in the thirteenth the crown. century. Upon the death of the emperor Frederic II., Manfred, his natural fon, aspiring to the Neapolitan throne, murdered his brother the em- A.D. 1254 peror Conrad (if we may believe contemporary historians) and by that crime obtained possession of ith. The popes, from their implacable enmity

f Giannone, book xxviii. chap. 2. vol. ii. p. 410, &c.

⁸ Giannone, ibid. p. 414.

h Struv. Corp. Hift. Germ. i. 481. Giannone, book xviii. ch. 5.

SFCT.

to the house of Swabia, not only refused to recognife Manfred's title, but endeavoured to excite against him some rival capable of wresting the sceptre out of his hand. Charles, count of Anjou, the brother of St. Louis king of France, undertook this; and he received from the popes the investiture of the kingdom of Naples and Sicily as a fief held of the Holy See. The count of Anjou's efforts were crowned with fuccess; Manfred fell in battle; and he took poffession of the vacant throne. But foon after, Charles fullied the glory which he had acquired, by the injustice and cruelty with which he put to death, by the hands of the executioner, Conradin, the last prince of the house of Swabia, and the rightful heir of the Neapolitan crown. That gallant young prince afferted his title, to the last, with a courage worthy of a better fate. On the scaffold, he declared Peter, at that time prince, and foon after king of Aragon, who had married Manfred's only daughter, his heir; and throwing his glove among the people, he entreated that it might be carried to Peter, as the fymbol by which he conveyed all his rights to him. The defire of avenging the infult offered to royalty, by the death of Conradin, concurred with his own ambition, in prompting Peter to take arms in support of the title which he had acquired. From that period, during almost two centuries, the houses of Aragon and Anjou contended for the crown of Naples. Amidst a fuccession of revolutions more rapid, as well as of

i Giannone, book xix. ch. 4. § 2.

crimes more atrocious, than what occur in the hiftory of almost any other kingdom, monarchs, sometimes of the Aragonese line, and sometimes of the Angevin, were feated on the throne. At length the princes of the house of Aragon obtained such A.D. 143% firm possession of this long-disputed inheritance, that they transmitted it quietly to a bastard branch of their family k.

SECT. III.

THE race of the Angevin kings, however, was Pretentions not extinct; nor had they relinquished their title of the French and to the Neapolitan crown. The count of Maine Spanish and Provence, the heir of this family, conveyed all his rights and pretenfions to Louis XI. and to his fucceffors. Charles VIII., as I have already A.D. 1494. related, croffed the Alps at the head of a powerful army, in order to profecute his claim with a degree of vigour far fuperior to that which the princes from whom he derived it had been capable of exerting. The rapid progress of his arms in Italy, as well as the fhort time during which he enjoyed the fruits of his fuccess, have already been mentioned, and are well known. Frederic, the heir of the illegitimate branch of the Aragonese family. foon recovered the throne of which Charles had difpoffeffed him. Louis XII. and Ferdinand of Aragon united against this prince, whom both, though for different reasons, considered as an usurper, and agreed to divide his dominions between them. Frederic, unable to refift the combined monarchs, A.D. 1501

monai clise

& Giannone, book xxvi. ch. 2,

SECT.

each of whom was far his superior in power, refigned his fceptre. Louis and Ferdinand, though they had concurred in making the conquest, differed about the division of it; and from allies became enemies. But Gonfalvo de Cordova, partly by the exertion of fuch military talents as gave him a just title to the appellation of the Great Captain, which the Spanish historians have bestowed upon him; and partly by fuch shameless and frequent violations of the most folemn engagements, as leave an indelible stain on his memory; stripped the French of all that they possessed in the Neapolitan dominions, and fecured the peaceable poffession of them to his master. These, together with his other kingdoms, Ferdinand transmitted to his grandson Charles V., whose right to possess them, if not altogether uncontrovertible, feems, at least, to be as well founded as that which the kings of France fet up in opposition to it1.

State of the dutchy of Milan, and the right of fuccession to it.

THERE is nothing in the political conflitution, or interior government of the dutchy of Milan, for remarkable as to require a particular explanation. But as the right of fuccession to that fertile province was the cause or the pretext of almost all the wars carried on in Italy during the reign of Charles V., it is necessary to trace these disputes to their source, and to inquire into the pretensions of the various competitors.

DURING

³ Droits des Rois de France au Royaume de Sicile. Mem, de Comin. Edit. de Fresnoy, tom. iv. part ii. p. 5.

progress of

DURING the long and fierce contests excited in SECT. Italy by the violence of the Guelf and Ghibelline factions, the family of Visconti rose to great emi- Rise and nence among their fellow-citizens of Milan. As the disputes the Visconti had adhered uniformly to the Ghibel- concerning line or Imperial interest, they, by way of recompence, received, from one emperor, the dignity A.D. 1354. of perpetual vicars of the empire in Italy ": they were created, by another, dukes of Milan; and, A.D. 1395. together with that title, the possession of the city and its territories was bestowed upon them as an hereditary fief". John, king of France, among other expedients for raising money, which the calamities of his reign obliged him to employ, condescended to give one of his daughters in marriage to John Galeazzo Visconti, the first duke of Milan, from whom he had received confiderable fums. Valentine Visconti, one of the children of this marriage, married her coufin, Louis, duke of Orleans, the only brother of Charles VI. In their marriage-contract, which the pope confirmed, it was flipulated that, upon failure of heirs male in the family of Visconti, the dutchy of Milan should descend to the posterity of Valentine and the duke of Orleans. That event took place. In the year one thousand four hundred and fortyfeven, Philip Maria, the last prince of the ducal family of Visconti, died. Various competitors claimed the fuccession. Charles, duke of Orleans,

m Petrarch epist. ap. Struv. Corp. i. 625.

¹ Leibnit, Cod. Jur. Gent. Diplom. vol. i. 257.



pleaded his right to it, founded on the marriage-contract of his mother Valentine Visconti. Alfonso, king of Naples, claimed it in consequence of a will made by Philip Maria in his favour. The emperor contended that, upon the extinction of male iffue in the family of Visconti, the fief returned to the superior lord, and ought to be reannexed to the empire. The people of Milan, smitten with the love of liberty which in that age prevailed among the Italian states, declared against the dominion of any master, and established a republican form of government.

But during the struggle among so many competitors, the prize for which they contended was feized by one from whom none of them apprehended any danger. Francis Sforza, the natural fon of Jacomuzzo Sforza, whom his courage and abilities had elevated from the rank of a peafant to be one of the most eminent and powerful of the Italian Condottieri, having succeeded his father in the command of the adventurers who followed his ftandard, had married a natural daughter of the last duke of Milan. Upon this shadow of a title Francis founded his pretensions to the autchy, which he supported with such talents and valour, as placed him at last on the ducal throne. virtues, as well as abilities, with which he governed, inducing his subjects to forget the defects in his title, he transmitted his dominions quietly to his fon; from whom they descended to his grandson. He was murdered by his grand-uncle Ludovico, fu rnamed furnamed the Moor, who took possession of the sect. dutchy; and his right to it was confirmed by the investiture of the emperor Maximilian in the year one thousand four hundred and ninety-four.



Louis XI. who took pleasure in depressing the princes of the blood, and who admired the political abilities of Francis Sforza, would not permit the duke of Orleans to take any step in prosecution of his right to the dutchy of Milan. Ludovico the Moor kept up fuch a close connection with Charles VIII. that, during the greater part of his reign, the claim of the family of Orleans continued to lie dormant. But when the crown of France devolved on Louis XII. duke of Orleans, he instantly affected the rights of his family with the ardour which it was natural to expect, and marched at the head of a powerful army to support them. Ludovico Sforza, incapable of contending with fuch a rival, was ftripped of all his dominions in the space of a few days. The king, clad in the ducal robes, entered Milan in triumph; and foon after, Ludovico, having been betraved by the Swifs in his pay, was fent a prisoner into France, and shut up in the caftle of Loches, where he lay unpitied during the remainder of his days. In confequence of one of the fingular revolutions which occur fo frequently in the history of the Milanese, his son Maximilian Sforza was placed on the ducal throne, of which he kept possession during the reign of Louis XII.

º Ripalin. Hift. Mediol. lib. vi. 654. ap. Struv. Corp. i. 930. Du Mont Corps Diplom. tom, iii. p. ii. 333. ibid.

But his fucceffor Francis I. was too high-spirited and enterprising tamely to relinquish his title.

A.D. 1512. As soon as he was seated upon the throne, he prepared to invade the Milanese; and his right of succession to it appears, from this detail, to have been more natural and more just than that of any other competitor.

It is unneceffary to enter into any detail with respect to the form of government in Genoa, Parma, Modena, and the other inserior states of Italy. Their names, indeed, will often occur in the following history. But the power of these states themselves was so inconsiderable, that their sate depended little upon their own efforts; and the frequent revolutions which they underwent, were brought about rather by the operations of the princes who attacked or defended them, than by any thing peculiar in their internal constitution.

The conflution and government of Spain. Or the great kingdoms on this fide of the Alps, Spain is one of the most considerable; and as it was the hereditary domain of Charles V. as well as the chief source of his power and wealth, a distinct knowledge of its political constitution is of capital importance towards understanding the transactions of his reign.

Conquered by the Vandals, THE Vandals and Goths, who overturned the Roman power in Spain, established a form of government in that country, and introduced customs and laws, perfectly similar to those which were established

blished in the rest of Europe by the other victorious SECT. tribes which acquired fettlements there. For fome time, fociety advanced, among the new inhabitants of Spain, by the same steps, and seemed to hold the fame course, as in other European nations. To this A.D. 718. progrefs, a fudden ftop was put by the invafion of the Saracens or Moors from Africa. The Goths and by the Moors. could not withfrand the efforts of their enthugaftic valour, which fubdued the greatest part of Spain, with the fame impetuous rapidity that diffinguishes all the operations of their arms. The conquerors introduced into the country in which they fettled, the Mahometan religion, the Arabic language, the manners of the East, together with that taste for the arts, and that love of elegance and splendour, which the caliphs had begun to cultivate among their fubjects.

Such Gothic nobles as disdained to Submit to The Christthe Moorish yoke, fled for refuge to the inacces- ally recover fible mountains of Asturias. There they com- dominion in Spain. forted themselves with enjoying the exercise of the Christian religion, and with maintaining the authority of their ancient laws. Being joined by many of the boldest and most warlike among their countrymen, they fallied out upon the adjacent fettlements of the Moors in small parties; but venturing only upon short excursions at first, they were fatisfied with plunder and revenge, without thinking of conquest. By degrees, their strength increased, their views enlarged, a regular government was established among them, and they began

SECT.

to aim at extending their territories. While they pushed on their attacks with the unremitting ardour excited by zeal for religion, by the defire of vengeance, and by the hope of refcuing their country from oppression; while they conducted their operations with the courage natural to men who had no other occupation but war, and who were strangers to all the arts which corrupt or enfeeble the mind; the Moors gradually loft many of the advantages to which they had been indebted for their first success. They threw off all dependence on the caliphs?; they neglected to preferve a close connection with their countrymen in Africa; their empire in Spain was split into many small kingdoms; the arts which they cultivated, together with the luxury to which these gave rite, relaxed, in some measure, the force of their military inflitutions, and abated the vigour of their warlike spirit. The Moors, however, continued still to be a gallant people, and possessed great resources. According to the magnificent flyle of the Spanish halorians, eight centuries of almost uninterrupted war elapsed, and three thouland seven hundred battles were fought, before the last of the Moorish kingdoms in Spain fubrilited to the Christian arms.

1492-

The union of its various kingdoms. As the Christians made their conquests upon the Mahometans at various periods, and under different leaders, each formed the territory which he had wrested from the common enemy, into an

P Jos. Sim. Assemanni Histor. Ital. Scriptores, vol. iii. p. 135. independent

independent state. Spain was divided into almost as many separate kingdoms as it contained provinces; in each city of note, a petty monarch eitablished his throne, and affumed all the enfigns of royalty. In a feries of years, however, by the utual events of intermarriages, or fuccession, or conquest, all these inferior principalities were annexed to the more powerful kingdoms of Castile and of Aragon. At length, by the fortunate marriage of Ferdinand and Isabella, the former the hereditary monarch of Aragon, and the latter raised to the throne of Castile by the affection of her subjects, all the Spanish crowns were united, and descended in the same line.

SECT.

1481.

From this period, the political conftitution of Their anci-Spain began to affume a regular and uniform appearance; the genius of its government may be ferved amount and delineated, and the progress of its laws and manners there revomay be traced, with certainty. Notwithstanding the fingular revolution which the invasion of the Moors occasioned in Spain, and the peculiarity of its fate, in being so long subject to the Mahometan yoke, the customs introduced by the Vandals and Goths had taken such deep root, and were so thoroughly incorporated with the frame of its government, that in every province which the Christians recovered from the Moors, we find the condition of individuals, as well as the political constitution, nearly the same as in other nations of Europe. Lands were held by the same tenure; justice

lutions;

SECT. III. which renders their fate in fome degree fimilar to that of other nations of Europe.

justice was dispensed in the same form; the fame privileges were claimed by the nobility; and the same power exercised by the Cortes, or general affembly of the kingdom. Several circumstances contributed to fecure this permanence of the feudal institutions in Spain, notwithstanding the conquest of the Moors, which seemed to have overturned them. Such of the Spaniards as preserved their independence, adhered to their ancient customs. not only from attachment to them, but out of antipathy to the Moors, to whose ideas concerning property and government these customs were totaily repugnant. Even among the Christians, who fubmitted to the Moorish conquerors, and contented to become their subjects, ancient customs were not entirely abolished. They were permitted to retain their religion, their laws concerning private property, their forms of administering justice. and their mode of levying taxes. The followers of Mahomet are the only enthusiasts who have united the spirit of toleration with zeal for making profelytes, and who, at the fame time that they took arms to propagate the doctrine of their Prophet, permitted fuch as would not embrace it, to adhere to their own tenets, and to practife their own rites. To this peculiarity in the genius of the Manometan religion, as well as to the defire which the Moors had of reconciling the Christians to their yoke, it was owing that the ancient manners and laws in Spain furvived the violent shock of a conquest, and were permitted to subsist, notwithstanding the introduction of a new religion and

SECT. HIT.

and a new form of government into that country. It is obvious, from all there particulars, that the Christians must have found it extremely easy to re-establish manners and government on their ancient foundations, in those provinces of Spain which they wrested successively from the Moors. A confiderable part of the people retained fuch a fondness for the customs, and such a reverence for the laws of their ancestors, that, wishing to see them completely reflored, they were not only willing but eager to refume the former, and to recognize the authority of the latter.

> conflit stien and laws.

Bur though the feudal form of government, Certain pewith all the inflitutions which characterife it, was in their thus preferved entire in Castile and Aragon, as well as in all the kingdoms which depended on these crowns, there were certain peculiarities in their political constitutions, which distinguish them from those of any other country in Europe. The The prevoroyal prerogative, extremely limited in every feudal limic and kingdom, was circumscribed, in Spain, within the immunities of the fuch narrow bounds, as reduced the power of the People fovereign almost to nothing. The privileges of tensive. the nobility were great in proportion, and extended fo far, as to border on absolute independence. The immunities of the cities were likewise greater than in other feudal kingdoms, they poffessed considerable influence in the Cortes. and they aspired at obtaining more. Such a state of Society, in which the political machine was fo VOL. I. 111

SECT. ill adjusted, and the several members of the legislature fo improperly balanced, produced internal diforders in the kingdoms of Spain, which rofe beyond the pitch of turbulence and anarchy usual under the feudal government. The whole tenor of the Spanish history confirms the truth of this observation; and when the mutinous spirit, to which the genius of their policy gave birth and vigour, was no longer restrained and overawed by the immediate dread of the Moorish arms, it broke out into more frequent infurrections against the government of their princes, as well as more outrageous infults on their dignity, than occur in the annals of any other country. These were accompanied at some times with more liberal sentiments concerning the rights of the people, at other times with more elevated notions concerning the privileges of the nobles, than were common in other nations.

Inflances of this.

In the principality of Catalonia, which was annexed to the kingdom of Aragon, the impatience of the people to obtain the redress of their griev-A.D. 1462, ances having prompted them to take arms against their fovereign John II., they, by a folemn deed, recalled the oath of allegiance which they had fworn to him, declared him and his posterity to be unworthy of the throne, and endeavoured to establish a republican form of government, in order to fecure the perpetual enjoyment of that

P Zurita Annales de Arag. tom. iv. 113. 115, &c.

liberty.

liberty, after which they aspired 4. Nearly about SECT. the fame period, the indignation of the Castilian nobility against the weak and flagitious administration of Henry IV., having led them to combine against him, they arrogated, as one of the privileges belonging to their order, the right of trying and of paffing fentence on their fovereign. That the exercise of this power might be as public and folemn, as the pretention to it was bold, they fummoned all the nobility of their party to meet at A.D. 1465. Avila; a spacious theatre was erected in a plain, without the walls of the town; an image reprefenting the king, was feated on a throne, clad in royal robes, with a crown on its head, a sceptre in its hand, and the fword of justice by his side. The accusation against the king was read, and the sentence of deposition was pronounced, in presence of a numerous affembly. At the close of the first article of the charge, the archbishop of Toledo advanced, and tore the crown from the head of the image; at the close of the second, the Conde de Placentia fnatched the fword of justice from its side; at the close of the third, the Conde de Benevente wrested the sceptre from its hand; at the close of the last, Don Diego Lopes de Stuniga tumbled it headlong from the throne. At the same instant, Don Alfonso, Henry's brother, was proclaimed king of Castile and Leon in his stead .

9 Ferreras Hist. d'Espagne, tom. vii. p. 92. P. Orleans Revol. d'Espagne, tom. iii. p. 155. L. Marinæus Siculus de Reb, Hispan. apud Schotti Script. Hispan. fol. 429.

Marian. Hist. lib. xxiii. c. 9.

SECT.

The most daring leaders of faction would not have ventured on these measures, nor have conducted them with such public ceremony, if the sentiments of the people concerning the royal dignity had not been so formed by the laws and policy, to which they were accustomed both in Castile and Catalonia, as prepared them to approve of such extraordinary proceedings, or to acquiesce in them.

The conftitution and government of Aragon.

In Aragon, the form of government was monarchical, but the genius and maxims of it were purely republican. The kings, who were long elective, retained only the shadow of power; the real exercise of it was in the Cortes or parliament of the kingdom. This supreme affembly was composed of four different arms or members. The nobility of the first rank. The equestrian order, or nobility of the fecond class. The representatives of the cities and towns, whose right to a place in the Cortes, if we may give credit to the historians of Aragon, was coeval with the constitution. The ecclesiastical order, composed of the dignitaties of the church, together with the representatives of the inferior clergy. No law could pass in this affembly without the affent of every fingle member who had a right to vote t. Without the permission of the Cortes, no tax could be imposed; no war could be declared; no peace could be concluded; no money could be coined; nor could any alteration be made

⁵ Forma de Celebrar. Cortes in Aragon. por Geron Martel.

Martel. ibid. p. 2.

in the current specie". The power of reviewing SFCT. the proceedings of all inferior courts, the privilege of inspecting every department of administration, and the right of redresting all grievances, belonged to the Cortes. Nor did those who conceived themfelves to be aggrieved, address the Cortes in the humble tone of supplicants, and petition for redress; they demanded it as the birthright of freemen, and required the guardians of their liberty to decide with respect to the points which they laid before them *. This fovereign court was held, during feveral centuries, every year; but, in confequence of a regulation introduced about the beginning of the fourteenth century, it was convoked from that period only once in two years. After it was affembled, the king had no right to prorogue or dissolve it without its own confent; and the fession continued forty days y.

Nor fatisfied with having erected fuch formida- office and ble barriers against the encroachments of the royal intidetion of the prerogative, nor willing to commit the fole guardi- Justiza. anship of their liberties intirely to the vigilance and authority of an affembly, fimilar to the diets, states-general, and parliaments, in which the other feudal nations have placed fo much confidence, the Aragonese had recourse to an institution

[&]quot; Hier. Blanca Comment. Rer. Aragon. ap, Schot. Script. Hispan. vol. iii. p. 750.

x Martel. Forma de Celebr. p. 2.

y Hier. Blanca Comment. 763.

SECT.

peculiar to themselves, and elected a Justiza or fupreme judge. This magistrate, whose office bore fome refemblance to that of the Ephori in ancient Sparta, acted as the protector of the people, and the comptroller of the prince. The perion of the Justiza was facred, his power and jurisdiction almost unbounded. He was the supreme interpreter of the laws. Not only inferior judges, but the kings themselves, were bound to consult him in every doubtful case, and to receive his responses with implicit deference*. An appeal lay to him from the royal judges, as well as from those appointed by the barons within their respective territories. Even when no appeal was made to him, he could interpose by his own authority, prohibit the ordinary judge to proceed, take immediate cognizance of the cause himself, and remove the party accused to the Manifestation, or prison of the state, to which no person had access but by his permission. His power was exerted with no less vigour and effect in superintending the administration of government, than in regulating the course of justice. It was the prerogative of the Justiza to inspect the conduct of the king. He had a title to review all the royal proclamations and patents, and to declare whether or not they were agreeable to law, and ought to be carried into execution. He, by his fole authority, could exclude any of the king's ministers from the conduct of affairs,

^{*} Blanca has preferved two responses of the Justiza to James II. who reigned towards the close of the thirteenth century, Blanca 748.

and call them to answer for their mal-administration. He hir telf was accountable to the Cortes only, for the panner in which he discharged the duties of this high office; and performed functions of the greatest importance that could be committed to a subject [HH]2.

SECT.

IT is evident, from a bare enumeration of the The regal privileges of the Aragonese Cortes, as well as of the cumicribed rights belonging to the Justiza, that a very small within narportion of power remained in the hands of the king. The Aragonese seem to have been solicitous that their monarchs should know and feel this state of impotence, to which they were reduced. Even in fwearing allegiance to their fovereign, an act which ought naturally to be accompanied with professions of submission and respect, they devised an oath, in fuch a form, as to remind him of his dependence on his fubjects. "We," faid the Justiza to the king in name of his high-spirited barons, "who are each of us as good, and who are altogether more powerful than you, promise obedience to your government, if you maintain our rights and liberties; but if not, not." Conformably to this oath, they established it as a fundamental article in their constitution, that if the king should violate their rights and privileges, it was lawful for the people to disclaim him as their fovereign, and to elect another, even though a heathen, in his place *. The attachment

[HH] NOTE XXXI.

² Hier. Blanca Comment. p. 747-755.

^{*} Hier. Blanca Comment. 720.

131

SECT.

of the Aragonese to this fingular constitution of government was extreme, and their respect for it approached to superstitious veneration [11]. In the preamble to one of their laws, they declare, that such was the barrenness of their country, and the poverty of the inhabitants, that, if it were not on account of the liberties by which they were diffinguished from other nations, the people would abandon it, and go in quost of a settlement to some more fruitful region b.

Conflitution and government of Caffile.

In Castile, there were not such peculiarities in the form of government, as to establish any remarkable distinction between it and that of the other European nations. The executive part of government was committed to the king, but with a prerogative extremely limited. The legislative authority refided in the Cortes, which was composed of the nobility, the dignified ecclefiaftics, and the representatives of the cities. The assembly of the Cortes in Castile was very ancient, and seems to have been almost coëval with the constitution. The members of the three different orders, who had a right of fuffrage, met in one place, and deliberated as one collective body; the decisions of which were regulated by the fentiments of the majority. The right of imposing taxes, of enacting laws, and of redroffing grievances, belonged to this affembly; and in order to fecure the affent of the king to fuch flatutes and regulations as were deemed falu-

[II] NOTE XXXII.

b Hier. Blanca Com. p. 751.

tary or beneficial to the kingdom, it was usual in SECT. the Cortes to take no step towards granting money, until all bufiness relative to the public welfare was concluded. The representatives of cities seem to have obtained a feat very early in the Cortes of Caffile, and foon acquired fuch influence and credit, as were very uncommon, at a period when the fplendour and pre-eminence of the nobility had eclipted or depressed all other orders of men. The number of members from cities bore fuch a proportion to that of the whole collective body, as rendered them extremely respectable in the Cortes [KK]. The degree of confideration, which they possessed in the state, may be estimated by one event. Upon the death of John I. a council of A.D. 1390. regency was appointed to govern the kingdom during the minority of his fon. It was composed of an equal number of noblemen, and of deputies chosen by the cities; the latter were admitted to the fame rank, and invested with the same powers, as prelates and grandees of the first order. But though the members of communities in Castile were elevated above the condition wherein they were placed in other kingdoms of Europe; though they had attained to fuch political importance, that even the proud and jealous spirit of the feudal ariftocracy could not exclude them from a confiderable fhare in government; yet the nobles, notwithstanding these acquisitions of the commons, continued to affert the privileges of their order, in

[KK] NOTE XXXIII. Mariana Hitt. lib. xviii. c. 15-

opposition

SECT.

opposition to the crown, in a tone extremely high. There was not any body of nobility in Europe more diftinguished for independence of spirit, haughtiness of deportment, and bold pretensions, than that of Castile. The history of that monarchy affords the most striking examples of the vigilance with which they observed, and of the vigour with which they opposed, every measure of their kings, that tended to encroach on their jurisdiction, to diminish their dignity, or to abridge their power. Even in their ordinary intercourse with their monarchs, they preferved fuch a confciousness of their rank, that the nobles of the first order claimed it as a privilege to be covered in the royal prefence, and approached their fovereigns rather as equals than as subjects.

THE constitutions of the subordinate monarchies, which depended on the crowns of Castile and Aragon, nearly resembled those of the kingdoms to which they were annexed. In all of them, the dignity and independence of the nobles were great; the immunities and power of the cities were confiderable.

Various causes of the limited the Spanish monarchs.

An attentive observation of the singular situation of Spain, as well as the various events which ocauthority of curred there, from the invasion of the Moors to the union of its kingdoms under Ferdinand and Isabella, will discover the causes to which all the peculiarities in its political constitution I have pointed out, ought to be ascribed.

As the provinces of Spain were wrested from the Mahometans gradually and with difficulty, the nobles who followed the standard of any eminent leader in these wars, conquered not for him alone, but for themselves. They claimed a share in the lands which their valour had won from the enemy, and their prosperity and power increased, in proportion as the territory of the prince extended.

During their perpetual wars with the Moors, the monarchs of the feveral kingdoms in Spain depended so much on their nobles, that it became necessary to conciliate their good-will by successive grants of new honours and privileges. By the time that any prince could establish his dominion in a conquered province, the greater part of the territory was parcelled out by him among his barons, with such jurisdiction and immunities as raised them almost to sovereign power.

At the same time, the kingdoms erected in so many different corners of Spain, were of inconsiderable extent. The petty monarch was but little elevated above his nobles. They, feeling themselves to be almost his equals, acted as such; and could not look up to the kings of such limited domains with the same reverence that the sovereigns of the great monarchies in Europe were viewed by their subjects [LL].

[LL] NOTE XXXIV.



WHILE these circumstances concurred in exalting the nobility, and in depressing the royal authority, there were other causes which raised the cities in Spain to consideration and power.

As the open country, during the wars with the Moors, was perpetually exposed to the excussions of the enemy, with whom no rence or truce was to permanent as to prove any la ling fecurity, felfprefervation obliged persons of all ranks to fix their refidence in places of thrength. The caftles of the barons, which, in other countries, afforded a commodious retreat from the depredations of banditti, or from the transient violence of any interior commotion, were unable to reful an enemy whose operations were conducted with regular and perfevering vigour. Cities, in which great numbers united for their mutual defence, were the only places in which people could refide with any profpect of fafety. To this was owing the rapid growth of those cities in Spain of which the Christians recovered possession. All who fled from the Moorish yoke resorted to them, as to an aivlum; and in them, the greater part of those who took the field against the Mahometans, established their families.

SEVERAL of these cities, during a longer or shorter course of years, were the capitals of little states, and enjoyed all the advantages which accelerate the increase of inhabitants in every place that is the seat of government.

From those concurring causes, the number of sect. cities in Spain, at the beginning of the fifteenth century, had become considerable, and they were peopled far beyond the proportion which was common in other parts of Europe, except in Italy and the Low-Countries. The Moors had introduced manufactures into those civies, while under their dominion. The Chairlians, who, by intermixture with them, had learned their arts, continued to cultivate these. Trade in several of the Spanish towns appears to have been carried on with vigour; and the spirit of commerce continued to preserve the number of their inhabitants, as the sense of danger had first induced them to crowd together.

As the Spanish cities were populous, many of the inhabitants were of a rank fuperior to those who resided in towns in other countries of Europe. That cause, which contributed chiefly to their population, affected equally persons of every condition, who flocked thither promiscuously, in order to find shelter there, or in hopes of making a stand against the enemy, with greater advantage than in any other station. The persons elected as their representatives in the Cortes by the cities, or promoted to offices of trust and dignity in the government of the community, were often, as will appear from transactions which I shall hereafter relate, of fuch confiderable rank in the kingdom, as reflected lustre on their constituents, and on the stations wherein they were placed.



As it was impossible to carry on a continual war against the Moors, without some other military force than that which the barons were obliged to bring into the field, in consequence of the seudal tenures, it became necessary to have some troops, particularly a body of light cavalry, in constant pay. It was one of the privileges of the nobles, that their lands were exempt from the burden of taxes. The charge of supporting the troops requisite for the public safety, fell wholly upon the cities; and their kings, being obliged frequently to apply to them for aid, sound it necessary to gain their savour by concessions, which not only extended their immunities, but added to their wealth and power.

When the influence of all these circumstances, peculiar to Spain, is added to the general and common causes, which contributed to aggrandize cities in other countries of Europe, this will fully account for the extensive privileges which they acquired, as well as for the extraordinary consideration to which they attained, in all the Spanish kingdoms [MM].

Meafores of different princes in order to extend their power; By these exorbitant privileges of the nobility, and this unusual power of the cities in Spain, the royal prerogative was hemmed in on every side, and reduced within very narrow bounds. Sensible of this, and impatient of such restraint, several monarchs endeavoured, at various junctures, and by different means, to enlarge their own jurisdic-

[MM] NOTE XXXV.

tion. Their power, however, or their abilities, were fo unequal to the undertaking, that their efforts were attended with little fuccefs. But when Ferdinand and Isabella found themselves at the head of particularthe united kingdoms of Spain, and delivered from ly of Fernand and the danger and interruption of domestic wars, they were not only in a condition to resume, but were able to profecute with advantage, the schemes of extending the prerogative, which their ancestors

had attempted in vain. Ferdinand's profound fagacity in concerting his measures, his persevering industry in conducting them, and his uncommon address in carrying them into execution, fitted him admirably for an undertaking which required all

these talents.

SECT.

ly of Ferdi-Ifabella.

As the overgrown power and high pretentions of Ferdithe nobility were what the monarchs of Spain felt ferent most fensibly, and bore with the greatest impatience, abridging the great object of Ferdinand's policy was to reduce the privithese within more moderate bounds. Under vari-power of rious pretexts, fometimes by violence, more frequently in confequence of decrees obtained in the courts of law, he wrested from the barons a great part of the lands which had been granted to them by the inconsiderate bounty of former monarchs, particularly during the feeble and profuse reign of his predecessor Henry IV. He did not give the entire conduct of affairs to persons of noble birth, who were accustomed to occupy every department of importance in peace or in war, as if it had been a privilege peculiar to their order, to be employed

nand's diffchemes for leges and the nobility.



as the fole counfellors and ministers of the crown. He often transacted business of great consequence without their intervention, and bestowed many offices of power and trust on new men, devoted to his interest. He introduced a degree of state and dignity into his court, which being little known in Spain, while it remained split into many small kingdoms, taught the nobles to approach their sovereign with more ceremony, and gradually rendered him the object of greater deference and respect.

Particulariy by annexing the grand-mafterships of the three orders to the crown;

THE annexing the masterships of the three military orders of St. Jago, Calatrava, and Alcantara, to the crown, was another expedient, by which Ferdinand greatly augmented the revenue and power of the kings of Spain. These orders were instituted in imitation of those of the Knights Templars and of St. John of Jerusalem, on purpose to wage perpetual war with the Mahometans, and to protect the pilgrims who visited Compostella, or other places of eminent fanctity in Spain. The zeal and superstition of the ages in which they were founded, prompted persons of every rank to bestow such liberal donations on those holy warriors, that, in a short time, they engrofied a confiderable share in the property and wealth of the kingdom. The masterships of these orders came to be stations of the greatest power and opulence to which a Spanish nobleman could be advanced. These high dignities were in the disposal

d Zurita Annales de Arag. tom. vi. p. 22.

of the knights of the order, and placed the persons on whom they conferred them almost on a level , with their fovereign [NN]. Ferdinand, unwilling that the nobility, whom he confidered as already too formidable, should derive such additional credit and influence from possessing the government of these wealthy fraternities, was solicitous to wrest it out of their hands, and to veft it in the crown. His measures for accomplishing this were wifely A. D. 1476, planned, and executed with vigour. By address, by promises, and by threats, he prevailed on the knights of each order to place Isabella and him at the head of it. Innocent VIII. and Alexander VI. gave this election the fanction of papal authority; and subsequent pontiffs rendered the annexation of these masterships to the crown perpetual.

WHILE Ferdinand, by this measure, diminished and by cirthe power and influence of the nobility, and added ing the junew luftre or authority to the crown, he was the nobitaking other important steps with a view to the lity fame object. The fovereign jurisdiction, which the feudal barons exercifed within their own territories, was the pride and distinction of their order. To have invaded openly a privilege which they prized fo highly, and in defence of which they

[NN] NOTE XXXVI.

VOL. I.

would

[&]quot; Marian. Hift. lib. xxv. c. 5.

f Zurita Annales, tom. v. p. 22. Ælii Anton. Nebriffensis rerum a Ferdinand & Elizabe gestarum decades ii. apud Schot. script. Hispan. i. 860.

SECT. would have run fo eagerly to arms, as a measure too daring for a prince of Ferdinand's cautious temper. He took advantage, however, of an opportunity which the state of his kingdoms and the spirit of his people presented him, in order to undermine what he durst not assault. The incessant depredations of the Moors, the want of discipline among the troops which were employed to oppose them, the frequent civil wars between the crown and the nobility, as well as the undifcerning rage with which the barons carried on their private wars with each other, filled all the provinces of Spain with disorder. Rapine, outrage, and murder became so common, as not only to interrupt commerce, but in a great measure to suspend all intercourse between one place and another. That fecurity and protection, which men expect from entering into civil fociety, ceased in a great degree. Internal order and police, while the feudal inftitutions remained in vigour, were so little objects of attention, and the administration of justice were so extremely feeble, that it would have been vain to have expected relief from the established laws or the ordinary judges. But the evil became so intolerable, and the inhabitants of cities, who were the chief fufferers, grew so impatient of this anarchy, that self-preservation forced them to have recourse to an extraordinary remedy. About the middle of the thirteenth century, the cities in the kingdom of Aragon, and, after their example, those in Castile, formed themfelves into an affociation, diftinguished by the name

T260.

of the Holy Brotherhood. They exacted a certain SECT. contribution from each of the affociated towns; they levied a confiderable body of troops, in order to protect travellers, and to puriue criminals; they appointed judges, who opened their courts in various parts of the kingdom. Whoever was guilty of murder, robbery, or of any act that violated the public peace, and was feized by the troops of the Brotherhood, was carried before judges of their nomination, who, without paying any regard to the exclusive and sovereign jurisdiction which the lord of the place might claim, tried and condemned the criminals. By the establishment of this fraternity, the prompt and impartial administration of justice was restored; and together with it, internal tranquillity and order began to return. The bles alone murmured at this falutary inftitution. They complained of it as an encroachment on one of their most valuable privileges. They remonstrated against it in an high tone; and, on some occasions, refused to grant any aid to the crown, unless it were abolished. Ferdinand, however, was fenfible not only of the good effects of the Holy Brotherhood with respect to the police of his kingdoms, but perceived its tendency to abridge, and at length to annihilate, the territorial jurifdiction of the nobility. He countenanced it on every occasion. He supported it with the whole force of royal authority; and, besides the expedients employed by him in common with the other monarchs of Europe, he availed himself of this institution, 0 2

SECT.

institution, which was peculiar to his kingdom, in order to limit and abolish that independent jurisdiction of the nobility, which was no less inconsistent with the authority of the prince, than with the order of society [OO].

Notwithitanding all thefe, the government of Spain ftill extremely free.

Bur though Ferdinand by these measures confiderably enlarged the boundaries of prerogative, and acquired a degree of influence and power far beyond what any of his predecessors had enjoyed, yet the limitations of the royal authority, as well as the barriers against its encroachments, continued to be many and ftrong. The spirit of liberty was vigorous among the people of Spain; the spirit of independence was high among the nobility; and though the love of glory, peculiar to the Spaniards in every period of their hiftory, prompted them to support Ferdinand with zeal in his foreign operations, and to afford him such aid as enabled him not only to undertake but to execute great enterprises; he reigned over his subjects with a jurisdiction less extensive than that of any of the great monarchs in Europe. It will appear from many passages in the following history, that, during a confiderable part of the reign of his fucceffor Charles V., the prerogative of the Spanish crown was equally circumfcribed.

Conflitution and government of France. THE ancient government and laws in France fo nearly refembled those of the other feudal kingdoms,

[00] NOTE XXXVII.

that

SECT. III.

that fuch a detail with respect to them as was neceffary, in order to convey some idea of the nature and effects of the peculiar institutions which took place in Spain, would be fuperfluous. In the view which I have exhibited of the means by which the French monarchs acquired fuch a full command of the national force of their kingdom, as enabled them to engage in extensive schemes of foreign operation, I have already pointed out the great steps by which they advanced towards a more ample possession of political power, and a more uncontrouled exercise of their royal prerogative. All that now remains is to take notice of fuch particulars in the constitution of France, as ferve either to diffinguish it from that of other countries, or tend to throw any light on the transactions of that period, to which the following hiftory extends.

UNDER the French monarchs of the first race, Power of the royal prerogative was very inconfiderable. general affemblies of the nation, which met annually under the at stated seasons, extended their authority to every kings. department of government. The power of electing kings, of enacting laws, of redreffing grievances, of conferring donations on the prince, of paffing judgment in the last resort, with respect to every person and to every cause, resided in this great convention of the nation. Under the fecond race of kings, notwithstanding the power and splendour which second. the conquests of Charlemagne added to the crown, the general affemblies of the nation continued to

The the general

SECT.

possesses extensive authority. The right of determining which of the royal family should be placed on the throne, was vested in them. The princes, elevated to that dignity by their suffrage, were accustomed regularly to call and to consult them with respect to every affair of importance to the state, and without their consent no law was passed, and no new tax was levied.

Under the

But, by the time that Hugh Capet, the father of the third race of kings, took possession of the throne of France, fuch changes had happened in the political state of the kingdom, as considerably affected the power and jurisdiction of the general affembly of the nation. The royal authority, in the hands of the degenerate posterity of Charlemagne, had dwindled into infignificance and contempt. Every confiderable proprietor of land had formed his territory into a barony, almost independent of the fovereign. The dukes or governors of provinces, the counts or governors of towns and fmall districts, and the great officers of the crown, had rendered these dignities, which originally were granted only during pleasure or for life, hereditary in their families. Each of these had usurped all the rights which hitherto had been deemed the diftinctions of royalty, particularly the privileges of dispensing justice within their own domains, of coining money, and of waging war. Every district was governed by local customs, acknowledged a diffinct lord, and purfued a separate interest. The formality

formality of doing homage to their fovereign, was SECT. almost the only act of subjection which those haughty barons would perform, and that bound them no farther than they were willing to acknowledge its obligation [PP].



In a kingdom broken into fo many independent The power baronies, hardly any common principle of union ratassembly remained; and the general affembly, in its delibe- lets confitions, could scarcely consider the nation as forming extensive. one body, or establish common regulations to be of equal force in every part. Within the immediate domains of the crown, the king might publish laws, and they were obeyed, because there he was acknowledged as the only lord. But if he had aimed at rendering these laws general, that would have alarmed the barons as an encroachment upon the independence of their jurisdiction. The barons, when met in the great national convention, avoided, with no less care, the enacting of general laws to be observed in every part of the kingdom, because the execution of them must have been vested in the king, and would have enlarged that paramount power, which was the object of their jealousy. Thus, under the descendants of Hugh Capet, the States General (for that was the name by which the fupreme affembly of the French nation came then to be distinguished) lost their legislative authority, or at least entirely relinquished the exercise of it. From that period, the jurisdiction of the States

derable and

[PP] NOTE XXXVIII. 0 4

General



General extended no farther than to the imposition of new taxes, the determination of questions with respect to the right of succession to the crown, the settling of the regency when the preceding monarch had not fixed it by his will, and the presenting remonstrances enumerating the grievances of which the nation wished to obtain redress.

As, during feveral centuries the monarchs of Europe feldom demanded extraordinary fubfidies of their fubjects, and the other events, which required the interpolition of the States, rarely occurred, their meetings in France were not frequent. They were fummoned occasionally by their kings, when compelled by their wants or by their fears to have recourse to the great convention of their people; but they did not, like the Diet in Germany, the Cortes in Spain, or the Parliament in England, form an effential member of the constitution, the regular exertion of whose powers was requisite to give vigour and order to government.

The crown begins to acquire legiflative authority, When the states of France ceased to exercise legislative authority, the kings began to assume it. They ventured at first on acts of legislation with great reserve, and after taking every precaution that could prevent their subjects from being alarmed at the exercise of a new power. They did not at once iffue their ordinances in a tone of authority and command. They treated with their subjects; they pointed out what was best;

and

and allured them to comply with it. By degrees, SECT. however, as the prerogative of the crown extended, and as the supreme jurisdiction of the royal courts came to be established, the kings of France assumed more openly the flyle and authority of lawgivers; and, before the beginning of the fifteenth century, the complete legislative power was vested in the crown [QQ].

HAVING fecured this important acquisition, the andthe steps which led to the right of imposing taxes were levying rendered few and eaty. The people, accustomed taxes. to fee their fovereigns iffue ordinances, by their fole authority, which regulated points of the greatest consequence with respect to the property of their fubjects, were not alarmed when they were required, by the royal edicts, to contribute certain fums towards supplying the exigencies of government, and carrying forward the measures of the nation. When Charles VII. and Louis XI. first ventured to exercife this new power, in the manner which I have already described, the gradual increase of the royal authority had fo imperceptibly prepared the minds of the people of France for this innovation, that it excited no commotion in the kingdom, and feems fcarcely to have given rife to any murmur or complaint.

WHEN the kings of France had thus engroffed Governevery power which can be exerted in government; France when the right of making laws, of levying money, becomes purely mo-

narchical.



of keeping an army of mercenaries in constant pay, of declaring war, and of concluding peace, centered in the crown, the constitution of the kingdom, which, under the first race of kings, was nearly democratical; which, under the fecond race, became an ariftocracy; terminated, under the third race, in a pure monarchy. Every thing that tended to preserve the appearance, or revive the memory, of the ancient mixed government, feems from that period to have been incustriously avoided. During the long and active reign of Francis I. the variety as well as extent of whose operations obliged him to lay many heavy impositions on his subjects, the States General of France were not once affembled, nor were the people once allowed to exert the power of taxing themselves, which, according to the original ideas of feudal government, was a right effential to every freeman.

The exercife of prerogative refrained by the privileges of the nobility; Two things, however, remained, which moderated the exercise of the regal prerogative, and reftrained it within such bounds as preserved the constitution of France from degenerating into mere despotism. The rights and privileges claimed by the nobility, must be considered as one barrier against the absolute dominion of the crown. Though the nobles of France had lost that political power which was vested in their order as a body, they still retained the personal rights and pre-eminence which they derived from their rank. They preserved a consciousness of elevation above other classes of citizens; an exemption from burdens

to which persons of inferior condition were subject; a contempt of the occupations in which they were engaged; the privilege of affurning enfigns that indicated their own dignity; a right to be treated with a certain degree of deference during peace; and a claim to various distinctions when in the field. Many of these pretentions were not founded on the words of statutes, or derived from positive laws; they were defined and ascertained by the maxims of honour, a title more delicate, but no lets facred. These rights, established and protected by a principle equally vigilant in guarding, and intrepid in defending them, are to the fovereign himself objects of respect and veneration. Wherever they fland in its way, the royal prerogative is bounded. The violence of a despot may exterminate such an order of men; but as long as it subsists, and its ideas of personal distinction remain entire, the power of the prince has limitsg.

As in France the body of nobility was very numerous, and the individuals of which it was composed retained an high sense of their own pre-eminence, to this we may ascribe, in a great measure, the mode of exercising the royal prerogative which peculiarly distinguishes the government of that kingdom. An intermediate order was placed between the monarch and his other subjects, and in every act of authority it became necessary to attend to its privileges, and not only to guard against any

De l'Esprit des Loix, liv. ii. c. 4. Dr. Ferguson's Essay on the Hist. of Civil Society, part i. sect. 10.



SECT. real violation of them, but to avoid any suspicion of supposing it to be possible that they might be violated. Thus a species of government was established in France, unknown in the ancient world, that of a monarchy, in which the power of the fovereign, though unconfined by any legal or constitutional restraint, has certain bounds set to it by the ideas which one class of his subjects entertain concerning their own dignity.

and by the Inmidiction. of the parliaments, particularly that of Paris.

THE jurisdiction of the parliaments in France, particularly that of Paris, was the other barrier which ferved to confine the exercise of the royal prerogative within certain limits. The parliament of Paris was originally the court of the kings of France, to which they committed the supreme administration of justice within their own domains, as well as the power of deciding with respect to all cases brought before it by appeals from the courts of the barons. When, in confequence of events and regulations which have been mentioned formerly, the time and place of its meeting were fixed, when not only the form of its procedure, but the principles on which it decided, were rendered regular and confiftent, when every cause of importance was finally determined there, and when the people became accustomed to refort thither as to the supreme temple of justice, the parliament of Paris rose to high estimation in the kingdom, its members acquired dignity, and its decrees were fubmitted to with deference. Nor was this the only fource of the power

power and influence which the parliament obtained. The kings of France, when they first began to assume the legislative power, in order to reconcile the minds of their people to this new exertion of prerogative, produced their edicts and ordinances in the parliament of Paris, that they might be approved of and registered there, before they were published and declared to be of authority in the kingdom. During the intervals between the meetings of the States General of the kingdom, or during those reigns in which the States General were not affembled, the monarchs of France were accustomed to confult the parliament of Paris with respect to the most arduous affairs of government, and frequently regulated their conduct by its advice, in declaring war, in concluding peace, and in other transactions of public concern. Thus there was erected in the kingdom a tribunal which became the great depository of the laws, and by the uniform tenour of its decrees, established principles of justice and forms of proceeding which were confidered as fo facred, that even the fovereign power of the monarch durst not venture to difregard or to violate them. The members of this illustrious body, though they neither poffess legislative authority, nor can be confidered as the representatives of the people, have availed themselves of the reputation and influence which they had acquired among their countrymen, in order to make a fland, to the utmost of their ability, against every unprecedented and exorbitant exertion of the prerogative. In every period of the French history, they have merited

the praise of being the virtuous but feeble guardians of the rights and privileges of the nation [RR].

Constitution and government of the Ger-

AFTER taking this view of the political state of France, I proceed to confider that of the German mas empire empire, from which Charles V. derived his title of highest dignity. In explaining the constitution of this great and complex body at the beginning of the fixteenth century, I shall avoid entering into fuch a detail as would involve my readers in that inextricable labyrinth, which is formed by the multiplicity of its tribunals, the number of its members, their interfering rights, and by the endless discusfions or refinements of the public lawyers of Germany, with respect to all these.

Its State under Charlemagne and his descendants.

THE empire of Charlemagne was a structure erected in fo short a time, that it could not be permanent. Under his immediate fuccessor it began to totter; and foon after fell to pieces. The crown of Germany was separated from that of France, and the descendants of Charlemagne established two great monarchies fo fituated as to give rife to a perpetual rivalship and enmity between them. But the princes of the race of Charlemagne who were placed on the Imperial throne, were not altogether fo degenerate, as those of the same family who reigned in France. In the hands of the former the royal authority retained fome vigour, and the nobles of Germany, though possessed of extensive privileges

as well as ample territories, did not fo early attain SECT. independence. The great offices of the crown continued to be at the disposal of the sovereign, and during a long period, fiefs remained in their original state, without becoming hereditary and perpetual in the families of the perfons to whom they had been granted.

AT length the German branch of the family of Other families are Charlemagne became extinct, and his feeble defcendants who reigned in France had funk into dignity, fuch contempt, that the Germans, without looking towards them, exercised the right inherent in a free people; and in a general affembly of the nation A. D. 911. elected Conrad, count of Franconia, emperor. After him Henry of Saxony, and his descendants the three Othos, were placed, in fuccession, on the Imperial throne, by the suffrages of their countrymen. The extensive territories of the Saxon emperors, their eminent abilities and enterprifing genius, not only added new vigour to the Imperial dignity, but raifed it to higher power and pre-eminence. Otho A. D. 952the Great marched at the head of a numerous army into Italy, and after the example of Charlemagne, gave law to that country. Every power there recognized his authority. He created popes, and deposed them, by his sovereign mandate. He annexed the kingdom of Italy to the German empire. Elated with his fucces, he assumed the title of Cæsar Augustus h. A prince, born in the heart of

h Annalista Saxo, &c. ap. Struv. Corp. vol. i. p. 246.

Germany.

SECT. Germany, pretended to be the succeffor of the emperors of ancient Rome, and claimed a right to the fame power and prerogative.

The German nob II-Ey acquire independent and fovereign authority.

But while the emperors, by means of these new titles and new dominions, gradually acquired additional authority and iplendour, the nobility of Germany had gone on at the same time extending their privileges and jurisdiction. The situation of affairs was favourable to their attempts. The vigour which Charlemagne had given to government quickly relaxed. The incapacity of fome of his fucceffors was fuch, as would have encouraged vaffals less enterprising than the nobles of that age, to have claimed new rights, and to have affumed new powers. The civil wars in which other emperors were engaged, obliged them to pay perpetual court to their subjects, on whose support they depended, and not only to connive at their usurpations, but to permit, and even to authorife them. Fiefs gradually became hereditary. They were transmitted not only in the direct, but also in the collateral line. The investiture of them was demanded not only by male but by female heirs. Every baron began to exercife fovereign jurisdiction within his own domains; and the dukes and counts of Germany took wide steps towards rendering their territories distinct and independent statesi. The Saxon emperors obferved their progress, and were aware of its

The German ecclefiaftics raifed to the fame power

tendency.

¹ Pfeffel. Abrege, p. 120. 152. Lib. Feudor. tit. i.

tendency. But as they could not hope to humble SECT. vaffals already grown too potent, unless they had turned their whole force as well as attention to that enterprise, and as they were extremely intent on their expeditions into Italy, which they could not undertake without the concurrence of their nobles. they were folicitous not to slarm them by any direct attack on their privileges and jurisdictions. They aimed, however, at undermining their power. With this view, they inconfiderately bestowed additional territories, and accumulated new honours on the clergy, in hopes that this order might ferve as a counterpoise to that of the nobility in any future strugglek.

ing the

THE unhappy effects of this fatal error in policy The fatal were quickly felt. Under the emperors of the aggrandiz-Franconian and Swabian lines, whom the Germans, by their voluntary election, placed on the A.D. 1024. Imperial throne, a new face of things appeared, and a scene was exhibited in Germany, which aftonished all Christendom at that time, and in the present age appears almost incredible. The popes, hitherto dependent on the emperors, and indebted for power as well as dignity to their beneficence and protection, began to claim a superior jurisdiction; and, in virtue of authority which they pretended to derive from heaven, tried, condemned, excommunicated, and deposed, their former masters. Nor is this to be considered

k Pfeffel. Abrege, p. 154.

SECT.

merely as a frantic fally of paffion in a pontiff intoxicated with high ideas concerning the extent of prieftly domination, and the plenitude of papal authority. Gregory VII. was able as well as daring. His prefumption and violence were accompanied with political difcernment and fagacity. He had observed that the princes and nobles of Germany had acquired fuch confiderable territories and fuch extensive jurisdiction, as rendered them not only formidable to the emperors, but disposed them to favour any attempt to circumscribe their power. He forefaw that the ecclefiaftics of Germany, raifed almost to a level with its princes, were ready to support any person who would stand forth as the protector of their privileges and independence. With both of these Gregory negotiated, and had secured many devoted adherents among them, before he ventured to enter the lifts against the head of the empire.

The contests between the popes and emperors, and the consequences of these. He began his rupture with Henry IV. upon a pretext that was popular and plaufible. He complained of the venality and corruption with which the emperor had granted the investiture of benefices to ecclefiastics. He contended that this right belonged to him as the head of the church; he required Henry to confine himself within the bounds of his civil jurisdiction, and to abstain for the future from such sacrilegious encroachments on the spiritual dominion. All the censures of the church were denounced against Henry, because

he refused to relinquish those powers which his predecessors had uniformly exercised. The most confiderable of the German princes and ecclefiaftics were excited to take arms against him. His mother, his wife, his fons, were wrought upon to difregard all the ties of blood as well as of duty, and to join the party of his enemies k. Such were the fuccessful arts with which the court of Rome inflamed the fuperflitious zeal, and conducted the factious spirit of the Germans and Italians, that an emperor, diftinguished not only for many virtues, but possessed of considerable talents, was at length obliged to appear as a supplicant at the gate of the castle in which the pope resided, and to stand there, three days, bare footed, in the depth of winter, imploring a pardon, which at length he obtained with A.D. 107%. difficulty [SS].

This act of humiliation degraded the Imperial dignity. Nor was the depression momentary only. The contest between Gregory and Henry gave rife to the two great factions of the Guelfs and Ghibellines; the former of which supporting the pretenfions of the popes, and the latter defending the rights of the emperor, kept Germany and Italy in perpetual agitation during three centuries. A regular fystem for humbling the emperors and The Impecircumscribing their power was formed, and ad-rity graduhered to uniformly throughout that period. The ally declines. popes, the free states in Italy, the nobility, and

k Annal. German. ap. Struv. i. p. 325. [SS] NOTE XLI.

ecclesiastics of Germany, were all interested in its fuccess; and notwithstanding the return of some short intervals of vigour, under the administration of a few able emperors, the Imperial authority

A.D. 1256. continued to decline. During the anarchy of the long interregnum subsequent to the death of William of Holland, it dwindled down almost to

A.D. 1273 nothing. Rodulph of Hapfburgh, the founder of the House of Austria, and who first opened the way to its suture grandeur, was at length elected emperor, not that he might re-establish and extend the Imperial authority, but because his territories and influence were so inconsiderable as to excite no jealousy in the German princes, who were willing to preserve the forms of a constitution, the power and vigour of which they had destroyed. Several of his successors were placed on the Imperial throne from the same motive; and almost every remaining prerogative was wrested out of the hands of feeble princes unable to exercise or to desend them.

A total change in the political conflitution of the enpire. During this period of turbulence and confufion, the constitution of the Germanic body underwent a total change. The ancient names of courts and magistrates, together with the original forms and appearance of policy, were preserved; but such new privileges and jurisdiction were assumed, and so many various rights established, that the same species of government no longer subsisted. The princes, the great nobility, the dignished ecclesiastics, the free cities, had taken advantage of the interreg-

num, which I have mentioned, to establish or to SECT. extend their usurpations. They claimed and exercifed the right of governing their respective territories with full fovereignty. They acknowledged no superior with respect to any point relative to the interior administration and police of their domains. They enacted laws, imposed taxes, coined money, declared war, concluded peace, and exerted every prerogative peculiar to independent states. The ideas of order and political union, which had originally formed the various provinces of Germany into one body, were almost entirely lost; and the fociety must have dissolved, if the forms of feudal fubordination had not preferved fuch an appearance of connection or dependence among the various members of the community, as preferved it from falling to pieces.

This bond of union, however, was extremely Expedients for putting feeble; and hardly any principle remained in the an end to German constitution, of sufficient force to main- this state of anarchy. tain public order, or even to afcertain personal fecurity. From the accession of Rodulph of Hapfburgh, to the reign of Maximilian, the immediate predecessor of Charles V. the empire felt every calamity which a ftate must endure, when the authority of government is fo much relaxed as to have loft its proper degree of vigour. The causes of diffension among that vast number of members, which composed the Germanic body, were infinite and unavoidable. These gave rise to perpetual private wars, which were carried on with all the

214

SECT. III.

violence that usually accompanies resentment, when unrestrained by superior authority. Rapine, outrage, exactions, became univerfal. Commerce was interrupted; industry suspended; and every part of Germany resembled a country which an enemy had plundered and left defolate. The variety of expedients employed with a view to restore order and tranquillity, prove that the grievances occasioned by this state of anarchy had grown intolerable. Arbiters were appointed to terminate the differences among the feveral states. The cities united in a league, the object of which was to check the rapine and extortions of the nobility. The nobility formed confederacies, on purpose to maintain tranquillity among their own order. Germany was divided into feveral circles, in each of which a provincial and partial jurisdiction was established, to supply the place of a public and common tribunal m.

Particularly by the institution of the Imperial Chamber.

Bur all these remedies were so ineffectual, that they ferved only to demonstrate the violence of that anarchy which prevailed, and the infufficiency of the means employed to correct it. At length Maximilian re-established public order in the empire, by instituting the Imperial Chamber, a tribunal composed of judges named partly by the emperor, A, D. 1495. partly by the feveral states, and vested with authority to decide finally concerning all differences among the members of the Germanic body. A few

¹ See above, page 53, and note xxi. Datt. de pace publica Imper. p. 25, no. 53. p. 28, no. 26. p. 35, no. 11.

Datt. patim. Struv. Corp. Hift. i. 510, &c.

years after, by giving a new form to the Aulic sect. Council, which takes cognizance of all feudal causes, and fuch as belong to the emperor's immediate jurifdiction, he restored some degree of vigour to the Imperial authority.

A.D. 1512.

But notwithstanding the salutary effects of these regulations and improvements, the political conftitution of the German empire, at the commencement of the period of which I propose to write the history, was of a species so peculiar, as not to resemble perfectly any form of government known either in the ancient or modern world. It was a complex body, formed by the affociation of feveral states, each of which possessed fovereign and independent jurisdiction, within its own territories. Of all the members which composed this united body, the emperor was the head. In his name, all decrees and regulations, with respect to points of common concern, were iffued; and to him the power of carrying them into execution was committed. But this appearance of monarchical power in the emperor was more than counterbalanced by the influence of the princes and states of the empire in every act of administration. No law extending to the whole body could pass, no resolution that affected the general interest could be taken, without the approbation of the diet of the empire. In this affembly, every fovereign prince and state of the Germanic body had a right to be prefent, to deliberate, and to vote. The decrees or Recesses of the diet were

At the beginning of the fixteenth century, the empire an affociation of fovereign States

SECT. the laws of the empire, which the emperor was bound to ratify and enforce.

Peculiarities in the nature of this affociation.

UNDER this aspect, the constitution of the empire appears a regular confederacy, fimilar to the Achæan league in ancient Greece, or to that of the United Provinces, and of the Swifs Cantons in modern times. But if viewed in another light, striking peculiarities in its political state present themselves. The Germanic body was not formed by the union of members altogether distinct and independent. All the princes and states, joined in this affociation, were originally subject to the emperors, and acknowledged them as fovereigns. Besides this, they originally held their lands as Imperial fiefs, and in consequence of this tenure owed the emperor all those services which feudal vaffals are bound to perform to their liege lord. But though this political subjection was entirely at an end, and the influence of the feudal relation much diminished, the ancient forms and institutions, introduced while the emperors governed Germany with authority not inferior to that which the other monarchs of Europe possessed, still remained. Thus an opposition was established between the genius of the government, and the forms of administration in the German empire. The former confidered the emperor only as the head of a confederacy, the members of which, by their voluntary choice, have raifed him to that dignity; the latter feemed to imply, that he is really

SECT The defects the empire

really invested with sovereign power. By this circumstance, such principles of hoslility and discord were interwoven into the frame of the Germanic The defects in the con body, as affected each of its members, rendering fitution of their interior union incomplete, and their external efforts feeble and irregular. The pernicious influence of this defect inherent in the constitution of the empire is fo confiderable, that, without attending to it, we cannot fully comprehend many transactions in the reign of Charles V. or form just ideas concerning the genius of the German government.

The emperors of Germany, at the beginning of Arifing from the the fixteenth century, were diffinguished by the limited most pompous titles, and by fuch enfigns of dig- the emnity, as intimated their authority to be superior to that of all other monarchs. The greatest princes of the empire attended, and ferved them, on some occasions, as the officers of their household. They exercifed prerogatives which no other fovereign ever claimed. They retained pretentions to all the extensive powers which their predecessors had enjoyed in any former age. But, at the same time, instead of possessing that ample domain which had belonged to the ancient emperors of Germany, and which stretched from Basil to Cologne, along both banks of the Rhine", they were stripped of all territorial property, and had not a fingle city, a fingle castle, a single foot of land, that belonged

power of



SECT. to them, as heads of the empire. As their domain was alienated, their flated revenues were reduced almost to nothing; and the extraordinary aids, which on a few occasions they obtained, were granted sparingly and paid with reluctance. princes and states of the empire, though they seemed to recognise the Imperial authority, were fubjects only in name, each of them possessing a complete municipal jurisdiction within the precincts of his own territories.

From the nature of their titles and pretenfroms.

FROM this ill-compacted frame of government, effects that were unavoidable refulted. The emperors, dazzled with the splendour of their titles and the external figns of vast authority, were apt to imagine themselves to be the real sovereigns of Germany, and were led to aim continually at recovering the exercise of those powers which the forms of the constitution seemed to vest in them, and which their predeceffors, Charlemagne and the Othos, had actually enjoyed. The princes and states, aware of the nature as well as extent of these pretenfions, were perpetually on their guard, in order to watch all the motions of the Imperial court, and to circumscribe its power within limits still more narrow. The emperors, in support of their claims, appealed to ancient forms and institutions, which the states held to be obsolete. The flates founded their rights on recent practice and modern privileges, which the emperors confidered as usurpations.

TRIS

This jealoufy of the Imperial authority, together with the opposition between it and the rights of the states, increased considerably from the time that the emperors were elected, not by the collec- which they tive body of German nobles, but by a few princes elected. of chief dignity. During a long period, all the members of the Germanic body had a right to affemble, and to make choice of the person whom they appointed to be their head. But amidst the violence and anarchy which prevailed for feveral centuries in the empire, feven princes who poffeffed the most extensive territories, and who had obtained an hereditary title to the great offices of the state, acquired the exclusive privilege of nominating the emperor. This right was confirmed to them by the Golden Bull; the mode of exercifing it was ascertained, and they were dignified with the appellation of Electors. The nobility and free cities being thus stripped of a privilege which they had once enjoyed, were less connected with a prince, towards whose elevation they had not contributed by their fuffrages, and came to be more apprehensive of his authority. The electors, by their extensive power, and the diffinguishing privileges which they polfeffed, became formidable to the emperors, with whom they were placed almost on a level in several acts of jurisdiction. Thus the introduction of the electoral college into the empire, and the authority which it acquired, instead of diminishing, contributed to strengthen, the principles of hostility and discord in the Germanic constitution.

THESE.

SECT. RIT. a man From the different forms of government effablished in the Autes parted the Germanic beniy.

THESE were further augmented by the various and repugnant forms of civil policy in the feveral states which composed the Germanic body. It is no easy matter to render the union of independent states perfect and entire, even when the genius and whether forms of their respective governments happen to be altogether fimilar. But in the German empire, which was a confederacy of princes, of ecclefiaftics, and of free cities, it was impossible that they could incorporate thoroughly. The free cities were small republics, in which the maxims and spirit peculiar to that species of government prevailed. princes and nobles, to whom supreme jurisdiction belonged, possessed a fort of monarchical power within their own territories, and the forms of their interior administration nearly resembled those of the great feudal kingdoms. The interests, the ideas, the objects of states so differently constituted, cannot be the fame. Nor could their common deliberations be carried on with the fame spirit, while the love of liberty, and attention to commerce, were the reigning principles in the cities; while the defire of power, and ardour for military glory, were the governing passions of the princes and nobility.

From the opposition betweenthe fecular and ecclefiaftical members.

THE fecular and ecclefiaftical members of the empire were as little fitted for union as the free cities and the nobility. Confiderable territories had been granted to feveral of the German bishoprics and abbeys, and fome of the highest offices in the empire having been annexed to them inalienably,

SECT.

were held by the ecclefiaftics raifed to these dignities. The younger fons of noblemen of the fecond order, who had devoted themselves to the church, were commonly promoted to these stations of eminence and power; and it was no small mortification to the princes and great nobility, to see persons raised from an inferior rank to the same level with themselves. or even exalted to superior dignity. The education of these churchmen, the genius of their profession, and their connection with the court of Rome, rendered their character as well as their interest different from those of the other members of the Germanic body, with whom they were called to act in concert. Thus another fource of jealoufy and variance was opened, which ought not to be overlooked when we are fearching into the nature of the German constitution.

> of wealth and power araong the meinbers.

To all these causes of diffension may be added From the one more, arising from the unequal distribution of distribution power and wealth among the states of the empire. The electors, and other nobles of the highest rank, not onlypossessed sovereign jurisdiction, but governed fuch extensive, populous, and rich countries, as rendered them great princes. Many of the other members, though they enjoyed all the rights of fovereignty, ruled over fuch petty domains, that their real power bore no proportion to this high prerogative. A well-compacte! and vigorous confederacy could not be formed of fuch diffimilar states. The weaker were jealous, timid, and unable either to affert



affert or to defend their just privileges. The more powerful were apt to assume and to become oppressive. The electors and emperors, by turns, endeavoured to extend their own authority, by encroaching on those feeble members of the Germanic body, who sometimes defended their rights with much spirit, but more frequently, being overawed or corrupted, they tamely surrendered their privileges, or meanly savoured the designs formed against them [TT].

All these render the Germanic body incapable of acting with union and rigour.

AFTER contemplating all these principles of difunion and opposition in the constitution of the German empire, it will be easy to account for the want of concord and uniformity, conspicuous in its councils and proceedings. That flow, dilatory, distrustful, and irresolute spirit, which characterizes all its deliberations, will appear natural in a body, the junction of whose members was so incomplete, the different parts of which were held together by fuch feeble ties, and fet at variance by fuch powerful motives. But the empire of Germany, nevertheless, comprehended countries of such great extent, and was inhabited by fuch a martial and hardy race of men, that when the abilities of an emperor, or zeal for any common cause, could rouse this unwieldy body to put forth its strength, it acted with almost irrefistible force. In the following hiftory we shall find, that as the measures on which Charles V. was most intent were often thwarted or rendered abortive by the spirit of jealousy and

[TT] NOTE XLII.

division peculiar to the Germanic constitution; so sect. it was by the influence which he acquired over the princes of the empire, and by engaging them to co-operate with him, that he was enabled to make fome of the greatest efforts which distinguish his reign.



THE Turkish history is so blended, during the View of reign of Charles V. with that of the great nations the Turketh in Europe, and the Ottoman Porte interposed so meatoften, and with fuch decifive influence, in the wars and negotiations of the Christian princes, that some previous account of the state of government in that great empire, is no less necessary for the information of my readers than those views of the constitution of other kingdoms which I have already exhibited to them.

IT has been the fate of the fouthern and more Incomes fertile parts of Asia, at different periods, to be conquered by that warlike and hardy race of men, who inhabit the vast country known to the ancients by the name of Scythia, and among the moderns by that of Tartary. One tribe of these people, called Turks or Turcomans, extended its conquests, under various leaders, and during feveral centuries, from the shore of the Caspian Sea to the Straits of the Dardanelles. Towards the middle of the fifteenth century, these formidable conquerors took Constantinople by florm, and established the feat of their government in that Imperial city. Greece, Moldavia. Wallachia, and the other provinces of the ancient kingdonts

SECT.

kingdoms of Thrace and Macedonia, together with part of Hungary, were subjected to their power.

Its despotic genius.

Bur though the feat of the Turkish government was fixed in Europe, and the fultans obtained poffession of such extensive dominions in that quarter of the globe, the genius of their policy continued to be purely Afiatic; and may be properly termed a despotism, in contradistinction to those monarchical and republican forms of government which we have been hitherto contemplating. The fupreme power was vested in sultans of the Ottoman race, that blood being deemed fo facred, that no other was thought worthy of the throne. From this elevation, these sovereigns could look down and behold all their subjects reduced to the same level before The maxims of Turkish policy do not authorize any of those institutions, which, in other countries, limit the exercise, or moderate the rigour of monarchical power: they admit neither of any great court with conflitutional and permanent jurifdiction to interpose, both in enacting laws, and in superintending the execution of them; nor of a body of hereditary nobles, whose fense of their own preeminence, whose consciousness of what is due to their rank and character, whose jealousy of their privileges circumfcribe the authority of the prince, and ferve not only as a barrier against the excesses of his caprice, but stand as an intermediate order between him and the people. Under the Turkish government, the political condition of every subject is equal. To be employed in the fervice of the Sultan

is the only circumstance that confers distinction. Even this distinction is rather official than personal, and fo closely annexed to the station in which any individual ferves, that it is scarcely communicated to the persons of those who are placed in them. The highest dignity in the empire does not give any rank or pre-eminence to the family of him who enjoys it. As every man, before he is raised to any station of authority, must go through the preparatory discipline of a long and fervile obedience, the moment he is deprived of power, he and his posterity return to the same condition with other subjects, and fink back into obscurity. It is the distinguishing and odious characteristic of Eastern despotism, that it annihilates all other ranks of men, in order to exalt the monarch; that it leaves nothing to the former, while it gives every thing to the latter; that it endeavours to fix in the minds of those who are fubject to it, the idea of no relation between men. but that of a master and of a slave, the former destined to command and to punish, the latter formed to tremble and obey [UU].

But as there are circumstances which frequently Power of the Sultan obstruct or defeat the falutary effects of the best- imited by regulated governments, there are others which contribute to mitigate the evils of the most defective forms of policy. There can, indeed, be no constitutional restraints upon the will of a prince in a despotic government; but there may be such as

° State of the Turkish Empire by Rycaut, p. 25. [UU] NOTE XLIII. Von I. Q

are

SECT.

are accidental. Absolute as the Turkish Sultant are, they feel themselves circumscribed both by religion, the principle on which their authority is founded p, and by the army, the instrument which they must employ in order to maintain it. Whereever religion interposes, the will of the sovereign must submit to its decrees. When the Koran hath prescribed any religious rite, hath enjoined any moral duty, or hath confirmed by its fanction any political maxim, the command of the Sultan cannot overturn that which an higher authority hath established. The chief restriction, however, on the will of the Sultans, is imposed by the military power. An armed force must furround the throne of every despot, to maintain his authority, and to execute his commands. As the Turks extended their empire over nations which they did not exterminate, but reduce to fubjection, they found it necessary to render their military establishment numerous and formidable. Amurath, their third Sultan, in order to form a body of troops devoted to his will, that might ferve as the immediate guards of his person and dignity, commanded his officers to feize annually, as the Imperial property, the fifth part of the youth taken in war. These, after being instructed in the Mahometan religion, inured to obedience by fevere discipline, and trained to warlike exercises, were formed into a body distinguished by the name of Fenizaries, or new foldiers. Every sentiment which enthusiasm can inspire, every mark of distinction

Origin of

the Jani-

A. D. 1362.

zaries.

and by the

military.

P Rycaut, p. 8.

that the favour of the prince could confer, were sect. employed in order to animate this body with martial ardour, and with a confciousness of its own preeminence 4: The Janizaries soon became the chief ftrength and pride of the Ottoman armies; and, by their number as well as reputation, were diffinguished above all the troops, whose duty it was to attend on the person of the Sultans [XX].

Thus, as the supreme power in every society is Their wast possessed by those who have arms in their hands, influence in the Turkuh this formidable body of foldiers; destined to be the governinstruments of enlarging the Sultan's authority, acquired, at the same time, the means of controuling it. The Janizaries in Constantinople, like the Prætorian bands in ancient Rome, quickly perceived all the advantages which they derived from being stationed in the capital; from their union under one standard; and from being masters of the perfon of the prince. The Sultans became no less fenfible of their influence and importance. The Capiculy, or foldiery of the Porte, was the only power in the empire that a Sultan or his visier had reason to dread. To preserve the fidelity and attachment of the Janizaries, was the great art of government, and the principal object of attention in the policy of the Ottoman court. Under a monarch, whose abilities and vigour of mind fit him for command, they are obsequious instruments; execute whatever he enjoins; and render his power

9 Prince Cantemir's History of the Othman Empire, p. 87. [XX] NOTE XLIV.

Q 2

irrelistible.

secr. irrefistible. Under feeble princes, or such as are unfortunate, they become turbulent and mutinous; assume the tone of masters; degrade and exalt Sultans at pleasure; and teach those to tremble, on whose nod, at other times, life and death depend.

Progress of the Turks towards donicion.

FROM Mahomet II. who took Constantinople, to Solyman the Magnificent, who began his reign a few months after Charles V. was placed on the Imperial throne of Germany, a succession of illustrious princes ruled over the Turkish empire. By their great abilities, they kept their subjects of every order, military as well as civil, submiffive to government; and had the absolute command of whatever force their vast empire was able to exert. Solyman, in particular, who is known to the Christians chiefly as a conqueror, but is celebrated in the Turkish annals as the great law-giver who established order and police in their empire, governed, during his long reign, with no less authority than wisdom. He divided his dominions into feveral districts; he appointed the number of foldiers which each should furnish; he appropriated a certain proportion of the land in every province, for their maintenance; he regulated, with a minute accuracy, every thing relative to their discipline, their arms, and the nature of their service. He put the finances of the empire into an orderly train of administration; and, though the taxes in the Turkish dominions, as well as in the other despotic monarchies of the East, are far from being confiderable, he supplied that defect by an attentive and fevere economy.

NOR

Nor was it only under fuch Sultans as Solyman, whose talents were no less adapted to preferve internal order than to conduct the opera- which they tions of war, that the Turkith empire engaged professed with advantage in its contests with the Christian Christian ftates. The long fuccession of able princes, the fixwhich I have mentioned, had given fuch vigour century. and firmnels to the Ottoman government, that it feems to have attained, during the fixteenth century, the highest degree of perfection of which its constitution was capable. Whereas the great monarchies in Christendom were still far from that state, which could enable them to act with

a full exertion of their force. Besides this, the

SECT. Advantages power in

Turkish troops in that age possessed every advantage which arises from superiority in military discipline. At the time when Solyman began his reign, the Janizaries had been embodied near a century and a half; and, during that long period, the feverity of their military discipline had in no degree relaxed. The other foldiers, drawn from the provinces of the empire, had been kept almost continually under arms, in the various wars which the Sultans had carried on, with hardly any interval of peace. Against troops thus trained and accustomed to service, the forces of the Christian powers took the field with great disadvantage. The most intelligent as well as impartial authors of the fixteenth century, acknowledge and lament the fuperior attainments of the Turks in the military art [YY]. The SECT.

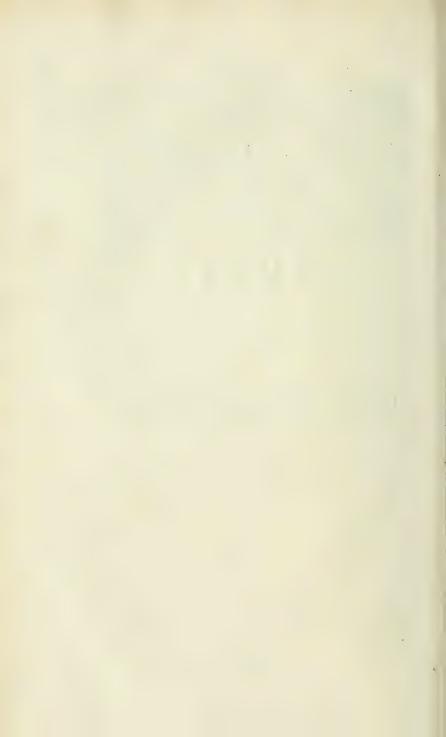
fuccess which almost uniformly attended their arms, in all their wars, demonstrates the justness of this observation. The Christian armies did not acquire that superiority over the Turks, which they now possess, until the long establishment of standing forces had improved military discipline among the former; and until various causes and events, which it is not my province to explain, had corrupted or abolished their ancient warlike institutions among the latter.

PROOFS

AND

ILLUSTRATIONS.

181



PROOFS

AND

ILLUSTRATIONS.

NOTE I. SECT. I. p. 3. [A].

THE consternation of the Britons, when invaded by the Picts and Caledonians after the Roman legions were called out of the island, may give some idea of the degree of debasement to which the human mind was reduced by long fervitude under the Romans. In their supplicatory letter to Aetius, which they call the Groans of Britain, "We know not (fay they) which way to turn us. The barbarians drive us to the fea, and the fea forces us back on the barbarians; between which we have only the choice of two deaths, either to be swallowed up by the waves, or to be flain by the sword." Histor. Gildæ. ap. Gale, Hift. Britan. Script. p. 6 .- One can hardly believe this dastardly race to be the descendants of that gallant people, who repulsed Cæfar, and defended their liberty fo long against the Roman arms.

NOTE

NOTE II. SECT. I. p. 4. [B].

THE barbarous nations were not only illiterate, but regarded literature with contempt. They found the inhabitants of all the provinces of the empire funk in effeminacy, and averse to war. Such a character was the object of fcorn to an high-spirited and gallant race of men. "When we would brand an enemy," fays Liutprandus, "with the most difgraceful and contumelious appellation, we call him a Roman; hoc folo, id est Romani nomine, quicquid ignobilitatis, quicquid timiditatis, quicquid avaritiæ, quicquid luxuriæ, quicquid mendacii, immo quicquid vitiorum est comprehendentes." Liutprandi Legatio apud Murat. Scriptor. Italic. vol, ii. pars 1. p. 481. This degeneracy of manners, illiterate barbarians imputed to their love of learning. Even after they fettled in the countries which they had conquered, they would not permit their children to be instructed in any science; " for (said they) instruction in the sciences tends to corrupt, enervate, and depress the mind; and he who has been accustomed to tremble under the rod of a pedagogue, will never look on a fword or fpear with an undaunted eye." Procop. de bello Gothor. lib. i. p. 4. ap. Scrip. Byz. edit, Venet. vol. i. A. confiderable number of years elapfed, before nations fo rude, and fo unwilling to learn, could produce historians capable of recording their transactions, or of describing their manners and institutions. that time, the memory of their ancient condition was in a great measure lost, and a few monuments remained

remained to guide their first writers to any certain knowledge of it. If one expects to receive any satisfactory account of the manners and laws of the Goths, Lombards, or Franks, during their residence in those countries where they were originally seated, from Jornandes, Paulus Warnesridus, or Gregory of Tours, the earliest and most authentic historians of these people, he will be miserably disappointed. Whatever impersect knowledge has been conveyed to us of their ancient state, we owe not to their own writers, but to the Greek and Roman historians.

NOTE III. Sect. I. p. 6. [C].

A CIRCUMSTANCE, related by Priscus in his history of the embaffy to Attila, king of the Huns, gives a striking view of the enthusiastic passion for war which prevailed among the barbarous nations. When the entertainment, to which that fierce conqueror admitted the Roman ambassadors, was ended, two Scythians advanced towards Attila, and recited a poem in which they celebrated his victories and military virtues. All the Huns fixed their eyes with attention on the bards. Some feemed to be delighted with the verses; others remembering their own battles and exploits, exulted with joy; while fuch as were become feeble through age, burst out into tears, bewailing the decay of their vigour, and the state of inactivity in which they were now obliged to remain. Excerpta ex historia Prisci Rhetoris ap. Byzant. Histor. Script. vol. i. p. 45.

NOTE

NOTE IV. SECT. I. p. 12. [D].

A REMARKABLE confirmation of both parts of this reasoning occurs in the history of England. The Saxons carried on the conquest of that country with the same destructive spirit which distinguished the other barbarous nations. The ancient inhabitants of Britain were either exterminated, or forced to take shelter among the mountains of Wales, or reduced to fervitude. The Saxon government, laws, manners, and language, were of consequence introduced into Britain, and were so perfectly established, that all memory of the institutions previous to their conquest of the country, was, in a great measure, lost. The very reverse of this happened in a subsequent revolution. A single victory placed William the Norman on the throne of England. The Saxon inhabitants, though oppressed, were not exterminated. William employed the utmost efforts of his power and policy to make his new subjects conform in every thing to the Norman standard, but without success. The Saxons, though vanquished, were far more numerous than their conquerors; when the two races began to incorporate, the Saxon laws and manners gradually gained ground. The Norman institutions became unpopular and odious; many of them fell into difuse; and in the English constitution and language, at this day, many effential parts are manifestly of Saxon, not of Norman extraction.

NOTE

NOTE V. SECT. I. p. 13. [E].

Procopius, the historian, declines, from a principle of benevolence, to give any particular detail of the cruelties of the Goths: "Lest, says he, I should transmit a monument and example of inhumanity to fucceeding ages." Proc. de bello Goth. lib. iii. cap. 10. ap. Byz. Script. vol. i. 126. But as the change, which I have pointed out as a confequence of the settlement of the barbarous nations in the countries formerly subject to the Roman empire, could not have taken place, if the greater part of the ancient inhabitants had not been extirpated, an event of fuch importance and influence merits a more particular illustration. This will justify me for exhibiting some part of that melancholy spectacle, over which humanity prompted Procopius to draw a veil. I shall not, however, difgust my readers by a minute narration; but rest satisfied with collecting some instances of the devastations made by two of the many nations which fettled in the empire. The Vandals were the first of the barbarians who invaded Spain. It was one of the richest and most populous of the Roman provinces; the inhabitants had been diffinguished for courage, and had defended their liberty against the arms of Rome, with greater obstinacy, and during a longer course of years, than any nation in Europe. But fo entirely were they enervated by their subjection to the Romans, that the Vandals, who entered the kingdom A. D. 409, completed the conquest of it with such rapidity,

that in the year 411, these barbarians divided it among them by cafting lots. The defolation occafioned by their invafion is thus described by Idatius an eye-witness: "The barbarians wasted every thing with hostile cruelty. The pestilence was no less destructive. A dreadful famine raged, to fuch a degree, that the living were constrained to feed on the dead bodies of their fellow-citizens; and all those terrible plagues desolated at once the unhappy kingdoms." Idatii Chron. ap. Biblioth. Patrum, vol. vii. p. 1233. edit. Lugd. 1677. The Goths having attacked the Vandals in their new fettlements, a fierce war enfued; the country was plundered by both parties; the cities which had escaped from destruction in the first invasion of the Vandals, were now laid in ashes, and the inhabitants exposed to fuffer every thing that the wanton cruelty of barbarians could inflict. Idatius describes their scenes of inhumanity, ibid. p. 1235. b. 1236. c. f. A fimilar account of their devastations is given by Isidorus Hispalensis, and other contemporary writers. Ifid. Chron. ap. Grot. hift. Goth. 732. From Spain the Vandals passed over into Africa, A. D. 428. Africa was, next to Egypt, the most fertile of the Roman provinces. It was one of the granaries of the empire, and is called by an ancient writer, the foul of the commonwealth. Though the army with which the Vandals invaded it did not exceed 30,000 fighting men, they became absolute masters of the province in less than two years. A contemporary author gives a dreadful account of the

the havoc which they made: "They found a province well cultivated, and enjoying plenty, the beauty of the whole earth. They carried their destructive arms into every corner of it; they dispeopled it by their devastations; exterminating every thing with fire and fword. They did not even spare the vines and fruit-trees, that those, to whom caves and inaccessible mountains had afforded a retreat, might find no nourishment of any kind. Their hostile rage could not be fatiated, and there was no place exempted from the effects of it. They tortured their prisoners with the most exquisite cruelty, that they might force from them a discovery of their hidden treasures. The more they discovered, the more they expected, and the more implacable they became. Neither the infirmities of age nor of fex; neither the dignity of nobility, nor the fanctity of the facerdotal office, could mitigate their fury; but the more illustrious their prisoners were, the more barbarously they insulted them. The public buildings which refifted the violence of the flames, they levelled with the ground. They left many cities without an inhabitant. When they approached any fortified place which their undisciplined army could not reduce, they gathered together a multitude of prisoners, and putting them to the sword, left their bodies unburied, that the stench of the carcasses might oblige the garrison to abandon it." Victor Vitenfis de persecutione Africana ap. Bibl. Patrum, vol. viii. p. 666. St. Augustin, an African, who furvived the conquest of his country by the Vandals some years, gives a similar description

of their cruelties, Opera, vol. x. p. 372. edit. 1616.—About an hundred years after the fettlement of the Vandals in Africa, Belifarius attacked and dispossessed them. Procopius, a contemporary historian, describes the devastation which that war occasioned. " Africa, says he, was so entirely dispeopled, that one might travel several days in it without meeting one man; and it is no exaggeration to fav, that in the course of the war five millions of perions perished." Proc. hist. Arcana, cap. 18. ap. Byz. Script. vol. i. 315.—I have dwelt longer upon the calamities of this province, because they are described not only by contemporary authors, but by eye-witnesses. The present state of Africa confirms their testimony. Many of the most flourishing and populous cities with which it was filled, were fo entirely ruined, that no veftiges remain to point out where they were fituated. That fertile territory which fustained the Roman empire, still lies in a great measure uncultivated; and that province, which Victor, in his barbarous Latin, called Speciositas totius terræ florentis, is now the retreat of pirates and banditti.

WHILE the Vandals laid waste a great part of the empire, the Huns desolated the remainder. Of all the barbarous tribes they were the fiercest and most formidable. Ammianus Marcellinus, a contemporary author, and one of the best of the later historians, gives an account of their policy and manners; which nearly resembles those of the Scythians described by the ancients, and of the Tartars known

known to the moderns. Some parts of their character, and feveral of their customs, are not unlike those of the savages in North America. Their passion for war was extreme. " As in polished focieties (fays Ammianus) ease and tranquillity are courted, they delight in war and dangers. He who falls in battle is reckoned happy. They who die of old age or of difease are deemed infamous. They boaft, with the utmost exultation, of the number of enemies whom they have flain, and, as the most glorious of all ornaments, they fasten the scalps of those who have fallen by their hands to the trappings of their horses." Ammian. Marc. lib. xxxi. p. 477. edit. Gronov. Lugd. 1693.—Their incurfions into the empire began in the fourth century; and the Romans, though no strangers, by that time, to the effects of barbarous rage, were aftonished at the cruelty of their devastations. Thrace, Pannonia, and Illyricum, were the countries which they first laid desolate. As they had at first no intention of fettling in Europe, they made only inroads of short continuance into the empire, but these were frequent, and Procopius computes that in each of thefe, at a medium, two hundred thoufand persons perished, or were carried off as slaves. Procop. Hist. Arcan. ap. Byz. Script. vol. i. 316. Thrace, the best cultivated province in that quarter of the empire, was converted into a defert; and, when Priscus accompanied the ambassadors sent to Attila, there were no inhabitants in some of the cities, but a few miserable people who had taken shelter among the ruins of the churches; and the Vol. I. B fields

fields were covered with the bones of those who had fallen by the fword. Prifcus ap. Byz. Script. vol. i. 34. Attila became king of the Huns, A. D. 434. He is one of the greatest and most enterprifing conquerors mentioned in history. He extended his empire over all the vast countries comprehended under the general names of Scythia and Germany in the ancient division of the world. While he was carrying on his wars against the barbarous nations, he kept the Roman empire under perpetual apprehensions, and extorted enormous subsidies from the timid and efferningte monarchs who governed it. In the year 451, he entered Gaul, at the head of an army composed of all the various nations which he had subdued. It was more numerous than any with which the barbarians had hitherto invaded the empire. The devastations which he committed were horrible: not only the open country, but the most flourishing cities, were defolated. The extent and cruelty of his devastations are described by Salvianus de Gubernat. Dei, edit. Baluz. Par. 1669. p. 139, &c. and by Idatius, ubi fupra, p. 1235. Aetius put a stop to his progress in that country by the famous battle of Chalons, in which (if we may believe the historians of that age) three hundred thousand persons perished. Idat. ibid. Jornandes de Rebus Geticis ap. Grot. Hist. Gothor. p. 671. Amst. 1665. But the next year he resolved to attack the centre of the empire, and, marching into Italy, wasted it with rage, inflamed by the fense of his late disgrace. What Italy suffered by

the Huns exceeded all the calamities which the preceding incursions of the barbarians had brought upon it. Conringius has collected several passages from the ancient historians, which prove that the devastations committed by the Vandals and Huns in the countries situated on the banks of the Rhine, were no less cruel and satal to the human race. Exercitatio de urbibus Germaniæ, Opera, vol. i. 488. It is endless, it is shocking, to follow these destroyers of mankind through so many scenes of horror, and to contemplate the havoc which they made of the human species.

Bur the state in which Italy appears to have been, during feveral ages after the barbarous nations fettled in it, is the most decisive proof of the cruelty as well as extent of their devastations. Whenever any country is thinly inhabited, trees and shrubs spring up in the uncultivated fields, and, spreading by degrees, form large foretts; by the overflowing of rivers, and the stagnating of waters, other parts of it are converted into lakes and marshes. Ancient Italy, which the Romans rendered the feat of elegance and luxury, was cultivated to the highest pitch. But so effectually did the devastations of the barbarians destroy all the effects of Roman industry and cultivation, that in the eighth century a confiderable part of Italy appears to have been covered with forests and marshes of great extent. Muratori enters into a minute detail concerning the fituation and limits of feveral of these; and proves, by the most authentic evidence, that great tracts of territory in all the R 2 different different provinces of Italy, were either over-run with wood, or laid under water. Nor did these occupy parts of the country naturally barren or of little value, but were spread over districts which ancient writers represent as extremely fertile, and which at prefent are highly cultivated. Muratori Antiquitates Italicæ medii ævi, differt. xxi. v. ii. p. 149. 152, &c. A strong proof of this occurs in a description of the city of Modena, by an author of the tenth century. Murat. Script. Rerum Italic. vol. ii. pars ii. p. 691. The state of desolation in other countries of Europe feems to have been the fame. In many of the most early charters now extant, the lands granted to monasteries, or to private persons, are distinguished into such as are cultivated or inhabited, and fuch as were eremi, desolate. In many instances, lands are granted to persons because they had taken them from the defert, ab eremo, and had cultivated and planted them with inhabitants. This appears from a charter of Charlemagne, published by Eckhart de Rebus Franciæ Orientalis, vol. ii. p. 864. and from many charters of his fucceffors quoted by du Conge, voc. eremus.—Wherever a right of property in land can be thus acquired, it is evident that the country must be extremely defolate, and thinly peopled. The first settlers in America obtained possession of land by fuch a title. Whoever was able to clear and to cultivate a field, was recognized as the proprietor. His industry merited such a recompence. The grants in the charters which I have mentioned flow from a fimilar principle, and there must have been some resemblance in the state of the countries.

PROOFS AND ILLUSTRATIONS.

Muratori adds, that during the eighth and ninth centuries, Italy was greatly infested by wolves and other wild beasts; another mark of its being destitute of inhabitants. Murat. Antiq. vol. ii. p. 163. Thus Italy, the pride of the ancient world for its fertility and cultivation, was reduced to the state of a country newly peopled and lately rendered habitable.

I AM fensible, not only that some of these descriptions of the devastations, which I have quoted, may be exaggerated, but that the barbarous tribes, in making their fettlements, did not proceed invariably in the fame manner. Some of them feemed to be bent on exterminating the ancient inhabitants; others were more disposed to incorporate with them. It is not my province either to enquire into the causes which occasioned this variety in the conduct of the conquerors, or to describe the state of thole countries where the ancient inhabitants were treated most mildly. The facts which I have produced are sufficient to justify the account which I have given in the text, and to prove, that the destruction of the human species, occasioned by the hostile invasions of the northern nations, and their fubsequent settlements, was much greater than many authors feem to imagine.

NOTE VI. SECT. I. p. 14. [F].

I have observed, Note II. that our only certain information concerning the ancient state of the barbarous nations must be derived from the R 3 Greek

Greek and Roman writers. Happily an account of the inftitutions and customs of one people, to which those of all the rest seem to have been in a great measure similar, has been transmitted to us by two authors, the most capable, perhaps, that ever wrote, of observing them with profound discernment, and of describing them with propriety and force. The reader must perceive that Cæsar and Tacitus are the authors whom I have in view. The former gives a short account of the ancient Germans in a few chapters of the sixth book of his Commentaries: the latter wrote a treatise expressly on that subject. These are the most precious and instructive monuments of antiquity to the present inhabitants of Europe. From them we learn,

1. THAT the state of society among the ancient Germans was of the rudest and most simple form. They subfifted entirely by hunting or by pasturage. Cæs. lib. vi. c. 21. They neglected agriculture, and lived chiefly on milk, cheefe, and flesh. Ibid. c. 22. Tacitus agrees with him in most of these points; De morib. Germ. c. 14, 15. 23. The Goths were equally negligent of agriculture. Prisc. Rhet. ap. Byz. Script. v. i. p. 31. B. Society was in the same state among the Huns, who disdained to cultivate the earth, or to touch a plough. Amm. Marcel. lib. xxxi. p. 475. The fame manners took place among the Alans; ibid. p. 477. While fociety remains in this simple state, men by uniting together scarcely relinquish any portion of their natural independence. Accordingly we are informed, 2. That the authority of civil government

was extremely limited among the Germans. During times of peace they had no common or fixed magistrate, but the chief men of every district dispenfed justice, and accommodated differences. Cæf. ibid. c. 23. Their kings had not absolute or unbounded power; their authority confifted rather in the privilege of advising, than in the power of commanding. Matters of small consequence were determined by the chief men; affairs of importance by the whole community. Tacit. c. 7. 11. The Huns, in like manner, deliberated in common concerning every business of moment to the society; and were not subject to the rigour of regal authority. Amm. Marcel. lib. xxxi. p. 474. 3. Every individual among the ancient Germans was left at liberty to chuse whether he would take part in any military enterprise which was proposed; there seems to have been no obligation to engage in it imposed on him by public authority. "When any of the chief men propofes an expedition, fuch as approve of the cause and of the leader rise up, and declare their intention of following him; after coming under this engagement, those who do not fulfil it, are confidered as deferters and traitors, and are looked upon as infamous." Cæs. ibid. c. 23. Tacitus plainly points at the fame custom, though in terms more obscure. Tacit. c, 11. 4. As every individual was so independent, and master in so great a degree of his own actions, it became, of consequence, the great object of every person among the Germans, who aimed at being a leader, to gain adherents, and attach them to his person and interest. These adherents Cæsar calls Ambacti

R 4

and Clientes, i. e. retainers or clients; Tacitus, Comites, or companions. The chief distinction and power of the leaders confifted in being attended by a numerous band of chosen youth. This was their pride as well as ornament during peace, and their defence in war. The leaders gained or preferved the favour of these retainers by presents of armour and of horses; or by the profuse though inelegant hospitality with which they entertained them. Tacit. c. 14, 15. 5. Another consequence of the personal liberty and independence which the Germans retained, even after they united in fociety, was their circumscribing the criminal jurisdiction of the magistrate within very narrow limits, and their not only claiming but exercifing almost all the rights of private refentment and revenge. Their magistrates had not the power either of imprisoning or of inflicting any corporal punishment on a free man. Tacit. c. 7. Every person was obliged to avenge the wrongs which his parents or friends had fustained. Their enemies were hereditary, but not irreconcilable. Even murder was compensated by paying a certain number of cattle. Tacit. c. 21. A part of the fine went to the king, or state, a part to the person who had been injured, or to his kindred. Ibid. c. 12.

Those particulars concerning the institutions and manners of the Germans, though well known to every person conversant in ancient literature, I have thought proper to arrange in this order, and to lay before such of my readers as may be less acquainted with these sacts, both because they con-

firm

firm the account which I have given of the state of the barbarous nations, and because they tend to illustrate all the observations I shall have occasion to make concerning the various changes in their government and customs. The laws and customs introduced by the barbarous nations into their new settlements, are the best commentary on the writings of Cæsar and Tacitus; and their observations are the best key to a persect knowledge of these laws and customs.

One circumstance, with respect to the testimonies of Cæfar and Tacitus concerning the Germans, merits attention. Cæfar wrote his brief account of their manners more than an hundred years before Tacitus composed his Treatise De Moribus Germanorum. An hundred years make a confiderable period in the progress of national manners, especially if, during that time, those people who are rude and unpolifhed have had much communication with more civilized flates. This was the cafe with the Germans. Their intercourse with the Romans began when Cæfar croffed the Rhine, and increased greatly during the interval between that event and the time when Tacitus flourished. We may accordingly observe, that the manners of the Germans, in his time, which Cæfar describes, were less improved than those of the same people as delineated by Tacitus. Besides this, it is remarkable that there was a confiderable difference in the state of society among the different tribes of Germans. The Suiones were fo much improved, that they began to be corrupted. Tacit. cap. 44.

The Fenni were so barbarous, that it is wonderful how they were able to subsist. Ibid. cap. 46. Whoever undertakes to describe the manners of the Germans, or to found any political theory upon the state of society among them, ought carefully to attend to both these circumstances.

BEFORE I quit this subject, it may not be improper to observe, that, though successive alterations in their institutions, together with the gradual progress of refinement, have made an entire change in the manners of the various people who conquered the Roman empire, there is still one race of men nearly in the fame political fituation with theirs, when they first settled in their new conquests; I mean the various tribes and nations of Savages in North America. It cannot then be confidered either as a digreffion, or as an improper indulgence of curiofity, to enquire whether this fimilarity in their political state has occasioned any resemblance between their character and manners. If the likeness turns out to be striking, it is a ftronger proof that a just account has been given of the ancient inhabitants of Europe, than the testimony even of Cæsar or of Tacitus.

1. THE Americans subsist chiefly by hunting and fishing. Some tribes neglect agriculture entirely. Among those who cultivate some small spot near their huts, that, together with all works of labour, is performed by the women. P. Charlevoix Journal Historique d'un Voyage de l'Amerique, 4¹⁰. Par. 1744. p. 334. In such a state of society, the common

common wants of men being few, and their mutual dependence upon each other small, their union is extremely imperfect and feeble, and they continue to enjoy their natural liberty almost unimpaired. It is the first idea of an American, that every man is born free and independent, and that no power on earth hath any right to diminish or circumscribe his natural liberty. There is hardly any appearance of fubordination either in civil or domestic government. Every one does what he pleases. A father and mother live with their children, like persons whom chance has brought together, and whom no common bond unites. Their manner of educating their children is fuitable to this principle. They never chaftife or punish them, even during their infancy. As they advance in years, they continue to be entirely masters of their own actions, and feem not to be conscious of being responsible for any part of their conduct. Ibid. p. 272, 273.—2. The power of their civil magistrates is extremely limited. Among most of their tribes, the Sachem, or chief, is elective. A council of old men is chosen to affift him, without whose advice he determines no affair of importance. The Sachems neither poffess nor claim any great degree of authority. They propose and intreat, rather than command. The obedience of their people is altogether voluntary. Ibid. p. 266. 268. _____ 3. The favages of America engage in their military enterprises, not from constraint, but choice. When war is resolved, a chief arises, and offers himself to be the leader. Such as are willing (for they compel no person) stand

up one after another, and fing their war-fong. But if, after this, any of these should refuse to follow the leader to whom they have engaged, his life would be in danger, and he would be confidered as the most infamous of men. Ibid. p. 217, 218.—4. Such as engage to follow any leader, expect to be treated by him with great attention and respect; and he is obliged to make them pre-Among the Americans, the magistrate has scarcely any criminal jurisdiction. Ibid. p. 272. Upon receiving any injury, the person or family offended may inflict what punishment they please on the person who was the author of it. Ibid. p. 274. Their refentment and defire of vengeance are exceffive and implicable. Time can neither extinguish nor abate it. It is the chief inheritance parents leave to their children; it is transmitted from generation to generation, until an occasion be found of fatisfying it. Ibid. p. 309. Sometimes, however, the offended party is appealed. A compensation is paid for a murder that has been committed. The relations of the deceased receive it; and it confifts most commonly of a captive taken in war, who being substituted in place of the person who was murdered, assumes his name, and is adopted into his family. Ibid. p. 274. The refemblance holds in many other particulars. It is fufficient for my purpose to have pointed out the fimilarity of those great features which diftinguish and characterise both people. Bochart, and other philologists of the last century, who, with more erudition than science, endeavoured

deavoured to trace the migrations of various nations, and who were apt, upon the flightest appearance of resemblance, to find an affinity between nations far removed from each other, and to conclude that they were descended from the fame ancestors, would hardly have failed, on viewing fuch an amazing fimilarity, to pronounce with confidence, "That the Germans and Americans must be the same people." But a philosopher will fatisfy himfelf with observing, "That the characters of nations depend on the state of society in which they live, and on the political institutions established among them; and that the human mind, whenever it is placed in the same situation, will, in ages the most distant, and in countries the most remote, assume the same form, and be distinguished by the same manners. .

I HAVE pushed the comparison between the Germans and Americans no further than was necessary for the illustration of my subject. I do not pretend that the state of society in the two countries was perfectly similar in every respect. Many of the German tribes were more civilized than the Americans. Some of them were not unacquainted with agriculture; almost all of them had slocks of tame cattle, and depended upon them for the chief part of their subsistence. Most of the American tribes subsistence showever, and are in a ruder and more simple state than the ancient Germans. The refemblance, however, between their condition, is greater, perhaps, than any that history affords an opportunity

opportunity of observing between any two races of uncivilized people, and this has produced a surprising similarity of manners.

NOTE VII. SECT. I. p. 14: [G].

THE booty gained by an army belonged to the army. The king himself had no part of it but what he acquired by lot. A remarkable instance of this occurs in the history of the Franks. army of Clovis, the founder of the French monarchy, having plundered a church, carried off, among other facred utenfils, a vafe of extraordinary fize and beauty. The bishop sent deputies to Clovis, befeeching him to restore the vase, that it might be again employed in the facred fervices to which it had been confecrated. Clovis defired the deputies to follow him to Soiffons, as the booty was to be divided in that place, and promised, that if the lot should give him the disposal of the vase, he would grant what the bishop defired. When he came to Soissons, and all the booty was placed in one great heap in the middle of the army, Clovis entreated, that before making the division, they would give him that vafe over and above his share. All appeared willing to gratify the king, and to comply with his request, when a fierce and haughty foldier lifted up his battle-axe, and firiking the vafe with the utmost violence, cried out with a loud voice, "You shall receive nothing here but that to which the lot gives you a right." Gregor. Turon. Histor. Francorum, lib. ii. c. 27. p. 70. Par. 1610.

NOTE

NOTE VIII. SECT. I. p. 18. [H].

THE history of the establishment and progress of the feudal system, is an interesting object to all the nations of Europe. In some countries, their juriforudence and laws are still in a great measure feudal. In others, many forms and practices established by custom, or founded on statutes, took their rife from the feudal law, and cannot be understood without attending to the ideas peculiar to it. Several authors of the highest reputation for genius and erudition, have endeavoured to illustrate this subject, but still many parts of it are obscure. I shall endeavour to trace, with precision, the progress and variation of ideas concerning property in land among the barbarous nations; and shall attempt to point out the causes which introduced these changes, as well as the effects which followed upon them. Property in land feems to have gone through four fuccessive changes among the people who fettled in the various provinces of the Roman empire.

I. WHILE the barbarous nations remained in their original countries, their property in land was only temporary, and they had no certain limits to their possessions. After feeding their flocks in one district, they removed with them, and with their wives and families, to another; and abandoned that likewise in a short time. They were not, in consequence of this impersect species of property, brought under any positive or formal obligation

to ferve the community; all their fervices were purely voluntary. Every individual was at liberty to chuse how far he would contribute towards carrying on any military enterprise. If he followed a leader in any expedition, it was from attachment, not from a sense of obligation. The clearest proof of this has been produced in Note VI. While property continued in this state, we can discover nothing that bears any resemblance to a feudal tenure, or to the subordination and military service which the seudal system introduced.

II. Upon fettling in the countries which they had fubdued, the victorious troops divided the conquered lands. Whatever portion of them fell to a foldier, he feized as the recompence due to his valour, as a fettlement acquired by his own fword. He took possession of it as a freeman in full property. He enjoyed it during his own life, and could dispose of it at pleasure, or transmit it as an inheritance to his children. Thus property in land became fixed. It was at the fame time allodial, i. e. the possessor had the entire right of property and dominion; he held of no fovereign or superior lord, to whom he was bound to do homage and perform service. But as these new proprietors were in some danger, (as has been obferved in the text) of being diffurbed by the remainder of the ancient inhabitants, and in still greater danger of being attacked by fucceffive colonies of barbarians as fierce and rapacious as themselves, they saw the necessity of coming under obligations

obligations to defend the community, more explicit than those to which they had been subject in their original habitations. On this account, immediately upon their fixing in their new fettlements, every freeman became bound to take arms in defence of the community, and, if he refused or neglected so to do, was liable to a considerable penalty. I do not mean that any contract of this kind was formally concluded, or mutually ratified by any legal folemnity. It was established by tacit conient, like the other compacts which hold fociety together. Their mutual fecurity and prefervation made it the interest of all to recognize its authority, and to enforce the observation of it. We can trace back this new obligation on the proprietors of land to a very early period in the hiftory of the Franks. Chilperic, who began his reign A. D. 562, exacted a fine, bannos justit exigi, from certain persons who had refused to accompany him in an expedition. Gregor. Turon. lib. v. c. 26. p. 211. Childebert, who began his reign A. D. 576, proceeded in the same manner against others who had been guilty of a like crime. Ibid. lib. vii. c. 42. p. 342. Such a fine could not have been exacted while property continued in its first state, and military service was entirely voluntary. Charlemagne ordained, that every freeman who possessed five mansi, i. e. fixty acres of land, in property, should march in person against the enemy. Capitul. A. D. 807. Louis le Debonnaire, A. D. 815, granted lands to certain Spaniards who fled from the Saracens, and allowed them to Vol. I. S fettle

fettle in his territories, on condition that they should serve in the army like other freemen. Capitul. vol. i. p. 500. By land possessed in property, which is mentioned in the law of Charlemagne, we are to understand, according to the style of that age, allodial land; alodes and proprietas, alodum and proprium being words perfectly synonimous. Du Cange voce Alodis. The clearest proof of the distinction between allodial and beneficiary possession, is contained in two charters published by Muratori, by which it appears, that a person might possess one part of his estate as allodial, which he could dispose of at pleasure, the other as a beneficium, of which he had only the usufruct, the property returning to the superior lord on his demise. Antio. Ital. medii zvi. vol. i. p. 559. 565. The same distinction is pointed out in a Capitulare of Charlemagne, A. p. 812, edit. Baluz. vol. i. p. 491. Count Everard, who married a daughter of Louis le Debonnaire, in the curious testament, by which he disposes of his vast estate among his children, distinguishes between what he possessed proprietate, and what he held beneficio; and it appears that the greater part was allodial. A. D. 837. Aub. Miræi Opera Diplomatica, Lovan. 1723. Vol. p. 19.

In the same manner Liber homo is commonly opposed to Vassus or Vassalus; the former denotes an allodial proprietor, the latter one who held of a superior. These free men were under an obligation

obligation to ferve the state; and this duty was confidered as fo facred, that freemen were prohibited from entering into holy orders, unless they had obtained the confent of the fovereign. The reason given for this in the statute is remarkable, " For we are informed that some do so, not so much out of devotion, as in order to avoid that military fervice which they are bound to perform. Capitul. lib. i. § 114. If, upon being fummoned, into the field, any free man refused to obey, a full herebannum, i. e. a fine of fixty crowns, was to be exacted from him according to the law of the Franks." Capit. Car. Magn. ap. Leg. Longob. lib. i. tit. 14. § 13. p. 539. This expression, according to the law of the Franks, feems to imply, that both the obligation to ferve, and the penalty on those who difregarded it, were coëval with the laws made by the Franks at their first settlement in Gaul. This fine was levied with fuch rigour, "That if any person convicted of this crime was infolvent, he was reduced to fervitude, and continued in that state until such time as his labour should amount to the value of the herebannum." Ibid. The emperor Lotharius rendered the penalty still more severe; and if any person, possessing such an extent of property as made it incumbent on him to take the field in person, refused to obey the summons, all his goods were declared to be forfeited, and he himself might be punished with banishment. Murat. Script. Ital. vol. i. pars ii. p. 153.

III. PROPERTY in land having thus become fixed, and fubject to military service, another change was introduced, though flowly, and flep by step. We learn from Tacitus, that the chief men among the Germans endeavoured to attach to their persons and interests certain adherents whom he calls Comites. These fought under their standard, and followed them in all their enterprifes. The fame custom continued among them in their new fettlements, and those attached or devoted followers were called fideles, antrustiones. homines in truste Dominica, leades. Tacitus informs us, that the rank of a Comes was deemed honourable; De morib. Germ. c. 13. The composition, which is the standard by which we must judge of the rank and condition of persons in the middle ages, paid for the murder of one in truste Dominica, was triple to that paid for the murder of a free man. Leg. Salicor. Tit. 44. § 1. & 2. While the Germans remained in their own country, they courted the favour of these Comites by prefents of arms and horses, and by hospitality. See Note VI. As long as they had no fixed property in land, these were the only gifts that they could bestow, and the only reward which their followers defired. But upon their fettling in the countries which they conquered, and when the value of property came to be understood among them, instead of those flight presents, the kings and chieftains bestowed a more substantial recompence in land on their adherents. These grants were called beneficia, because they were gratuitous 5

tuitous donations; and honores, because they were regarded as marks of diffinction. What were the services originally exacted in return for these beneficia cannot be determined with absolute precision; because there are no records so ancient. When allodial poffessions were first rendered feudal, they were not, at once, subjected to all the feudal fervices. The transition here, as in all other changes of importance, was gradual. As the great object of a feudal vaffal was to obtain protection, when allodial proprietors first confented to become vasfals of any powerful leader, they continued to retain as much of their ancient independence as was confiftent with that new relation. The homage which they did to the superior of whom they chose to hold, was called homagium planum, and bound them to nothing more than fidelity, but without any obligation either of military service, or attendance in the courts of their fuperior. Of this homagium planum some traces, though obscure, may still be discovered. Brussel. tom. i. p. 97. Among the ancient writs published by D. D. De Vic and Vaisette hist, de Langued, are a great many which they call homagia. They feem to be an intermediate step between the homagium planum mentioned by Bruffel, and the engagement to perform complete feudal fervice. The one party promifes protection, and grants certain castles or lands; the other engages to defend the person of the granter, and to affist him likewise in defending his property as often as he shall be summoned to do so. But these engage-S 3 ments

ments are accompanied with none of the feudal formalities, and no mention is made of any of the other feudal services. They appear rather to be a mutual contract between equals, than the engagement of a vassal to perform services to a superior lord. Preuves de l'hist. de Lang. tom. ii. 173. & passim. As soon as men were accustomed to these, the other feudal fervices were gradually introduced. M. de Montesquieu considers these beneficia as siefs, which originally subjected those who held them to military fervice. L'Esprit des Loix, l. xxx. c. 3. & 16. M. l'Abbé de Mably contends, that fuch as held these were at first subjected to no other fervice than what was incumbent on every free man. Observations sur l'histoire de France, I. 356. But, upon comparing their proofs and reasonings and conjectures, it seems to be evident, that as every free man, in consequence of his allodial property, was bound to ferve the community under a fevere penalty, no good reason can be affigned for conferring these beneficia, if they did not subject such as received them to some new obligation. Why should a king have stripped himself of his domain, if he had not expected that, by parcelling it out, he might acquire a right to services, to which he had formerly no title? We may then warrantably conclude, "That as allodial property subjected those who poffessed it to serve the community, so beneficia subjected fuch as held them to perional fervice and fidelity to him from whom they received these lands. These beneficia were granted originally only during

during pleasure. No circumstance relating to the customs of the middle ages is better ascertained than this; and innumerable proofs of it might be added to those produced in L'Esprit des Loix, l. xxx. c. 16. and by Du Cange voc. beneficium & feudum.

IV. But the possession of benefices did not continue long in this state. A precarious tenure during pleasure, was not sufficient to satisfy such as held lands, and by various means they gradually obtained a confirmation of their benefices during life. Feudor. lib. tit. i. Du Cange produces several quotations from ancient charters and chronicles in proof of this; Glos. voc. Beneficium. After this it was easy to obtain or extort charters rendering beneficia hereditary, first in the direct line, then in the collateral, and at last in the semale line. Leg. Longob. lib. iii. tit. 8. Du Cange, voc. Beneficium.

17 is no easy matter to fix the precise time when each of these changes took place. M. l'Ab. Mably conjectures, with some probability, that Charles Martel first introduced the practice of granting beneficia for life: Observat. tom. i. p. 103. 160; and that Louis le Debonnaire was among the first who rendered them hereditary, is evident from the authorities to which he refers; Ibid. 429. Mabillon however has published a placitum of Louis le Debonnaire, A. D. 860, by which it appears, that he still continued to grant some beneficia only during S 4

life. De Re Diplomatica, lib. vi. p. 353. In the year 889, Odo king of France granted lands to Ricabodo, fideli sur jure beneficiario & fructuario. during his own life; and if he should die, and a son were born to him, that right was to continue during the life of his fon. Mabillon ut fupra, p. 556. This was an intermediate step between fiefs merely during life, and fiefs hereditary to perpetuity. While beneficia continued under their first form, and were held only during pleasure, he who granted them not only exercised the dominium or prerogative of fuperior lord, but he retained the property, giving his vassal only the usufruet. But under the latter form, when they became hereditary, although feudal lawyers continued to define a beneficium agreeably to its original nature, the property was in effect taken out of the hands of the superior lords, and lodged in those of the vasfal. As soon as the reciprocal advantages of the feudal mode of tenure came to be understood by superiors as well as vaffals, that species of holding became so agreeable to both, that not only lands, but cafual rents, such as the profits of a toll, the fare paid at ferries, &c. the falaries or perquifites of offices, and even pensions themselves, were granted and held as fiefs; and military fervice was promifed and exacted on account of these. Morice Mem. pour servir de preuves à l'hist. de Bretagne, tom. ii. 78, 690. Bruffel, tom. i. p. 41. How abfurd foever it may feem to grant or to hold fuch precarious and casual property as a fief, there are instances of feudal tenures still more fingular. The profits profits ariting from the maffes faid at an altar, were properly an ecclefiaftical revenue, belonging to the clergy of the church or monastery which performed that duty; but these were sometimes feized by the powerful barons. In order to afcertain their right to them, they held them as fiels of the church, and parcelled them out in the fame manner as other property to their fub-vaffals. Bouquet, receuil des hist. vol. x. 238 480. The fame spirit of encroachment which rendered fiefs hereditary, led the nobles to extort from their fovereigns hereditary grants of offices. Many of the great offices of the crown became hereditary in most of the kingdoms in Europe; and so conscious were monarchs of this spirit of usurpation among the nobility, and fo folicitous to guard against it, that, on fome occasions, they obliged the persons whom they promoted to any office of dignity, to grant an obligation, that neither they nor their heirs should claim it as belonging to them by hereditary right. A remarkable instance of this is produced, Mem. de l'Acad. des Inscript. tom. xxx. p. 595. Another occurs in the Thefaur. anecdot. published by Martene & Durand, vol. i. p. 873.-This revolution in property occasioned a change corresponding to it in political government; the great vaffals of the crown, as they acquired fuch extensive possessions, usurped a proportional degree of power, depressed the jurisdiction of the crown, and trampled on the privileges of the people. It is on account of this connection, that it becomes an object of importance in history to trace the progress

gress of feudal property; for, upon discovering in what state property was at any particular period, we may determine with precision what was the degree of power possessed by the king or by the nobility at that juncture.

ONE circumstance more, with respect to the changes which property underwent, deserves attention. I have shewn, that when the various tribes of barbarians divided their conquests in the fifth and fixth centuries, the property which they acquired was allodial; but in several parts of Europe, property had become almost entirely feudal by the beginning of the tenth century. The former species of property feems to be fo much better and more defirable than the latter, that fuch a change appears furprifing, especially when we are informed that allodial property was frequently converted into feudal, by a voluntary deed of the poffesfor. The motives which determined them to a choice fo repugnant to the ideas of modern times concerning property, have been investigated and explained by M. de Montesquieu, with his usual discernment and accuracy, lib. xxxi. c. 8. The most considerable is that of which we have an hint in Lambertus Ardensis, an ancient writer quoted by Du Cange, voce Alodis. In those times of anarchy and diforder which became general in Europe after the death of Charlemagne, when there was fcarcely any union among the different members of the community, and individuals were exposed, fingle and undefended by government, to rapine and oppression, it became necessary.

necessary for every man to have a powerful protector, under whose banner he might range himself, and obtain fecurity against enemies whom fingly he could not oppose. For this reason he relinquished his allodial independence, and subjected himself to the feudat services, that he might find fafety under the patronage of some respectable fuperior. In some parts of Europe, this change from allodial to feudal property became fo general, that he who poffessed land had no longer any liberty of choice left. He was obliged to recognize some liege lord, and to hold of him. Thus Beaumanoir informs us, that in the counties of Clermont and Beauvois, if the lord or count discovered any lands within his jurisdiction, for which no fervice was performed, and which paid to him no taxes or customs, he might instantly seize it as his own; for, fays he, according to our custom no man can hold allodial property. Coust. ch. 24. p. 123. Upon the same principle is founded a maxim, which has at length become general in the law of France, Nulle terre sans Seigneur. In other provinces of France, allodial property feems to have remained longer unalienated, and to have been more highly valued. A great number of charters, containing grants, or fales, or exchanges of allodial lands in the province of Languedoc, are published Hist. gener. de Langued. par D. D. De Vic & Vaisette, tom. ii. During the ninth, tenth, and great part of the eleventh century, the property in that province feems to have been entirely allodial; and scarcely any mention of feudal tenures occurs in

the deeds of that country. The state of property, during these centuries, seems to have been perfectly fimilar in Catalonia and the country of Roufillon, as appears from the original charters published in the Appendix to Petr. de la Marca's treatife de marca five limite Hispanico. Allodial property feems to have continued in the Low Countries, to a period still later. During the eleventh, twelfth, and thirteenth centuries, this species of property appears to have been of confiderable extent. Miræi opera diplom. vol. i. 34, 74, 75, 83, 817, 296, 842, 847, 578. Some veftiges of allodial property appear there as late as the fourteenth century. Ibid. 218. Several facts which prove that allodial property subsisted in different parts of Europe long after the introduction of feudal tenures, and which tend to illustrate the distinction between these two different species of possession, are produced by M. Houard, Anciennes Loix des François, confervées dans les Coutumes Angloises, vol. i. p. 192, &c. The notions of men with respect to property, vary according to the diversity of their understandings, and the caprice of their passions. At the fame time that some persons were fond of relinquishing allodial property, in order to hold it by teudal tenure, others feem to have been folicitous to convert their fiefs into allodial property. An instance of this occurs in a charter of Louis le Debonnaire, published by Eckhard, Commentarii de rebus Franciæ Orientalis, vol. ii. p. 885. Another occurs in the year 1299, Reliquiæ MSS. omnis ævi, by Ludwig, vol. i. p. 209; and even one as late as the year 1337, ibid. vol. vii. p. 40. The fame thing took place in the Low Countries. Miræi oper. i. 52.

In tracing these various revolutions of property, I have hitherto chiesly confined myself to what happened in France, because the ancient monuments of that nation have either been more carefully preserved, or have been more clearly illustrated than those of any people in Europe.

In Italy, the fame revolutions happened in property, and succeeded each other in the same order. There is some ground, however, for conjecturing, that allodial property continued longer in estimation among the Italians, than among the French. It appears, that many of the charters granted by the emperors in the ninth century, conveyed an allodial right to land. Murat. Antiq. med. ævi, v. i. p. 575, &c. But in the eleventh century, we find some examples of perfons who refigned their allodial property, and received it back as a feudal tenure. Ibid. p. 610, &c. Muratori observes, that the word feudum, which came to be substituted in place of beneficium, does not occur in any authentic charter previous to the eleventh century. Ibid. 594. A charter of king Robert of France, A. D. 1008, is the earliest deed in which I have met with the word feudum. Bouquet receuil des historiens de Gaule & de la France, tom. x. p. 593, b. This word occurs

occurs indeed in an edict, A. D. 790, published by Bruffel, vol. i. p. 77. But the authenticity of that deed has been called in question, and perhaps the frequent use of the word feudum in it, is an additional reason for doing so. The account which I have given of the nature both of allodial and feudal possessions receives some confirmation from the etymology of the words themselves. Alode or allodium is compounded of the German particle an and lot, i. e. land obtained by lot. Wachteri Gloffar. Germanicum, voc. Allodium, p. 35. It appears from the authorities produced by him and by Du Cange, voc. fors, that the northern nations divided the lands which they had conquered in this manner. Feodum is compounded of od possession or estate, and feo wages, pay; intimating that it was stipendiary, and granted as a recompence for service. Wachterus, ibid. voc. feodum p. 441.

The progress of the feudal system among the Germans was perfectly similar to that which we have traced in France. But as the emperors of Germany, especially after the Imperial crown passed from the descendants of Charlemagne to the house of Saxony, were far superior to the contemporary monarchs of France in abilities, the Imperial vassals did not aspire so early to independence, nor did they so soon obtain the privilege of possessing their benefices by hereditary right. According to the compilers of the Libri Feu-

Feudorum, Conrad II. or the Salic, was the first emperor who rendered fiefs hereditary. Lib. i. tit. i. Conrad began his reign A: D. 1024. Ludovicus Pius, under whose reign grants of hereditary fiefs were frequent in France, succeeded his father A. D. 814. Not only was this innovation fo much later in being introduced among the vaffals of the German emperors, but even after Conrad had established it, the law continued favourable to the ancient practice; and unless the charter of the vaffal bore expressly that the fief descended to his heirs, it was prefumed to be granted only during life. Lib. feud. ibid. Even after the alteration made by Conrad, it was not uncommon in Germany to grant fiefs only for life; a charter of this kind occurs as late as the year 1376. Charta ap. Boehmer. Princip. Jur. feud. p. 361. The transmission of fiefs to collateral and female heirs. took place very flowly among the Germans. There is extant a charter, A. D. 1201, conveying the right of succession to females, but it is granted as an extraordinary mark of favour, and in reward of uncommon fervices. Boehmer. ibid. p. 365. In Germany, as well as in France and Italy, a confiderable part of the lands continued to be allodial long after the feudal mode of tenure was introduced. It appears from the Codex Diplomaticus Monasterii Buch, that a great part of the lands in the marquisate of Misnia was still allodial as late as the thirteenth century. No 31, 36, 37, 46, &c. ap. Scriptores hist. German. cura Schoetgenii & Kreysigii. Altenb. 1755. vol. ii. 183, &c. Allodial property feems

feems to have been common in another district of the same province, during the same period. Reliquiæ Diplomaticæ Sanctimonial. Beutiz. N°. 17, 36, 58. ibid. 374, &c.

NOTE IX. SECT. I. p. 19. [1].

As I shall have occasion, in another Note, to represent the condition of that part of the people who dwelt in cities, I will confine myself in this to confider the state of the inhabitants of the country. The persons employed in cultivating the ground during the ages under review may be divided into three classes: I. Servi or flaves. This feems to have been the most numerous class, and consisted either of captives taken in war, or of persons, the property in whom was acquired in some one of the various methods enumerated by Du Cange, voc. servus, v. 6. p. 447. The wretched condition of this numerous race of men will appear from feveral circumstances. 1. Their matters had absolute dominion over their perions. They had the power of punishing their flaves capitally, without the intervention of any judge. This dangerous right they possessed not only in the more early periods, when their manners were fierce, but it continued as late as the twelfth century. Joach. Potgiefferus de statu lervorum. Lemgov. 1736. 4to. lib. ii. cap. i. § 4, 10, 13, 24. Even after this jurisdiction of masters came to be restrained, the life of a slave was deemed to

be

be of fo little value, that a very flight compenfation atomed for taking it away. Idem, lib. iii. c. 6. If masters had power over the lives of their flaves, it is evident that almost no bounds would be fet to the rigour of the punishments which they might inflict upon them. The codes of ancient laws prescribed punishments for the crimes of flaves, different from those which were inflicted on free men. The latter paid only a fine or compensation; the former were subjected to corporal punishments. The cruelty of thele was in many instances excessive. Slaves might be put to the rack on very flight occasions. The laws with respect to these points are to be found in Potgiefferus, lib. iii. cap. 7. 2. and are shocking to humanity. If the dominion of masters over the lives and persons of their slaves was thus extenfive, it was no less so over their actions and property. They were not originally permitted to marry. Male and female flaves were allowed, and even encouraged, to cohabit together. But this union was not confidered as a marriage, it was called contubernium, not nuptiæ or matrimonium. Potgieff. lib. ii. c. 2. § 1. This notion was fo much established, that, during several centuries after the barbarous nations embraced the Christian religion, flaves, who lived as husband and wife, were not joined together by any religious ceremony, and did not receive the nuptial benediction from a prieft. Ibid. \$ 10, 11. When this conjunction between flaves came to be confidered as a lawful marriage, they were not permitted to marry without VOL. I.

the consent of their master, and such as ventured to do fo, without obtaining that, were punished with great feverity, and fometimes were put to death. Potgieff. ibid. § 12, &c. Gregor. Turon. hist. lib. v. c. 3. When the manners of the European nations became more gentle, and their ideas more liberal, flaves who married without their master's consent were subjected only to a fine. Potgieff. ibid. § 20. Du Cange Gloff. voc. Forifmaritagium. 3. All the children of flaves were in the fame condition with their parents, and became the property of the mafter. Du Cange Gloff. voc. servus, vol. vi. 450. Murat. Antiq. Ital. vol. i. 766. 4. Slaves were fo entirely the property of their masters, that they could fell them at pleasure. While domestic flavery continued, property in a flave was fold in the same manner with that which a person had in any other moveable. Afterwards flaves became adscripti gleba, and were conveyed by fale, together with the farm or estate to which they belonged. Potgiefferus has collected the laws and charters which illustrate this well-known circumstance in the condition of flaves. Lib. ii. c. 4. 5. Slaves had a title to nothing but fubfiftence and clothes from their mafter; all the profits of their labour accrued to him. If a master, from indulgence, gave his flaves any peculium, or fixed allowance for their subfishence, they had no right of property in what they faved out of that. All that they accumulated belonged to their master. Potgieff. lib. ii. c. 10. Murat. Antiq. Ital. vol. i. 768. Du Cange, voc. servus, vol. vi. p. 451. Con-

Conformably to the same principle, all the effects of flaves belonged to their master at their death, and they could not dispose of them by testament. Potgieff. lib. ii. c. 11. 6. Slaves were diftinguished from free men by a peculiar dress. Among all the barbarous nations, long bair was a mark of dignity and of freedom; flaves were for that reason obliged to shave their heads; and by this dislinction, how indifferent foever it may be in its own nature, they were reminded every moment of the inferiority of their condition. Potgieff. lib. iii. c. 4. For the fame reason it was enacted in the laws of almost all the nations of Europe, that no flave should be admitted to give evidence against a free man in a court of justice. Du Cange, voc. fervus, vol. vi. p. 451. Potgieff. lib. iii. c. 3.

- 2. Villani. They were likewise adscripti gleba or villa, from which they derived their name, and were transferable along with it. Du Cange, voc. villanus. But in this they differed from flaves, that they paid a fixed rent to their master for the land which they cultivated, and, after paying that, all the fruits of their labour and industry belonged to themselves in property. This distinction is marked by Piere de Fontain's Conseil. Vie de St. Louis par Joinville, p. 119. edit. de Du Cange. Several cases decided agreeably to this principle are mentioned by Murat. ibid. p. 773.
- 3. The last class of persons employed in agriculture were free men. These are distinguished T 2

by various names among the writers of the middle ages, Arimanni, conditionales, originarii, tributales, &c. These feem to have been persons who posfeffed fome fmall allodial property of their own, and besides that, cultivated some farm belonging to their more wealthy neighbours, for which they paid a fixed rent; and bound themselves likewise to perform feveral small services in prato vel in messe, in aratura vel in vinea, such as ploughing a certain quantity of their landlord's ground, affifting him in harvest and vintage work, &c. The clearest proof of this may be found in Muratori, vol. i. p. 712. and in Du Cange under the respective words above mentioned. I have not been able to discover whether these arimanni, &c. were removable at pleafure, or held their farms by leafe for a certain number of years. The former, if we may judge from the genius and maxims of the age, feems to be most probable. These persons, however, were confidered as free men in the most honourable fense of the word; they enjoyed all the privileges of that condition, and were even called to ferve in war; an honour to which no flave was admitted. Murat. Antiq. vol. i. p. 743. vol. ii. p. 446. This account of the condition of these three different classes of persons, will enable the reader to apprehend the full force of an argument which I shall produce in confirmation of what I have faid in the text concerning the wretched state of the people during the middle ages. Notwithstanding the immense difference between the first of these classes and the third, such was the spirit of tyranny

tyranny which prevailed among the great proprietors of lands, and fo various their opportunities of oppressing those who were settled on their estates, and of rendering their condition intolerable, that many free men, in despair, renounced their liberty, and voluntarily furrendered themselves as flaves to their powerful mafters. This they did, in order that their mafters might become more immediately interested to afford them protection, together with the means of fubfifting themselves and their families. The forms of fuch a furrender, or obnoxiatio, as it was then called, are preferved by Marculfus, lib. ii. c. 28; and by the anenymous author publithed by M. Bignon, together with the collection of jornulæ compiled by Marculfus, c. 16. In both, the reason given for the obnoxiatio, is the wretched and indigent condition of the person who gives up his liberty. It was still more common for free men to furrender their liberty to bishops or abbots, that they might partake of the fecurity which the varials and flaves of churches and monasteries enjoyed, in confequence of the supersticious veneration paid to the faint under whose immediate protection they were supposed to be taken. Du Cange, voc. chlatus, vol. iv. p. 1286. That condition must have been miserable indeed, which could induce a free man voluntarily to renounce his liberty, and to give up himfelf as a flave to the disposal of another. The number of flaves in every nation of Europe was immente. The greater part of the inferior class of people in France were reduced to this state at the commencement

T 3

of the third race of kings. L'Esprit des Loix, liv. xxx. c. 11. The same was the case in England. Brady Pres. to Gen. Hist. Many curious sacts, with respect to the ancient state of villains, or slaves in England, are published in Observations on the Statutes, chiefly the more ancient, 3d edit. p. 269, &c.

NOTE X. SECT. I. p. 22. [K].

INNUMERABLE proofs of this might be produced. Many charters, granted by persons of the highest rank, are preserved, from which it appears that they could not subscribe their name It was usual for persons who could not write, to make the fign of the cross in confirmation of a charter. Several of these remain, where kings and persons of great eminence affix fignum crucis manu propria pro ignoratione literarum. Du Cange, voc. Crux, voi. iii. p. 1191. From this is derived the phrase of figning instead of subscribing a paper. In the ninth century, Herbaud Comes Palatii, though supreme judge of the empire by virtue of his office, could not subscribe his name. Nouveau Trailé de Diplomatique par deux Benedictins, 4to. 10m. ii. p. 422. As late as the fourteenth century, Du Guesclin, constable of France, the greatest man in the state, and one of the greatest men of his age, could neither read nor write. St. Palaye Memoires fur l'ancienne Chevalerie, tit. ii. p. 82. Nor was this ignorance confined to laymen; the greater part of the clergy was not not many degrees superior to them in science. Many dignified ecclefiaftics could not subscribe the canons of those councils, in which they fat as members. Nouv. Traité de Diplom. tom. ii. p. 424. One of the questions appointed by the canons to be put to perions who were candidates for orders was this, 'Whether they could read the gospels and epiftles, and explain the fense of them, at least literally?' Regino Prumiensis ap. Bruck. Hist. Philos. v. iii. p. 631. Alfred the Great complained, that from the Humber to the Thames there was not a prieft who understood the liturgy in his mother-tongue, or who could translate the easiest piece of Latin; and that from the Thames to the sea, the ecclefiastics were still more ignorant. Afferus de rebus gestis Alfredi, ap. Camdeni Anglica, &c. p. 25. The ignorance of the clergy is quaintly described by an author of the dark ages: "Potius dediti gulæ quam glossæ; potius colligunt libras quam legunt libros; libentiùs intuentur Martham quam Marcum; malunt legere in Salmone quam in Solomone." Alanus de Art. Predicat. ap. Lebeuf Differt. tom. ii. p. 21. To the obvious causes of fuch universal ignorance, arising from the state of government and manners, from the feventh to the eleventh century, we may add the fcarcity of books during that period, and the difficulty of rendering them more common. The Romans wrote their books either on parchment or on paper made of the Egyptian papyrus. The latter being the cheapest, was of course the most commonly T 4 ufed. used. But after the Saracens conquered Egypt in the feventh century, the communication between that country and the people fettled in Italy or in other parts of Europe, was almost entirely broken off, and the papyrus was no longer in use among them. They were obliged, on that account, to write all their books upon parchment, and, as the price of that was high, books became extremely rare and of great value. We may judge of the fcarcity of the materials for writing them from one circumstance. There still remain several manufcripts of the eighth, ninth, and following centuries, written on parchment, from which fome former writing had been erafed, in order to substitute a new composition in its place. In this manner it is probable that feveral works of the ancients perished. A book of Livy or of Tacitus might be erased, to make room for the legendary tale of a faint, or the superstitious prayers of a missal. Murat. Antiq. Ital. vol. iii. p. 833. P. de Montfauc in affirms, that the greater part of the manuscripts on parchment which he has feen, those of an ancient date excepted, are written on perchanent from which fome former trearise had been erased. Mem. de l'Acad. des Inscript. tom. ix. p. 325. As the want of materials for writing is one reason why so many of the works of the ancients have perished, it accounts likewife for the small number of manuscripts of any kind, previous to the eleventh century, when they began to multiply from a cause which shall be mentioned.

mentioned. Hift. Liter. de France, tom. vi. p. 6, Many circumstances prove the scarcity of books during these ages. Private persons seldom possessed any books whatever. Even monasteries of confiderable note had only one missal. Murat. Antiq. vol. ix. p. 789. Lupus, abbot of Ferrieres, in a letter to the pope, A. D. 855, befeeches him to lend him a copy of Cicero de Oratore and Quintilian's Institutions, "for," fays he, "although we have parts of those books, there is no complete copy of them in all France." Murat. Ant. v. iii. p. 835. The price of books became fo high, that persons of a moderate fortune could not assord to purchase them. The counters of Anjou paid for a copy of the Homilies of Haimon, bishop of Halberstadt, two hundred sheep, five quarters of wheat, and the same quantity of rye and millet. Histoire Literaire de France par des Religieux Benedictins, tom. vii. p. 3. Even fo late as the year 1471, when Louis XI. borrowed the works of Rafis, the Arabian physician, from the faculty of medicine in Paris, he not only deposited in pledge a confiderable quantity of plate, but was obliged to procure a nobleman to join with him as furety in a deed, binding himfelf under a great forfeiture to restore it. Gabr. Naude Addit. à l'Histoire de Louys XI. par Comines, edit. de Frefnoy, tom. iv. p. 281. Many curious circumstances, with respect to the extravagant price of books in the middle ages, are collected by that industrious compiler, to whom I refer such of my readers as deem this small branch of literary history an object

of curiofity. When any person made a present of a book to a church or a monastery, in which were the only libraries during several ages, it was deemed a donative of fuch value, that he offered it on the altar pro remedio anima sua, in order to obtain the forgivenels of his fins. Murat. vol. iii. p. 836. Hift. Liter. de France, tom. vi. p. 6. Nouv. Trait. du Diplomat. par deux Benedictins, 4to. tom. i. p. 481. In the eleventh century, the art of making paper, in the manner now become universal, was invented; by means of that, not only the number of manuscripts increased, but the study of the fciences was wonderfully facilitated. Murat. ib. p. 871. The invention of the art of making paper, and the invention of the art of printing, are two confiderable events in literary history. It is remarkable that the former preceded the first dawning of letters and improvement in knowledge towards the close of the eleventh century; the latter ushered in the light which spread over Europe at the æra of the Reformation.

NOTE XI. SECT. I. p. 23. [L].

ALL the religious maxims and practices of the dark ages are a proof of this. I shall produce one remarkable testimony in confirmation of it, from an author canonifed by the church of Rome, St. Eloy or Egidius, bishop of Noyon, in the seventh century. "He is a good Christian who comes frequently to church; who presents the oblation which is offered to God upon the altar; who doth

not tafte of the fruits of his own industry until he has confecrated a part of them to God; who, when the holy festivals approach, lives chastely even with his own wife during feveral days, that with a fafe confeience he may draw near the altar of God; and who, in the last place, can repeat the Creed and the Lord's Prayer. Redeem then your fouls from destruction, while you have the means in your power; offer prefents and tythes to churchmen; come more frequently to church; humbly implore the patronage of the faints; for, if you observe thefe things, you may come with fecurity in the day of retribution to the tribunal of the eternal Judge, and fav, "Give to us, O Lord, for we have given unto thee." Dacherii Specilegium Vet. Script. vol. ii. p. 94. The learned and judicious translator of Dr. Mosheim's Ecclesiastical History, to one of whole additional notes I am indebted for my knowledge of this passage, subjoins a very proper reflection: "We fee here a large and ample description of a good Christian, in which there is not the least mention of the love of God, resignation to his will, obedience to his laws, or of justice, benevolence, and charity towards men." Mosh. Eccles. Hist. vol. i. p. 324.

NOTE XII. SECT. I. p. 23. [M].

That infallibility in all its determinations, to which the church of Rome pretends, has been attended with one unhappy confequence. As it is impossible to relinquish any opinion, or to alter any practice

practice which has been established by authority that cannot err, all its institutions and ceremonies must be immutable and everlasting, and the church must continue to observe, in enlightened times, those rites which were introduced during the ages of darkness and credulity. What delighted and edified the latter, must disgust and shock the former. Many of the rites observed in the Romish church appear manifeftly to have been introduced by a superstition of the lowest and most illiberal species. Many of them were borrowed, with little variation, from the religious ceremonies established among the ancient Heathens. Some were fo ridiculous, that if every age did not furnish instances of the fascinating influence of fuperstition as well as of the whimfical forms which it assumes, it must appear incredible that they should have been ever received or tolerated. In feveral churches of France, they celebrated a festival in commemoration of the Virgin Mary's flight into Egypt. It was called the Feath of the Ass. A young girl richly dreffed, with a child in her arms, was fet upon an afs fuperbly caparifoned. The afs was led to the altar in folemn procession. High mais was faid with great pomp. The ass was taught to kneel at proper places; a hymn no less childish than impious was fung in his praife: and when the ceremony was ended, the prieft, instead of the usual words with which he difinissed the people, brayed three times like an ass; and the people, inflead of the usual response, We bless the Lord, brayed three times in the fame manner. Du Cange, voc. Festum, vol. iii. p. 424. This ridiculous ceremony was not, like the festival of sools, and some other pageants of those ages, a mere farcical entertainment exhibited in a church, and mingled, as was then the custom, with an imitation of some religious rites; it was an act of devotion, performed by the ministers of religion, and by the authority of the church. However, as this practice did not prevail universally in the Catholic church, its abfurdity contributed at last to abolish it.

NOTE XIII. SECT. I. p. 29. [N].

As there is no event in the history of mankind more fingular than that of the Crufades, every circumstance that tends to explain or to give any rational account of this extraordinary frenzy of the human mind is interesting. I have afferted in the text, that the minds of men were prepared gradually for the amazing effort which they made in confequence of the exhortations of Peter the hermit, by feveral occurrences previous to his time A more particular detail of this curious and obfeure part of history, may perhaps appear to some of my readers to be of importance. That the end of the world was expected about the close of the tenth and beginning of the eleventh century; and that this occasioned a general alarm, is evident from the authors to whom I have referred in the text. This belief was fo universal and fo strong, that it mingled itself with civil transactions. Many charters, in the latter part of the tenth century, begin in this manner: "Appropinquante mundi termino,"

termino," &c. As the end of the world is now at hand, and by various calamities and judgments the figns of its approach are now manifest. de Langued. par D. D. de Vic Vaisette, tom. ii. Preuves, p. 86 89, 90. 117. 158, &c. effect of this opinion was, that a great number of pilgrims reforted to Jerusalem, with a resolution to die there, or to wait the coming of the Lord; kings, earls, marquiffes, bishops, and even a great number of women, besides persons of an inferior rank, flocked to the Holy Land. Glaber. Rodulph. Hift. chez Bouquet Receuil, tom. x. p. 50. 52. Another historian mentions a vast cavalcade of pilgrims who accompanied the count of Angouleme to Jerusalem in the year 1026. Chronic. Ademari, ibid. p. 162. Upon their return, these pilgrims filled Europe with lamentable accounts of the state of Christians in the Holy Land. Willerm. Tvr. Hist. ap. Gest. Dei per Franc. vol. ii. p. 636. Guibert. Abbat. Hift. ibid. vol. i. p. 476. Besides this, it was usual for many of the Christian inhabitants of Jerusalem, as well as of other cities in the East, to travel as mendicants through Europe; and by describing the wretched condition of the professors of the Christian faith under the dominion of Infidels, to extort charity, and to excite zealous perions to make some attempt in order to deliver them from oppression. Baldrici Archiepiscopi Hiftor. ap. Gesta Dei, &c. vol. i. p. 86. In the year 986, Gerbert, archbishop of Ravenna, afterwards Pope Silvester II. addressed a letter to all Christians in the name of the church of Jerusalem.

It is eloquent and pathetic, and contains a formal exhortation to take arms against the Pagan oppresfors, in order to refcue the holy city from their yoke. Gerberti Epistolæ ap. Bouquet Receuil, tom. x. p. 426. In confequence of this spirited call, some subjects of the republic of Pisa equipped a fleet, and invaded the territories of the Mahometans in Syria. Murat. Script. Rer. Italic. vol. iii. p. 400. The alarm was taken in the East, and an opinion prevailed, A. D. 1010, that all the forces of Christendom were to unite, in order to drive the Mahometans out of Palestine. Chron. Ademari ap. Bouquet, tom. x. p. 152. It is evident from all these particulars, that the ideas which led the Crufaders to undertake their wild enterprize did not arife, according to the description of many authors, from a fudden fit of frantic enthufiafm, but were gradually formed; fo that the univerfal concourse to the standard of the cross, when erected by Urban II. will appear lefs furprifing.

If the various circumstances which I have enumerated in this note, as well as in the history, are sufficient to account for the ardour with which such vast numbers engaged in such a dangerous undertaking, the extensive privileges and immunities granted to the persons who assumed the cross, serve to account for the long continuance of this spirit in Europe. I. They were exempted from prosecutions on account of debt during the time of their being engaged in this holy service. Du Cange, voc. Grucis privilegium, vol. ii. p. 1194.—2. They were exempted from paying interest

for the money which they had borrowed, in order to fit them for this facred warfare. Ibid.—3. They were exempted either entirely, or at least during a certain time, from the payment of taxes. Ibid. Ordonances des Bois de France, tom. i. p. 33.-4. They might alienate their lands without the confent of the imperior lord of whom they held. Ibid.— 5. Their persons and effects were taken under the protestion of St. Peter, and the anathemas of the church were denounced against all who should molest them, or carry on any quarrel or hostility against them, during their absence, on account of the holy war. Du Cange, ibid. Guibertus Abbas ap. Bongarf. i. p. 480. 482.-6. They enjoyed all the privileges of ecclefiaftics, and were not bound to plead in any civil court, but were declared subject to the spiritual jurisdiction alone. Du Cange, ibid. Ordon. des Rois, tom. i. p. 34. 174. 7. They obtained a plenary remission of all their fins, and the gates of heaven were fet open to them, without requiring any other proof of their penitence, but their engaging in this expedition; and thus, by gratifying their favourite passion, the love of war, they fecured to themselver mimunities which were not usually obtained, but by paying large sums of money, or by undergoing painful penances. Guibert. Abbas, p. 480. When we behold the civil and ecclefiaftical powers vying with each other, and straining their invention in order to devise expedients for encouraging and adding strength to the spirit of superstition, can we be furprifed that it should become fo general as to render it infamous, and a mark of cowardice, to decline engaging in the holy war? Willerm. Tyrienfis

Tyrienfis ap. Bongarf. vol. ii. p. 641. The hiftories of the Crufades, written by modern authors, who are apt to hibslitute the ideas and maxims of their own age in the place of those which influenced the perfons whose actions they attempt to relate, convey a very imperfect notion of the fpirit at that time predominant in Europe. The original hiftorians, who were animated themselves with the same passions which possessed their contemporaries, exhibit to us a more striking picture of the times and manners which they describe. The enthufiaftic rapture with which they account for the effects of the pope's discourse in the council of Clermont; the exultation with which they mention the numbers who devoted themselves to this holy warfare; the confidence with which they express their reliance on the divine protection; the ecstacy of joy with which they describe their taking posfethon of the holy city, will enable us to conceive, in tome degree, the extravagance of that zeal which agitated the minds of men with fuch violence, and will fuggeft as many fingular reflections to a philosopher, as any occurrence in the history of mankind. It is unnecessary to select the particular passages in the several historians, which confirm this observation. But lest those authors may be sufpected of adorning their narrative with any exaggerated description, I shall appeal to one of the leaders who conducted the enterprise. There is extant a letter from Stephen, the earl of Chartres and Blois, to Adela his wife, in which he gives her an account of the progress of the Crutaders. He describes the VOL. I. C: maders

Crusaders as the chosen army of Christ, as the servants and soldiers of God, as men who marched under the immediate protection of the Almighty, being conducted by his hand to victory and conquest. He speaks of the Turks as accursed, sacrilegious, and devoted by Heaven to destruction; and when he mentions the soldiers in the Christian army, who had died, or were killed, he is consident that their souls were admitted directly into the joys of Paradise. Dacherii Spicelegium, vol. iv. p. 257.

THE expence of conducting numerous bodies of men from Europe to Asia, must have been excessive, and the difficulty of raising the necessary sums must have been proportionally great, during ages when the public revenues in every nation of Europe were extremely small. Some account is preserved of the expedients employed by Humbert II. Dauphin of Vienne, in order to levy the money requifite towards equipping him for the Crusade, A. D. 1346. These I shall mention, as they tend to shew the considerable influence which the Crusades had, both on the state of property, and of civil government. 1. He exposed to fale part of his domains; and as the price was deftined for fuch a facred fervice, he obtained the confent of the French king, of whom these lands were held, ratifying the alienation. Hist. de Dauphiné, tom. i. p. 332. 335.-2. He iffued a proclamation, in which he promifed to grant new privileges to the nobles, as well as new immunities to the cities and towns, in his territories, in confideration of certain fums which they were inflantly

to pay on that account. Ibid. tom. ii. p. 512. Many of the charters of community, which I shall mention in another Note, were obtained in this manner.—3. He exacted a contribution towards defraying the charges of the expedition from all his fubjects, whether ecclefiaftics or laymen, who did not accompany him in person to the East. Ibid. tom. i. p. 335.-4. He appropriated a confiderable part of his usual revenues for the support of the troops to be employed in this fervice. Ibid. tom. ii. p. 518.-5. He exacted confiderable fums not only of the Jews fettled in his dominions, but also of the Lombards and other bankers who had fixed their retidence there. Ibid. tom. i. p. 338. tom. ii. 528. Notwithstanding the variety of these resources, the dauphin was involved in fuch expence by this expedition, that on his return he was obliged to make new demands on his subjects, and to pillage the Tews by fresh exactions. Ibid. tom. i. p. 344. 347. When the count de Foix engaged in the first Crusade, he raifed the money necessary for defraying the expences of that expedition, by alienating part of his territories. Hist. de Langued. par D. D. de Vic & Vaisette, tom. ii. p. 287. In like manner, Baldwin, count of Hainaut, mortgaged or fold a confiderable portion of his dominions to the bishop of Liege, A. D. 1096. Du Mont Corps Diplomatique, tom. i. p. 59. At a later period, Baldwin, count of Namur, fold part of his estate to a monastery, when he intended to assume the cross, A. D. 1239. Miræi Oper. i. 313.

NOTE XIV. SECT. I. p. 34. [O].

THE usual method of forming an opinion concerning the comparative state of manners in two different nations, is by attending to the facts which historians relate concerning each of them. Various passages might be selected from the Byzantin historians, describing the splendour and magnificence of the Greek empire. P. de Montfaucon has produced from the writings of St. Chryfostom a very full account of the elegance and luxury of the Greeks in his age. That father in his fermons enters into fuch minute details concerning the manners and customs of his contemporaries. as appear strange in discourses from the pulpit. P. de Montfauçon has collected these descriptions, and ranged them under different heads. The court of the more early Greek emperors feems to have refembled those of Eastern Monarchs, both in magnificence and in corruption of manners. The emperors in the eleventh century, though inferior in power, did not yield to them in oftentation and splendour. Memoires de l'Acad. des Inscript. tom. xx. p. 197.-But we may decide concerning the comparative state of manners in the Eastern empire, and among the nations in the west of Europe, by another method, which, if not more certain, is at least more striking. As Constantinople was the place of rendezvous for all the armies of the Crusaders, this brought together the people of the East and West as to one great interview. There are extant feveral contemporary authors.

authors, both among the Greeks and Latins, who were witnesses of this fingular congress of people, formerly strangers, in a great meeture, to each other. They describe, with finablied and candour, the impression which that new spectacle much upon their own minds. This may be confidered as the most lively and just picture of the real of tracter and manners of each people. When the Greeks fpeak of the Franks, they deferibe them as barbarians, fierce, illiterate, implement, and favage. They affume a tone of imperiority, as a more polished people, acquainted with the arts both of government and of elegance, of which the other was ignorant. It is thus Anna Commena describes the manners of the Latins, Alexias, p. 224. 231. 237. ap. Byz. Script. vol. xi. She always views them with contempt as a rude people, the very mention of whose names was sufficient to contaminate the beauty and elegance of history, p. 229. Nicetas Choniatas inveighs against them with still more violence, and gives an account of their ferocity and devastations, in terms not unlike those which preceding historians had employed in defcribing the incursions of the Goths and Vandals. Nicet. Chon. ap. Byz. Script. vol. iii. p. 302, &c. But, on the other hand, the Latin historians were flruck with aftonishment at the magnificence, wealth, and elegance which they discovered in the Eaftern empire. "O what a vast city is Conftantinople (exclaims Fulcherius Carnotenfis, when he first beheld it), and how beautiful! How many monasteries U3

monasteries are there in it, and how many palaces built with wonderful art! How many manufactures are there in the city amazing to behold! It would be aftonishing to relate how it abounds with all good things, with gold, filver, and stuffs of various kinds; for every hour ships arrive in its port laden with all things necessary for the use of man." Fulcher. ap. Bongarf. vol. i. p. 386. Willermus archbishop of Tyre, the most intelligent historian of the Crusades, seems to be fond on every occasion of describing the elegance and splendour of the court of Constantinople, and adds, that what he and his countrymen observed there exceeded any idea which they could have formed of it, nostrarum enim rerum modum & dignitatem excedunt. Willerm. Tyr. ap. Bong. vol. ii. p. 657. 664. Benjamin the Jew, of Tudela in Navarre, who began his travels A. D. 1173, appears to have been equally aftonished at the magnificence of that city, and gives a description of its splendour, in terms of high admiration. Benj. Tudel. chez les Voyages faits en 12, 13, &c. Siecles, par Bergeron, p. 10, &c. Guntherus, a French monk, who wrote a history of the conquest of Constantinople by the Crusaders, in the thirteenth century, speaks of the magnificence of that city in the fame tone of admiration: "Structuram autem ædificiorum in corpore civitatis, in ecclenis videlicet, & turribus, & in domibus magnatorum, vix ullus vel describere potest, vel credere describenti, nisi qui ea oculata fide cognoverit." Hist. Constantinop. ap. Canisii Lectiones Antiquas,

Antiquas, fol. Antw. 1725. vol. iv. p. 14. Geoffrey de Villehardouin, a nobleman of high rank, and accustomed to all the magnificence then known in the West, describes, in fimilar terms, the aftonishment and admiration of such of his fellowfoldiers as beheld Conftantinople for the first time: "They could not have believed," fays he, "that there was a city so beautiful and to rich in the whole world. When they viewed its high walls, its lofty towers, its rich palaces, its superb churches, all appeared fo great, that they could have formed no conception of this fovereign city, unless they had feen it with their own eyes." Histoire de la Conquete de Constat. p. 49. From these undisguised representations of their own feelings, it is evident, that to the Greeks, the Crufaders appeared to be a race of rude, unpolished barbarians; whereas the latter, how much foever they might contemn the unwarlike character of the former, could not help regarding them as far superior to themselves in elegance and arts.—That the state of government and manners was much more improved in Italy than in the other countries of Europe, is evident not only from the facts recorded in hiftory, but it appears that the more intelligent leaders of the Crusaders were struck with the difference. Jacobus de Vitriaco, a French hiftorian of the holy war, makes an elaborate panegyric on the character and manners of the Italians. He views them as a more polished people, and particularly celebrates them for their love of liberty, U4 and

and civil wisdom; "in consiliis circumspecti, in re sua publica procuranda diligentes & studiosi; sibi in posterum providentes; aliis subjici renuentes; ante omnia libertatem sibi desendentes; sub uno quem eligunt capitaneo, communitati sua jura & instituta dictantes & similiter observantes." Histor. Hierosol. ap. Gesta Dei per Francos, vol. ii. p. 1085.

NOTE XV. Sect. I. p. 38. [P].

THE different steps taken by the cities of Italy in order their power and dominions are remarkable. As foon as their liberties were effablished, and they began to feel their own importance, they endeavoured to render themselves masters of the territory round their walls. Under the Romans, when cities enjoyed municipal privileges and jurifdiction, the circumjacent lands belonged to each town, and were the property of the community. But as it was not the genius of the feudal policy to encourage cities, or to fhew any regard for their possessions and immunities, these lands had been seized, and shared among the conquerors. The barons to whom they were granted, erected their castles almost at the gates of the city, and exercised their jurisdiction there. Under pretence of recovering their ancient property, many of the cities in Italy attacked thefe troublesome neighbours, and dispossessing them, annexed their territories to the communities, and made made thereby a confiderable addition to their power. Several influences of this occur in the ely nih, and beginning of the twelch centuries. Murat V. q etal. vol. iv. p. 159, &c. Their am nion increating together with their power, the cities afterwards attacked f veral barons fituated at a greater distance from their walls, and obliged them to engage that they would become members of their community; that they would take the oath of fidelity to their magistrates; that they would fubject their lands to all burdens and taxes imposed by common conient; that they would defend the community against all its enemies; and that they would refide within the city during a certain specified time in each year. Murat. ibid. 163. This subjection of the nobility to the municipal government established in cities, became almost universal, and was often extremely grievous to persons accustomed to consider themselves as independent. Otto Frifingenfis thus describes the state of Italy under Frederick I. "The cities so much affect liberty, and are so solicitous to avoid the infolence of power, that almost all of them have thrown off every other authority, and are governed by their own magistrates. Infomuch that all that country is now filled with free cities, most of which have compelled their bishops to refide within their walls, and there is fcarcely any nobleman, how great foever his power may be, who is not subject to the laws and government of some city." De Gestis Frider. I. Imp. lib ii. c. 13. p. 453. In another place he observes of the

the Marquis of Montferrat, that he was almost the only Italian baron who had preserved his independence, and had not become subject to the laws of any city. See also Muratori Antichita Estensi, vol. i. p. 411, 412. That state, into which some of the nobles were compelled to enter, others embraced from choice. They observed the high degree of fecurity, as well as of credit and estimation, which the growing wealth and dominion of the great communities procured to all the members of them. They were defirous to partake of these, and to put themselves under such powerful protection. With this view they voluntarily became citizens of the towns to which their lands were most contiguous; and, abandoning their ancient castles, took up their residence in the cities at least during part of the year. Several deeds are ftill extant, by which fome of the most illustrious families in Italy are affociated as citizens of different cities. Murat. ib. p. 165, &c. A charter, by which Atto de Macerata is admitted as a citizen of Ofimo, A. D. 1193, in the Marcha di Ancona, is still extant. In this he stipulates, that he will acknowledge himfelf to be a burgels of that community; that he will to the utmost of his power promote its honour and welfare; that he will obev its magistrates; that he will enter into no league with its enemies; that he will refide in the town during two months in every year, or for a longer time, if required by the magistrates. The community, on the other hand, take him, his family, and friends, under their protection, and engage

engage to defend him against every enemy. Fr. Ant. Zacharias Anecdota medii Ævi. Aug. Taur. 1755. fol. p. 66. This privilege was deemed fo important, that not only laymen, but ecclefiaftics of the highest rank, condescended to be adopted as members of the great communities, in hopes of enjoying the fafety and dignity which that condition conferred. Murat. ibid. 179. Before the institution of communities, persons of noble birth had no other residence but their castles. They kept their petty courts there; and the cities were deserted, having hardly any inhabitants but slaves or persons of low condition. But in consequence of the practice which I have mentioned, cities not only became more populous, but were filled with inhabitants of better rank, and a custom which still subsists in Italy was then introduced, that all families of diffinction refide more conflantly in the great towns, than is usual in other parts of Europe. As cities acquired new confideration and dignity by the accession of such citizens, they became more folicitous to preserve their liberty and independence. The emperors, as fovereigns, had anciently a palace in almost every great city of Italy; when they visited that country they were accustomed to reside in these palaces, and the troops which accompanied them were quartered in the houses of the citizens. This the citizens deemed both ignominious and dangerous. They could not help confidering it as receiving a master and an enemy within their walls. They laboured therefore to get free of this

this fubjection. Some cities prevailed on the emperers to engage that they would never enter their gates, but take up their refidence without the walls: Chart, Hen. IV. Murat. ibid. p. 24. Others obtained the Imperial licence to pull down the palace fituated within their liberties, on condition that they built another in the fuburbs for the occasional reception of the emperor. Chart. Hen. IV. Murat. ibid. p. 25. These various encroachments of the Italian cities alarmed the emperors, and put them on schemes for re-establishing the Imperial jurisdiction over them on its ancient footing. Frederick Barbaroffa engaged in this enterprise with great ardour. The free cities of Italy joined together in a general league, and stood on their defence; and after a long contest, carried on with alternate fuccess, a folemn treaty of peace was concluded at Constance, A. D. 1183, by which all the privileges and immunities granted by former emperors to the principal cities in Italy were confirmed and ratified. Murat. Differt, XLVIII. This treaty of Constance was considered as fuch an important arricle in the juritprudence of the middle ages, that it is usually published together with the Libri Feudorum at the end of the Corpus Juris Civilis. The treaty fecured privileges of great importance to the con-Lederate cities, and though it reserved a considerable degree of authority and jurisdiction to the empire, yet the cities perfevered with fuch vigour in their efforts in order to extend their immunities, and the conjunctures in which they made them were to favourable, that, before the conclusion

of the thirteenth century, most of the great cities in Italy had shaken off all marks of subjection to the empire, and were become independent sovereign republics. It is not requisite that I should trace the various steps by which they advanced to this high degree of power so fatal to the empire, and so beneficial to the cause of liberty in Italy. Muratori, with his usual industry, has collected many original papers which illustrate this curious and little known part of history. Murat. Antiq. Ital. Differt. L. See also Jo. Bapt. Villanovæ Hist. Laudis Pompeii sive Lodi, in Græv. Thes. Antiquit. Ital. vol. iii. p. 888.

NOTE XVI. SECT. I. p. 40. [Q].

Long before the institution of communities in France, charters of immunity or franchise were granted to fome towns and villages by the lords on whom they depended. But thefe are very different from fuch as became common in the twelfth and thirteenth centuries. They did not erect thefe towns into corporations; they did not establish a municipal government; they did not grant them the privilege of bearing arms. They contained nothing more than a manumiffion of the inhabitants from the yoke of servitude; an exemption from certain fervices which were oppressive and ignominious; and the establishment of a fixed tax or rent which the citizens were to pay to their lord in place of impositions which he could formerly lay upon them at pleasure. Two charters

of this kind to two villages in the county of Roufillon, one in A. D. 974, the other in A. D. 1025, are still extant. Petr. de Marca, Marca, five Limes Hispanicus, App. p. 909. 1038. Such concessions, it is probable, were not unknown in other parts of Europe, and may be confidered as a step towards the more extensive privileges conferred by Louis le Gros, on the towns within his domains. The communities in France never aspired to the same independence with those in Italy. They acquired new privileges and immunities, but the right of fovereignty remained entire to the king or baron within whose territories the respective cities were situated, and from whom they receive the charter of their freedom. A great number of these charters, granted both by the kings of France, and by their great vassals, are published by M. D'Achery in his Spicelegium, and many are found in the collection of the Ordonnances des Rois de France. These convey a very striking representation of the wretched condition of cities previous to the inftitution of communities, when they were subject to the judges appointed by the fuperior lords of whom they held, and who had fcarcely any other law but their will. Each concession in these charters must be considered as a grant of some new privilege which the people did not formerly enjoy, and each regulation as a method of redreffing some grievance under which the inhabitants of cities formerly laboured. The charters of communities contain likewise the first expedients

expedients employed for the introduction of equal laws and regular government. On both these accounts they merit particular attention, and therefore, instead of referring my readers to the many bulky volumes in which they are scattered, I shall give them a view of some of the most important articles in these charters, ranged under two general heads. I. Such as respect personal safety. II. Such as respect the security of property.

I. During that state of turbulence and disorder which the corruption of the feudal government introduced into Europe, personal fafety was the first and great object of every individual; and as the great military barons alone were able to give fufficient protection to their vaffals, this was one great fource of their power and authority. But, by the inflitution of communities, effectual provision was made for the fafety of individuals, independent of the nobles. For, 1. The fundamental article in every charter was, that all the members of the community bound themselves by oath to affift, defend, and fland by each other against all aggreffors, and that they should not suffer any person to injure, distress, or molest any of their fellow-citizens. D'Acher. Spicel. x. 642. xi. 341. &c.-2. Whoever refided in any town, which was made free, was obliged, under a fevere penalty, to accede to the community, and to take part in the mutual defence of its members. D'Acher. Spic. xi. 344.—3. The communities had the privilege of carrying arms; of making war on their private enemies:

enemies; and of executing by military force any fentence which their magistrates pronounced. D'Ach. Spicel. x. 643, 644. xi. 343.—4. The practice of making fatisfaction by a pecuniary compensation for murder, assault, or other acts of violence, most inconsistent with the order of fociety, and the fafety of individuals, was abolished; and such as committed these crimes were punished capitally, or with rigour adequate to their guilt. D'Ach. xi. 362. Miræi Opera Diplomatica, i. 292.—5. No member of a community was bound to justify or defend himself by battle or combat; but, if he was charged with any crime, he could be convicted only by the evidence of witnesses, and the regular course of legal proceedings. Miræus, ibid. D'Ach. xi. 375. 349. Ordon. tom. iii. 265.-6. If any man fulpected himself to be in danger from the malice or enmity of another, upon his making oath to that effect before a magistrate, the person suspected was bound under a fevere penalty to give fecurity for his peaceable behaviour. D'Ach. xi. 346. This is the same species of security which is still known in Scotland under the name of Lawburrows. In France, it was first introduced among the inhabitants of communities, and having been found to contribute confiderably towards personal safety, it was extended to all the other members of the fociety. Establissemens de St. Louis, liv. i. cap. 28. ap. Du Cange Vie de St. Louis, p. 15.

II. THE provisions in the charters of communities concerning the fecurity of property, are not lets confiderable than those respecting personal fafety. By the ancient law of France, no person could be arrested or confined in prison on account of any private debt. Ordon. des Rois de France, tom. i. p. 72. 80. If any person was arrested upon any pretext, but his having been guilty of a capital crime, it was lawful to refcue him out of the hands of the officers who had feized him. Ordon. iii. p. 17. Freedom from arrest, on account of debt, feems likewise to have been enjoyed in other countries. Gudenus Sylloge Diplom. 473. In fociety, while it remained in its rudest and most fimple form, debt feems to have been confidered as an obligation merely personal. Men had made fome progress towards refinement, before creditors acquired a right of feizing the property of their debtors in order to recover payment. The expedients for this purpose were all introduced originally in communities, and we can trace the gradual pregress of them. I. The simplest and most obvious fpecies of fecurity was, that the person who fold any commodity should receive a pledge from him who bought it, which he restored upon receiving payment. Of this custom there are vestiges in feveral charters of community. D'Ach. ix. 185. xi. 377.—2. When no pledge was given, and the debtor became refractory or infolvent, the creditor was allowed to feize his effects with a ftrong hand, and by his private authority; the citizens of Paris are warranted by the royal mandate, " ut ubicumque, VOL. I.

et quocumque modo poterunt, tantum capiant, unde pecuniam sibi debitam integrè & plenariè habeant, & inde fibi invicem adjutores existant." Ordon. &c. tom. i. p. 6. This rude practice, suitable only to the violence of that which has been called a state of nature, was tolerated longer than one can conceive to be possible in any society where laws and order were at all known. The ordonance authorizing it was iffued A. D. 1134; and that which corrects the law, and prohibits creditors from feizing the effects of their debtors, unless by a warrant from a magistrate, and under his inspection, was not published until the year 1351. Ordon. tom. ii. p. 438. It is probable, however, that men were taught, by observing the disorders which the former mode of proceeding occasioned, to correct it in practice long before a remedy was provided by a law to that effect. Every differning reader will apply this observation to many other customs and practices which I have mentioned. New cuftoms are not always to be ascribed to the laws which authorize them. Those statutes only give a legal fanction to fuch things as the experience of mankind has previously found to be proper and beneficial.—3. As foon as the interpolition of the magistrate became requisite, regular provision was made for attaching or diffraining the moveable effects of a debtor; and if his moveables were not fufficient to discharge the debt, his immoveable property, or estate in land, was liable to the same diftress, and was fold for the benefit of his creditor. D'Ach. ix. p. 184, 185. xi. p. 348. 380. As this regulation

regulation afforded the most complete security to the creditor, it was confidered as to fevere, that humanity pointed out feveral limitations in the execution of it. Creditors were prohibited from feizing the wearing apparel of their debtors, their beds, the door of their house, their instruments of husbandry, &c. D'Ach. ix. 184. xi. 377. Upon the same principles, when the power of distraining effects became more general, the horse and arms of a gentleman could not be feized. D'Ach. ix. 185. As hunting was the favourite amusement of martial nobles, the emperor Ludovicus Pius prohibited the feizing of a hawk on account of any composition or debt. Capitul. lib. iv. § 21. But if the debtor had no other moveables, even these privileged articles might be feized.—4. In order to render the fecurity of property complete within a community, every person who was admitted a member of it, was obliged to buy or build a house, or to purchase lands within its precincts, or at least to bring into the town a confiderable portion of his moveables, per que justiciari possit, si quid forte in eum querelæ evenerit. D'Ach. xi. 326. Ordon. i. 367. Libertates S. Georgii de Esperanchia. Hist. de Dauphinè, tom. i. p. 26 - 5. That fecurity might be as perfect as possible, in some towns the members of the community feem to have been bound for each other. D'Ach. x. 644.—6. All questions with respect to property were tried within the community, by magistrates and judges whom the citizens elected or appointed. Their decisions were more equal and fixed than the fentences which depended on X 2 the

the capricious and arbitrary will of a baron, who thought himself superior to all laws. D'Ach. x. 644. 646. xi. 344. & passim. Ordon. iii. 204.-7. No member of a community could be burdened by any arbitrary tax; for the superior lord, who granted the charter of community, accepted of a fixed census or duty in lieu of all demands. Ordon. tom. iii. 204. Libertates de Calma. Hist. de Dauphinè, tom. i. p. 19. Libertates S. Georgii de Esperanchia, ibid. p. 26. Nor could the members of a community be distressed by an unequal impofition of the fum to be levied on the community. Regulations are inferted in the charters of some communities, concerning the method of determining the quota of any tax to be levied on each inhabitant. D'Ach. xi. 350. 365. St. Louis published an ordonance concerning this matter which extended to all the communities. Ordon. tom. i. 186. These regulations are extremely favourable to liberty, as they vest the power of proportioning the taxes in a certain number of citizens chosen out of each parish, who were bound by folemn oath to decide according to justice. That the more perfect security of property was one great object of those who inftituted communities, we learn, not only from the nature of the thing, but from the express words of feveral charters, of which I shall only mention that granted by Alienor Queen of England and Duchess of Guienne, to the community of Poitiers, "ut fua propria melius defendere possint, & magis integrè custodire." Du Cange voc. communia, vol. ii. p. 863.—Such are some of the capital regulations established

established in communities during the twelfth and thirteenth centuries. These may be considered as the first expedients for the re-establishment of law and order, and contributed greatly to introduce regular government among all the members of fociety. As foon as communities were instituted, high fentiments of liberty began to manifest themfelves. When Humbert lord of Beaujeu, upon granting a charter of community to the town of Belleville, exacted of the inhabitants an oath of fidelity to himfelf and fucceffors, they ftipulated, on their part, that he should swear to maintain their franchises and liberties; and, for their greater fecurity, they obliged him to bring twenty gentlemen to take the same oath, and to be bound together with him. D'Ach. ix. 183. In the same manner the lord of Moriens in Dauphine produced a certain number of persons as his sureties for the observation of the articles contained in the charter of community to that town. These were bound to furrender themselves prisoners to the inhabitants of Moriens, if their liege lord should violate any of their franchifes, and they promised to remain in custody until he should grant the members of the community redress. Hist. de Dauphine, tom. i. p. 17. If the mayor or chief magistrate of a town did any injury to a citizen, he was obliged to give fecurity for his appearance in judgment, in the fame manner as a private person; and if cast, was liable to the fame penalty. D'Ach. ix. 183. Thefe are ideas of equality uncommon in the feudal times. Communities were so favourable to freedom, that

X 3

they were distinguished by the name of Libertates. Du Cange, vol. ii. p. 863. They were at first extremely odious to the nobles, who forefaw what a check they must prove to their power and domination. Guibert Abbot of Nogent calls them execrable inventions, by which, contrary to law and justice, flaves withdrew themselves from that obedience which they owed to their masters. Du Cange, ibid. 862. The zeal with which fome of the nobles and powerful ecclefiaftics opposed the establishment of communities, and endeavoured to circumscribe their privileges, was extraordinary. A striking instance of this occurs in the contests between the archbishop of Reims and the inhabitants of that community. It was the chief bufiness of every archbishop, during a considerable time, to abridge the rights and jurisdiction of the community; and the great object of the citizens, especially when the see was vacant, to maintain, to recover, and to extend their own jurisdiction. Histoire civile & politique de la Ville de Reims, par M. Anquetil, tom. i. p. 287, &c.

THE observations which I have made concerning the low state of cities, and the condition of their inhabitants, are confirmed by innumerable passages in the historians and laws of the middle ages. It is not improbable, however, that some cities of the first order were in a better state, and enjoyed a superior degree of liberty. Under the Roman government, the municipal government established in cities was extremely savourable to liberty. The jurisdiction

suritdiction of the fenate in each corporation, and the privileges of the citizens, were both extensive. There is reason to believe, that some of the greater cities which escaped the destructive rage of the barbarous nations, still retained their ancient form of government, at least in a great measure. They were governed by a council of citizens, and by magistrates whom they themselves elected. Very strong presumptions in favour of this opinion are produced by M. l' Abbé De Bos, Hist. Crit. de la Mon. Franc. tom. i. p. 18, &c. tom. ii. p. 524. edit. 1742. It appears from some of the charters of community to cities, granted in the twelfth and thirteenth centuries, that these only confirm the privileges poffessed by the inhabitants previous to the establishment of the community. D'Acher. Spiceleg. vol. xi. p. 345. Other cities claimed their privileges, as having possessed them without interruption from the times of the Romans. Hift. Crit. de la Mon. Franc. tom. ii. p. 333. But the number of cities which enjoyed fuch immunities was fo fmall, as hardly in any degree to diminish the force of my conclusions in the text,

NOTE XVII. SECT. I. p. 40. [R].

HAVING given a full account of the establishment as well as effects of communities in Italy and France, it will be necessary to inquire with some attention into the progress of cities and of municipal government in Germany. The ancient Germans had no cities. Even in their hamlets or villages

they did not build their houses contiguous to each other. Tacit. de Mor. Germ. cap. 16. They confidered it as a badge of fervitude to be obliged to dwell in a city furrounded with walls. When one of their tribes had shaken off the Roman yoke, their countrymen required of them, as an evidence of their having recovered liberty, to demolish the walls of a town which the Romans had built in their country. Even the fiercest animals, said they, lose their spirit and courage when they are confined. Tacit. Histor. lib. iv. c. 64. The Romans built feveral cities of note on the banks of the Rhine. But in all the vast countries from that river to the coasts of the Baltic, there was hardly one city previous to the ninth century of the Christian æra. Conringius Exercitatio de Urbibus Germaniæ, Oper. vol. i. § 25. 27. 31, &c. Heineccius differs from Conringius with respect to this. But even, after allowing to his arguments and authorities their ntmost force, they prove only, that there were a few places in those extensive regions on which some historians have bestowed the name of towns. Elem. Jur. German. lib. i. § 102. Under Charlemagne, and the Emperors of his family, as the political state of Germany began to improve, feveral cities were founded, and men became accustomed to affociate and to live together in one place. Charlemagne founded two archbishoprics and nine bishoprics in the most considerable towns of Germany. Aub. Miræi Opera Diplomatica, vol. i. p. 16. His fuccessors increased the number of these; and as bishops fixed their residence in the chief

chief town of their diocele, and performed religious functions there, that induced many people to fettle in them. Conring. ibid. § 48. But Henry, furnamed the Fowler, who began his reign A.D. 920, must be considered as the great founder of cities in Germany. The empire was at that time infested by the incursions of the Hungarians and other barbarous people. In order to oppose them, Henry encouraged his subjects to settle in cities, which he furrounded with walls foreightened by towers. He enjoined or perfuaded a certain proportion of the nobility to fix their residence in the towns, and thus rendered the condition of citizens more honourable than it had been formerly. Wittikindus Annal. lib. i. ap. Conring. § 82. From this period the number of cities continued to increase, and they became more populous and more wealthy. But cities in Germany were still destirute of municipal liberty or jurisdiction. Such of them as were fituated in the Imperial demefnes, were fubject to the Emperors. Their Comites, Migi, and other judges, presided in them, and dispensed justice. Towns situated on the estate of a baron, were part of his fief, and he or his officers exercifed a fimilar jurisdiction in them. Conging. ibid. § 73, 74. Heinec. Elem. Jur. Germ. lib. i. \$ 104. The Germans borrowed the inftitution of communities from the Italians. Knipschildius Tractatus Politico-Histor. Jurid. de Civitatum Imperialium Juribus, vol. i. lib. i. cap. 5. N° 23. Frederick Barbaroffa was the first Emperor who, from the fame political confideration that influenced Louis le Gros.

Gros, multiplied communities in order to abridge the power of the nobles. Pfeffel Abregè de l'Hiftoire & du Droit Publique d'Allemagne, 4to. p. 297. From the reign of Henry the Fowler, to the time when the German cities acquired full possession of their immunities, various circumstances contributed to their increase. The establishment of bishoprics (already mentioned) and the building of cathedrals, naturally induced many people to fettle near the chief place of worship. It became the custom to hold councils and courts of judicature of every kind, ecclefiaftical as well as civil, in cities. In the eleventh century, many flaves were enfranchized, the greater part of whom fettled in cities. Several mines were discovered and wrought in different provinces, which drew together fuch a concourfe of people, as gave rife to feveral cities, and increased the number of inhabitants in others. Conring. § 105. The cities began in the thirteenth century to form leagues for their mutual defence, and for repressing the disorders occasioned by the private wars among the barons, as well as by their exactions. This rendered the condition of the inhabitants of cities more secure than that of any other order of men, and allured many to become members of their communities. Conring. § 94. There were inhabitants of three different ranks in the towns of Germany: the nobles, or familiæ; the citizens, or liberi; and the artisans, who were flaves, or homines proprii. Knipschild. lib. ii. cap. 29. N° 13. Henry V. who began his reign A. D. 1106, enfranchised the slaves who were artifans

artifans or inhabitants in feveral towns, and gave them the rank of citizens or liberi. Pfeffel, p. 254. Knipsch. lib. ii. c. 29. No 113. 119. Though the cities in Germany did not acquire liberty to early as those in France, they extended their privileges much farther. All the Imperial and free cities, the number of which is confiderable, acquired the full right of being immediate; by which term, in the German jurisprudence, we are to understand, that they are subject to the empire alone, and poffess within their own precincts all the rights of complete and independent fovereignty. The various privileges of the Imperial cities, the great guardians of the Germanic liberties, are enumerated by Knipschild, lib. ii. The most important articles are generally known, and it would be improper to enter into any disquisition concerning minute particulars.

NOTE XVIII. SECT. I. p. 40. [S].

The Spanish historians are almost entirely silent concerning the origin and progress of communities in that kingdom; so that I cannot fix, with any degree of certainty, the time and manner of their first introduction there. It appears, however, from Mariana, vol. ii. p. 221. fol. Hagæ, 1736, that in the year 1350, eighteen cities had obtained a feat in the Cortes of Castile. From the account, which will be given of their constitution and pretensions, Sect. III. of this volume, it appears that their privileges and form of government were

the same with those of the other feudal corporations; and this, as well as the perfect fimilarity of political inflitutions and transactions in all the feudal kingdoms, may lead us to conclude, that communities were introduced there in the same manner, and probably about the fame time, as in the other nations of Europe. In Aragon, as I shall have occasion to observe in a subsequent Note, cities feem early to have acquired extensive immunities, together with a share in the legislature. In the year 1118, the citizens of Saragoffa had not only attained political liberty, but they were declared to be of equal rank with the nobles of the fecond class; and many other immunities, unknown to persons in their rank of life in other parts of Europe, were conferred upon them. Zurita Annales de Aragon, tom. i. p. 44. England, the establishment of communities corporations was posterior to the Conquest. The practice was borrowed from France, and the privileges granted by the crown were perfectly fimilar to those which I have enumerated. But as this part of history is well known to most of my readers, I shall, without entering into any critical or minute discussion, refer them to authors who have fully illustrated this interesting point in the English history. Brady's Treatise of Boroughs. Madox Firma Burgi, cap. i. fect. ix. Hume's History of England, vol. i. append. i. and ii. It is not improbable that some of the towns in England were formed into corporations under the Saxon Kings, and that the charters granted by the Kings of 13

of the Norman race were not charters of enfranchifement from a state of flavery, but a confirmation of privileges which they already enjoyed. See Lord Lyttelton's History of Henry II. vol. ii. p. 317. The English cities, however, were very inconfiderable in the twelfth century. A clear proof of this occurs in the history to which I last referred. Fitzstephen, a contemporary author, gives a description of the city of London in the reign of Henry II. and the terms in which he speaks of its trade, its wealth, and the splendour of its inhabitants, would fuggest no inadequate idea of its state at prefent, when it is the greatest and most opulent city of Europe. But all ideas of grandeur and magnificence are merely comparative; and every description of them in general terms is very apt to deceive. It appears from Peter of Blois, archdeacon of London, who flourished in the same reign, and who had good opportunity of being well informed, that this city, of which Fitzstephen gives fuch a pompous account, contained no more than forty thousand inhabitants. Ibid. 315, 316. The other cities were fmall in proportion, and were not in a condition to extort any extensive privileges. That the constitution of the boroughs in Scotland, in many circumflances, refembled that of the towns in France and England, is manifest from the Leges Burgorum, annexed to the Regiam Majestatem.

NOTE XIX. SECT. I. p. 46. [T].

Soon after the introduction of the third cflate into the national council, the spirit of liberty which

which that excited in France began to produce conspicuous effects. In several provinces of France the nobility and communities formed affociations, whereby they bound themselves to defend their rights and privileges against the formidable and arbitrary proceedings of the King. The Count de Boulainvilliers has preserved a copy of one of these affociations, dated in the year 1314, twelve years after the admission of the deputies from towns into the States General. Histoire de l'ancien Gouvernement de la France, tom. ii. p. 94. The vigour with which the people afferted and prepared to maintain their rights, obliged their fovereigns to respect them. Six years after this affociation, Philip the Long iffued a writ of fummons to the community of Narbonne, in the following terms: " Philip, by the grace, &c. to our well-beloved, &c. As we defire with all our heart, and above all other things, to govern our kingdom and people in peace and tranquillity, by the help of God; and to reform our faid kingdom in fo far as it ftands in need thereof, for the public good, and for the benefit of our fubjects, who in times past have been aggrieved and oppressed in diverse manners by the malice of fundry persons, as we have learned by common report, as weil as by the information of good men worthy of credit, and we having determined in our council which we have called to meet in our good city, &c. to give redress to the utnish of our power, by all ways and means possible, according to reason and justice, and willing that this should be done with folemnity and deliberation by the advice of the prelates,

prelates, barons, and good towns of our realm, and particularly of you, and that it should be transacted agreeably to the will of God, and for the good of our people, therefore we command," &c. Mably, Observat. ii. App. p. 386. I shall allow thele to be only the formal words of a public and legal flyle; but the ideas are fingular, and much more liberal and enlarged than one could expect in that age. A popular monarch of Great Britain could hardly address himself to parliament, in terms more favourable to public liberty. There occurs in the history of France a striking inflance of the progress which the principles of liberty had made in that kingdom, and of the influence which the deputies of towns bad acquired in the States General. During the calamities in which the war with England, and the captivity of King John, had involved France, the States General made a hold effort to extend their own privileges and jurisdiction. The regulations established by the States, held A. D. 1355, concerning the mode of levying taxes, the administration of which they vested not in the crown, but in commissioners appointed by the States; concerning the coining of money; concerning the redrefs of the grievance of purveyance; concerning the regular administration of justice; are much more fuitable to the genius of a republican government than that of a feudal monarchy. This curious statute is published, Ordon. tom. iii. p. 19. Such as have not an opportunity to confult that large collection, will find an abridgment of it in Hii.

Hist. de France par Villaret, tom. ix. p. 130. or in Histoire de Boulainv. tom. ii. 213. The French historians represent the bishop of Laon, and Marcel Provott of the merchants of Paris, who had the chief direction of this affembly, as feditious tribunes, violent, interested, ambitious, and aiming at innovations subversive of the constitution and government of their country. That may have been the cafe, but their men possessed the confidence of the people; and the measures which they proposed as the most popular and acceptable, as well as most likely to increase their own influence, plainly prove that the fpirit of liberty had fpread wonderfully, and that the ideas which then prevailed in France concerning government were extremely liberal. The States General held at Paris A. D. 1355, confided of about eight hundred members, and above one half of thele were deputies from towns. M. Secoutle Pref. a Ordon. tom. iii. p. 48. It appears that in all the different affemblies of the State, held during the reign of John, the reprefentatives of towns had great influence, and in every relieft the third State was confidered as co-ordinate and equal to either of the other two. Ibid. passim. These spirited efforts were made in France long before the House of Commons in England acquired any confiderable influence in the legislature. As the feudal system was carried to its utmost height in France sooner than in England, to it began to decline fooner in the former than in the latter kingdom. In England, almost all attempts to establish or to extend the

the liberty of the people have been fuccessful; in France they have proved unfortunate. What were the accidental events, or political causes, which occasioned this difference, it is not my present business to enquire.

NOTE XX. SECT. I. p. 48. [U].

In a former Note, No. VIII. I have enquired into the condition of that part of the people which was employed in agriculture; and have represented the various hardships and calamities of their situation. When charters of liberty or manumission were granted to fuch persons, they contained four concessions corresponding to the four capital grievances to which men in a state of servitude are subject. 1. The right of disposing of their persons by fale or grant was relinquished. 2. Power was given to them of conveying their property and effects by will or any other legal deed. Or if they happened to die intestate, it was provided that their property should go to their lawful heirs in the same manner as the property of other persons. 3. The fervices and taxes which they owed to their fuperior or liege lord, which were formerly arbitrary and imposed at pleasure, are precisely ascertained. 4. They are allowed the privilege of marrying according to their own inclination; formerly they could contract no marriage without their lord's permission, and with no person but one of his flaves. All these particulars are found united in the charter granted Habitatoribus Montis-Britonis, Vol. I. A. D. A. D. 1376. Hist. de Dauphine, tom. i. p. 81. Many circumstances concurred with those which I have mentioned in the text in procuring them deliverance from that wretched state. The gentle spirit of the Christian religion; the doctrines which it teaches, concerning the original equality of mankind; its tenets with respect to the divine government, and the impartial eye with which the Almighty regards men of every condition, and admits them to a participation of his benefits, are all inconfistent with servitude. But in this, as in many other instances, considerations of interest, and the maxims of false policy, led men to a conduct inconfistent with their principles. They were so senfible, however, of this inconfistency, that to set their fellow-christians at liberty from servitude was deemed an act of piety highly meritorious and acceptable to heaven. The humane spirit of the Christian religion struggled long with the maxims and manners of the world, and contributed more than any other circumstance to introduce the practice of manumission. When Pope Gregory the Great, who flourished toward the end of the fixth century, granted liberty to some of his flaves, he gives this reason for it, "Cum Redemptor noster, totius conditor naturæ, ad hoc propitiatus humanam carnem voluerit affumere, ut divinitatis suæ gratia, dirempto (quo tenebamur captivi) vinculo, pristinæ nos restitueret libertati; salubriter agitur, si homines, quos ab initio liberos natura protulit, & jus gentium jugo fubstituit servitutis, in eâ, quâ nati fuerant, manumittentis beneficio, libertati reddantur." Gregor. Magn.

Magn. ap. Potgieff. lib. iv. c. i. § 3. Several laws or charters founded on reasons similar to this, are produced by the fame author. Accordingly, a great part of the charters of manumission, previous to the reign of Louis X. are granted pro amore Dei, pro remedio animæ, & pro mercede animæ. Murat. Antiq. Ital. vol. i. p. 849, 850. Du Cange, voc. manumissio. The formality of manumission was executed in a church, as a religious folemnity. The person to be set free was led round the great altar with a torch in his hand, he took hold of the horns of the altar, and there the folemn words conferring liberty were pronounced. Du Cange, ibid. vol. iv. p. 467. I shall transcribe a part of a charter of manumission granted A. D. 1056; both as it contains a full account of the ceremonies used in this form of manumission, and as a specimen of the imperfect knowledge of the Latin tongue in that barbarous age. It is granted by Willa the widow of Hugo the Duke and Marquis, in favour of Clariza one of her flaves. " Et ideo nos Domine Wille inclite cometiffe-libera et abfolvo te Cleriza filia Uberto-pro timore omnipotentis Dei, & remedio luminarie anime bone memorie quondam supra scripto Domini Ugo gloriossissimo, ut quando illum Dominus de hac vita migrare, jusserit, pars iniqua non abeat potestatem ullam, sed anguelus Domini nostri Jesu Christi colocare dignitur illum inter fanctos dilectos fuos; & beatus Petrus princips apostolorum, qui habed potestatem omnium animarum ligandi et absolvendi, ut ipsi absolvat animæ ejus de peccatis sui, & aperiad Y 2 illum

illum janua paradifi; pro eadem vero rationi, in mano mite te Benzo presbiter, ut vadat tecum in ecclesia sancti Bartholomæi apostoli; traad de tribus vicibus circa altare ipfius ecclefiæ cum cæreo apprehenfum in manibus tuis & manibus fuis; deinde exite ambulate in via quadrubio, ubi quatuor vie fe deviduntur. Statimg; pro remedio luminarie anime bone memorie quondam fupra scripto Domini Ugo et ipsi presbiter Benzo secit omnia, & dixit, Ecce quatuor vie, ite et ambulate in quacunq; partem tibi placuerit, tam fic fupra fcripta Cleriza, qua nosque tui heredes, qui ab ac hora in antea nati, vel procreati fuerit utriusq; sexus, &c." Murat. ibid. p. 853. Many other charters might have been felected, which, in point of grammar or style, are in no wife superior to this. Manumission was frequently granted on death-bed or by latter-will. As the minds of men are at that time awakened to fentiments of humanity and piety, these deeds procreded from religious motives, and were granted pro redemptione anima, in order to obtain acceptance with God. Du Cange ubi supra, p. 470. & voc. fervus, vol. vi. p. 451. Another method of obtaining liberty was by entering into holy orders, or taking the vow in a monastery. This was permitted for some time; but so many slaves escaped, by this means, out of the hands of their masters, that the practice was afterwards restrained, and at last prohibited by the laws of almost all the nations of Europe. Murat. ibid. p. 842. Conformably to the same principles, Princes, on the birth of a fon, or upon any other agreeable event, appointed a certain

a certain number of flaves to be enfranchifed, as a testimony of their gratitude to God for that benefit. Marculfi Form. lib. i. cap. 39. There are feveral forms of manumission published by Marculfus, and all of them are founded on religious confiderations, in order to procure the favour of God, or to obtain the forgiveness of their sins. Lib. ii. c. 23. 33, 34. edit. Baluz. The fame observation holds with respect to the other collections of Formulæ annexed to Marculfus. As fentiments of religion induced fome to grant liberty to their fellow-christians who groaned under the yoke of fervitude; so mistaken ideas concerning devotion led others to relinquish their liberty. When a person conceived an extraordinary respect for the faint who was the patron of any church or monaftery in which he was accustomed to attend religious worship, it was not unufual among men poffeffed with an excess of fuperstitious reverence, to give up themselves and their posterity to be the flaves of the faint. Mabillon de Re Diplomat. lib. vi. 632. The oblati or voluntary flaves of churches or monafteries were very numerous, and may be divided into three different classes. The first were such as put themfelves and effects under the protection of a particular church or monastery, binding themselves to defend its privileges and property against every aggressor. These were prompted to do so not merely by devotion, but in order to obtain that fecurity which arose from the protection of the church. They were rather vassals than slaves, and fometimes persons of noble birth found it prudent

to fecure the protection of the church in this manner. Persons of the second class bound themselves to pay an annual tax or quit-rent out of their estates to a church or monastery. Besides this, they sometimes engaged to perform certain fervices. They were called censuales. The last class consisted of fuch as actually renounced their liberty, and became flaves in the strict and proper sense of the word. These were called ministeriales, and enflaved their bodies, as some of the charters bear, that they might procure the liberty of their fouls. Potgiesserus de statu servorum, lib. i. cap. i. § 6, 7. How zealous the clergy were to encourage the opinions which led to this practice, will appear from a clause in a charter by which one gives up himself as a flave to a monastery. "Cum sit omni carnali ingenuitate generosius extremum quodcumq; Dei fervitium, scilicet quod terrena nobilitas multos plerumg; vitiorum servos facit, servitus vero Christi nobiles virtutibus reddit, nemo autem sani capitis virtutibus vitia comparaverit, claret pro certo eum esse generosiorem, qui se Dei servitio præbuerit proniorem. Quod ego Ragnaldus intelligens," &c. Another charter is expressed in the following words: " Eligens magis esse servus Dei quam libertus fæculi, firmiter credens & sciens, quod servire Deo, regnare est, summaque ingenuitas sit in qua servitus comparabatur Christi," &c. Du Cange, voc. oblatus, vol. iv. p. 1286, 1287. Great, however, as the power of religion was, it does not appear, that the enfranchisement of flaves was a frequent practice while the feudal system preserved

preserved its vigour. On the contrary, there were laws which fet bounds to it as detrimental to fociety. Potgieff. lib. iv. c. 2. § 6. The inferior order of men owed the recovery of their liberty to the decline of that ariftocratical policy, which lodged the most extensive power in the hands of a few members of the fociety, and depressed all the rest. When Louis X. iffued his ordonance, feveral flaves had been fo long accustomed to servitude, and their minds were fo much debased by that unhappy fituation, that they refused to accept of the liberty which was offered them. D'Ach. Spicel. vol. xi. p. 387. Long after the reign of Louis X. feveral of the French nobility continued to affert their ancient dominion over their flaves. It appears from an ordonance of the famous Bertrand de Guefelin Constable of France, that the custom of enfranchifing them was confidered as a pernicious innovation. Morice Mem. pour fervir des preuves à l'Hist. de Bret. tom. ii. p. 100. In some instances, when the prædial flaves were declared to be freemen, they were still bound to perform certain fervices to their ancient masters; and were kept in a state different from other subjects, being restricted either from purchasing land, or becoming members of a community within the precincts of the manor to which they formerly belonged. Martene & Durand. Thefaur. Anecdot. vol. i. p. 914. This, however, feems not to have been common.—There is no general law for the manumission of slaves in the Statute-book of England, fimilar to that which has been quoted from the Ordonances of the Kings of France. Though the genius of the English Y 4 constitution constitution seems early to have favoured personal liberty, personal servitude, nevertheless, continued long in England in some particular places. In the year 1514, we find a charter of Henry VIII. enfranchising two slaves belonging to one of his manors. Rym. Fæder. vol. xiii. p. 470. As late as the year 1574, there is a commission from Queen Elizabeth with respect to the manumission of certain bondmen belonging to her. Rymer, in Observat. on the Statutes, &c. p. 251.

NOTE XXI. SECT. I. p. 56. [X].

THERE is no custom in the middle ages more fingular than that of private war. It is a right of fo great importance, and prevailed fo univerfally, that the regulations concerning it occupy a considerable place in the system of laws during the middle ages. M. de Montesquieu, who has unravelled to many intricate points in feudal jurifprudence, and thrown light on fo many customs formerly obscure and unintelligible, was not led by his fubject to confider this. I shall therefore give a more minute account of the customs and regulations which directed a practice so contrary to the present ideas of civilized nations concerning government and order. 1. Among the ancient Germans, as well as other nations in a fimilar state of society, the right of avenging injuries was a private and personal right exercised by force of arms, without any reference to an umpire, or any appeal to a magistrate for decision. The clearest proofs of this were produced, Note VI.-2. This practice subfifted among the barbarous nations

nations after their fettlement in the provinces of the empire which they conquered; and as the causes of diffension among then multiplied, their family feuds and private was became more frequent. Proofs of this occur in their early hiftorians. G Turon. Hift. lib. vii c. 2. lib. viii. c. 18. lib. x. c. 27. and likewife in the codes of then laws. It was not only allowable for the relations to avenge the injuries of their family, but it was incumbent on them. Thus by the laws of the Angli and Werini, ad quemcunque hereditas terræ pervenerit, ad illum vestis bellica id est lorica & ultio proximi, et folatio leudis, debet pertinere, tit. vi. § 5. ap. Lindenbr. Leg. 'Saliq. tit. 63. Leg. Longob. lib. ii. tit. 14. § 10. 3. None but gentlemen, or persons of noble birth, had the right of private war. All disputes between flaves, villani, the inhabitants of towns, and freemen of inferior condition, were decided in the courts of justice. All disputes between gentlemen and persons of inferior rank were terminated in the same manner. The right of private war supposed nobility of birth, and equality of rank in both the contending parties. Beaumanoir Coustumes de Beauv. ch. lix. p. 300. Ordon. des Rois de France, tom. ii. 395. § xvii. 508. § xv. &c. The dignified ecclefiaftics likewife claimed and exercifed the right of private war; but as it was not altogether decent for them to profecute quarrels in person, advocati or vidames were chosen by the several monasteries and bishoprics. These were commonly men of high rank and reputation, who became the protectors

of the churches and convents by which they were elected; espoused their quarrels, and fought their battles; armis omnia quæ erant ecclesiæ viriliter desendebant, et vigilanter protegebant. Bruffel Usage des Fiefs, tom. i. p. 144. Du Cange, voc. advocatus. On many occasions, the martial ideas to which ecclefiaftics of noble birth were accustomed, made them forget the pacific spirit of their profession, and led them into the field in person at the head of their vasfals, "flamma, ferro, cæde, possessiones ecclesiarum prælati defendebant." Guido Abbas ap. Du Cange, ib. p. 179. -4. It was not every injury or trespass that gave a gentleman a title to make war upon his adverfary. Atrocious acts of violence, infults and affronts publicly committed were legal, and permitted motives for taking arms against the authors of them. Such crimes as are now punished capitally in civilized nations, at that time justified private hostilities. Beauman. ch. lix. Du Cange Differt. xxix. fur Joinville, p. 331. But though the avenging of injuries was the only motive that could legally authorife a private war, vet disputes concerning civil property often gave rife to hostilities, and were terminated by the fword. Du Cange Differt. p. 332 .-- 5. All perfons present when any quarrel arose, or any act of violence was committed, were included in the war which it occasioned; for it was supposed to be impossible for any man in such a situation to remain neuter, without taking fide with one or other of the contending parties. Beauman. p. 300. -6. All the kindred of the two principals in the

war were included in it, and obliged to espouse the quarrel of the chieftain with whom they were connected. Du Cange, ibid. 332. This was founded on the maxim of the ancient Germans, "fuscipere tam inimicitias seu patris, seu propinqui, quam amicitias, necesse est;" a maxim natural to all rude nations, among which the form of fociety, and political union, strengthen such a sentiment. This obligation was enforced by legal authority. If a person refused to take part in the quarrel of his kiniman, and to aid him against his adversary, he was deemed to have renounced all the rights and privileges of kindredship, and became incapable of succeeding to any of his relations, or of deriving any benefit from any civil right or property belonging to them. Du Cange Dissert. p. 333. The method of ascertaining the degree of affinity which obliged a person to take part in the quarrel of a kinfman, was curious. While the church prohibited the marriage of persons within the feventh degree of affinity, the vengeance of private war extended as far as this abfurd prohibition, and all who had fuch a remote connection with any of the principals, were involved in the calamities of war. But when the church relaxed fomewhat of its rigour, and did not extend its prohibition of marrying beyond the fourth degree of affinity, the same restriction took place in the conduct of private war, Beauman. 303. Du Cange Differt. 333.-7. A private war could not be carried on between two full brothers, because both have the fame common kindred, and confequently

fequently neither had any persons bound to stand by him against the other, in the contest; but two brothers of the half blood might wage war, because each of them has a distinct kindred. Beauman. p. 299.—8. The vaffals of each principal in any private war were involved in the contest. because by the feudal maxims they were bound to take arms in defence of the chieftain of whom they held, and to affift him in every quarrel. As foon, therefore, as feudal tenures were introduced, and this artificial connection was established between vasfals and the baron of whom they held. vaffals came to be confidered as in the fame state with relations. Beauman. 303.—9. Private wars were very frequent for feveral centuries. Nothing contributed more to increase those disorders in government, or to encourage fuch ferocity of manners as reduced the nations of Europe to that wretched state which distinguished the period of history which I am reviewing. Nothing was fuch an obstacle to the introduction of a regular administration of justice. Nothing could more effectually discourage industry, or retard the progress and cultivation of the arts of peace. Private wars were carried on with all the destructive rage which is to be dreaded from violent refentment when armed with force, and authorifed by law. It appears from the statutes prohibiting or restraining the exercise of private hostilities, that the invasion of the most barbarous enemy could not be more defolating to a country, or more fatal to its inhabitants, than those intestine wars. Ordon.

tom. i. p. 701. tom. ii. p. 395. 408. 507, &c. The contemporary historians describe the excesses committed in prosecution of these quarrels in such terms as excite astonishment and horror. I shall mention only one passage from the history of the Holy War, by Guibert Abbot of Nogent: "Erat eo tempore maximis ad invicem hostilitatibus, totius Francorum regni sacta turbatio; crebra ubiq; latrocinia, viarum obsessio; audiebantur passim, immo siebant incendia infinita; nullis præter sola & indomita cupiditate existentibus causis extruebantur prælia; & ut brevi totum claudam, quicquid obtutibus cupidorum subjacebat, nusquam attendendo cujus esset, prædæ patebat." Gesta Dei per Francos, vol. i. p. 482.

HAVING thus collected the chief regulations which custom had established concerning the right and exercise of private war, I shall enumerate, in chronological order, the various expedients employed to abolish or restrain this fatal custom. 1. The first expedient employed by the civil magistrate, in order to set some bounds to the violence of private revenge, was the fixing by law the fine or composition to be paid for each different crime. The injured person was originally the fole judge concerning the nature of the wrong which he had fuffered, the degree of vengeance which he should exact, as well as the species of atonement or reparation with which he might rest satisfied. Resentment became of course as implacable as it was fierce. It was often a point

of honour not to forgive, nor to be reconciled. This made it necessary to fix those compositions which make fo great a figure in the laws of barbarous nations. The nature of crimes and offences was estimated by the magistrate, and the fum due to the person offended was ascertained with a minute and often a whimfical accuracy. Rotharis, the legislator of the Lombards, who reigned about the middle of the feventh century, discovers his intention both in ascertaining the composition to be paid by the offender, and in increasing its value; it is, says he, that the enmity may be extinguished, the profecution may cease, and peace may be restored. Leg. Langob. lib. i. tit. 7. § 10.—2. About the beginning of the ninth century, Charlemagne struck at the root of the evil, and enacted, "That when any person had been guilty of a crime, or had committed an outrage, he should immediately submit to the penance which the church imposed, and offer to pay the composition which the law prefcribed; and if the injured person or his kindred should refuse to accept of this, and presume to avenge themselves by force of arms, their lands and properties should be forfeited." Capitul. A. D. 802, edit. Baluz. vol. i. 371.-3. But in this, as well as in other regulations, the genius of Charlemagne advanced before the spirit of his age. The ideas of his contemporaries concerning regular government were too imperfect, and their manners too fierce to submit to this law. Private wars, with all the calamities which they occasioned.

occasioned, became more frequent than ever after the death of that great monarch. His fucceffors were unable to restrain them. The church found it necessary to interpose. The most early of these interpolitions now extant, is towards the end of the tenth century. In the year 990, feveral bishops in the fouth of France assembled, and published various regulations, in order to fet fome bounds to the violence and frequency of private wars; if any person within their dioceses should venture to transgress, they ordained that he should be excluded from all Christian privileges during his life, and be denied Christian burial after his death. Du Mont Corps Diplomatique, tom. i. p. 41. These, however, were only partial remedies; and therefore a council was held at Limoges, A.D. 994. The bodies of the faints, according to the custom of those ages, were carried thither; and by these sacred relics men were exhorted to lay down their arms. to extinguish their animosities, and to swear that they would not for the future violate the public peace by their private hostilities. Bouquet Recueil des Histor. vol. x. p. 49. 147. Several other councils issued decrees to the same effect. Du Cange Differt. 343.—4. But the authority of councils, how venerable foever in those ages, was not fufficient to abolish a custom which flattered the pride of the nobles, and gratified their favourite passions. The evil grew so intolerable, that it became necessary to employ supernatural means for suppressing it. A bishop of Aquitaine,

A. D. 1032, pretended that an angel had appeared to him, and brought him a writing from heaven, enjoining men to cease from their hostilities, and to be reconciled to each other. It was during a feafon of public calamity that he published this revelation. The minds of men were disposed to receive pious impressions, and willing to perform any thing in order to avert the wrath of heaven. A general peace and ceffation from hostilities took place and continued for feven years; and a resolution was formed. that no man should in times to come attack or molest his adversaries during the seasons set apart for celebrating the great festivals of the church, or from the evening of Thursday in each week, to the morning of Monday in the week ensuing, the intervening days being confidered as particularly holy, our Lord's Passion having happened on one of these days, and his Resurrection on another. A change in the dispositions of men so sudden, and which produced a resolution fo unexpected, was confidered as miraculous; and the respite from hostilities which followed upon it, was called The Truce of God. Glaber. Rodulphus Hiftor. lib. v. ap. Bouquet, vol. x. p. 59. This, from being a regulation or concert in one kingdom, became a general law in Christendom, was confirmed by the authority of feveral Popes, and the violators were subjected to the penalty of excommunication. Corpus Jur. Canon. Decretal. lib. i. tit. 34. c. 1. Du Cange Gloffar. voc. Treuga. An

An act of the council of Toulujes in Roussillon, A. D. 1041, containing all the stipulations required by the truce of God, is published by Dom de Vic & Dom Vaisette, Hist. de Languedoc, tom. ii. Preuves, p. 206. A ceffation from hostilities during three complete days in every week, allowed fuch a confiderable space for the passions of the antagonists to cool, and for the people to enjoy a respite from the calamities of war, as well as to take measures for their own fecurity, that, if this truce of God had been exactly observed, it must have gone far towards putting an end to private wars. This, however, feems not to have been the case; the nobles, difregarding the truce, prosecuted their quarrels without interruption as formerly. Qua nimirum tempestate, universæ provinciæ adeo devastationis continuæ importunitate inquietantur, ut ne ipía, pro observatione divinæ pacis, professa facramenta custodiantur. Abbas Uspergensis, apud Datt. de pace imperii publica, p. 13. No. 35. The violent spirit of the nobility could not be restrained by any engagements. The complaints of this were frequent; and bishops, in order to compel them to renew their vows and promiles of ceasing from their private wars, were obliged to enjoin their clergy to fuspend the performance of divine fervice and the exercise of any religious function within the parishes of such as were refractory and obstinate. Hist. de Langued. par D. D. de Vic & Vaisette, tom. ii. Preuves, p. 118.-5. The people, eager to obtain relief from their fufferings, called in a fecond time revelation to Vol. I. their Z

their aid. Towards the end of the twelfth century, a carpenter in Guienne gave out, that Jesus Christ, together with the bleffed Virgin, had appeared to him, and having commanded him to exhort mankind to peace, had given him, as a proof of his mission, an image of the Virgin holding her son in her arms, with this inscription, Lamb of God who takest away the sins of the world, give us peace. This low fanatic addressed himself to an ignorant age, prone to credit what was marvellous. He was received as an inspired messenger of God. Many prelates and barons affembled at Puy, and took an oath, not only to make peace with all their enemies, but to artack such as refused to lav down their arms, and to be reconciled to their enemies. They formed an affociation for this purpose, and affumed the honourable name of the Brotherhood of God. Robertus de Monte Michaele, ap. M. de Lauriere Pref. tom. i. Ordon. p. 29. But the influence of this superstitious terror or devotion was not of long continuance. - 6. The civil magistrate was obliged to exert his authority in order to check a custom which threatened the diffolution of government. Philip Augustus, as fome imagine, or St. Louis, as is more probable, published an ordonance, A. D. 1245, prohibiting any person to commence hostilities against the friends and vaffals of his adversary, until forty days after the commission of the crime or offence which gave rife to the quarrel; declaring, that if any man presumed to transgress this statute, he fhould be confidered as guilty of a breach of the the public peace, and be tried and punified by the judge ordinary as a traitor. Ordon. tom. i. p. 56. This was called the Royal Truce, and afforded time for the violence of reientment to fubfide, as well as leifure for the good offices of fuch as were willing to compose the disserence. The happy effects of this regulation feem to have been confiderable, if we may judge from the folicitude of fucceeding monarchs to enforce it .- 7. In order to refrain the exercise of private war still farther, Philip the Fair, towards the close of the same century, A. D. 1296, published an ordonance commanding all private hostilities to ceale, while he was engaged in war against the enemies of the flate. Ordon. tom. i. p. 328. 390. This regulation, which feems to be almost effential to the existence and preservation of society; was often renewed by his fuccessors, and being enforced by the regal authority, proved a confiderable check to the destructive contests of the nobles. Both these regulations, introduced first in France, were adopted by the other nations of Europe.-8. The evil, however, was fo inveterate, that it did not yield to all these remedies. No sooner was public peace established in any kingdom, than the barons renewed their private hostilities. They not only struggled to maintain this pernicious right, but to secure the exercise of it without any restraint. Upon the death of Philip the Fair, the nobles of different provinces in France formed affociations, and presented remonstrances to his successor, demanding the repeal of feveral laws, by which he had abridged the privileges of their order. Among these, the Z 2 right

right of private war is always mentioned as one of the most valuable; and they claim that the restraint imposed by the truce of God, the royal truce, as well as that arifing from the ordonance of the year 1296, should be taken off. In some inftances, the two fons of Philip, who mounted the throne fuccessively, eluded their demands; in others, they were obliged to make concessions. Ordon. tom. i. p. 551. 557. 561. 573. The ordonances to which I here refer are of fuch length that I cannot infert them, but they are extremely curious, and may be peculiarly instructive to an English reader, as they throw considerable light on that period of English history, in which the attempts to circumfcribe the regal prerogative were carried on, not by the people struggling for liberty, but by the nobles contending for power. It is not necessary to produce any evidence of the continuance and frequency of private wars under the fucceffors of Philip the Fair. - 9. A practice fomewhat fimilar to the royal truce was introduced, in order to strengthen and extend it. Bonds of affurance, or mutual fecurity, were demanded from the parties at variance, by which they obliged themselves to abstain from all hostilities, either during a time mentioned in the bond, or for ever; and became subject to heavy penalties, if they violated this obligation. These bonds were fometimes granted voluntarily, but more frequently exacted by the authority of the civil magistrate. Upon a petition from the party who felt himself weakest, the magistrate fummoned

fummoned his adversary to appear in court, and obliged him to give a bond of affurance. If, after that, he committed any farther hostilities, he became subject to all the penalties of treaton. This restraint on private war was known in the age of St. Louis. Establissemens, liv. i. c. 28. It was frequent in Bretagne; and what is very remarkable, fuch bonds of affurance were given mutually between vaffals and the lord of whom they held. Oliver de Cliffon grants one to the Duke of Bretagne, his fovereign. Morice Mem. pour servir de preuves à l'Hist. de Bret. tom. i. p. 846. ii. p. 371. Many examples of bonds of affurance in other provinces of France are collected by Bruffel, tom. ii. p. 856. The nobles of Burgundy remonstrated against this practice, and obtained exemption from it as an encroachment on the privileges of their order. Ordon. tom. i. p. 558. This mode of fecurity was first introduced in cities, and the good effects of it having been felt there, was extended to the nobles. See Note XVI.—10. The calamities occasioned by private wars became at fome times fo intolerable, that the nobles entered into voluntary affociations, binding themselves to refer all matters in dispute, whether concerning civil property, or points of honour, to the determination of the majority of the affociates. Morice Mem. pour servir de preuves à l'Hist. de Bret. tom. ii. p. 728, -11. But all these expedients proving ineffectual, Charles VI. A. D. 1413, issued an ordonance expressly prohibiting private wars on any pretext whatfoever, with power to the judge ordinary to compel Z_3

compel all persons to comply with this injunction, and to punish such as should prove refractory or disobedient, by imprisoning their persons, feizing their goods, and appointing the officers of justice, Mangeurs & Gasteurs, to live at free quarters on their estate. If those who were disobedient to this edict could not be personally arrested, he appointed their friends and vaffals to be feized. and detained until they gave furety for keeping the peace; and he abolished all laws, customs, or privileges which might be pleaded in opposition to this ordonance. Ordon. tom. x. p. 138. How flow is the progress of reason and of civil order! Regulations which to us appear so equitable, obvious, and fimple, required the efforts of civil and ecclefiaftical authority, during several centuries, to introduce and establish them. Even posterior to this period, Louis XI. was obliged to abolish private wars in Dauphine, by a particular edict, A. D. 1441. Du Cange Differt. D. 348.

This Note would swell to a disproportionate bulk, if I should attempt to enquire with the same minute attention into the progress of this pernicious custom in the other countries of Europe. In England, the ideas of the Saxons concerning personal revenge, the right of private wars, and the compession due to the party offended, seem to have been much the same with those which prevailed on the Continent. The law of Ina de vindicantibus, in the eighth century, Lamb. p. 3.; those of Edmund in the tenth century,

century, de homicidio, Lamb. p. 72. & de inimicitiis, p. 76.; and those of Edward the Confessor, in the eleventh century, de temporibus & diebus pacis, or Treuga Dei, Lamb. p. 126, are perfectly fimilar to the ordonances of the French kings their contemporaries. The laws of Edward, de pace regis, are flill more explicit than those of the French monarchs, and, by feveral provisions in them, difcover that a more perfect police was established in England at that period. Lambard, p. 128. fol. verf. Even after the conquest, private wars, and the regulations for preventing them, were not altogether unknown, as appears from Madox Formulare Anglicanum, Nº CXLV: and from the extracts from Domesday Book, published by Gale, Scriptores Hist. Britan. p. 759. 777. The well-known clause in the form of an English indictment, which, as an aggravation of the criminal's guilt, mentions his having affaulted a person, who was in the peace of God and of the King, feems to be borrowed from the Treuga or Pax Dei, and the Pax Regis, which I have explained. But after the conquest, the mention of private wars among the nobility occurs more rarely in the English history, than in that of any other European nation, and no laws concerning them are to be found in the body of their statutes. Such a change in their own manners, and fuch a variation from those of their neighbours, is remarkable. Is it to be ascribed to the extraordinary power that William the Norman acquired by right of conquest, and transmitted to his successors, which rendered ZA

rendered the execution of justice more vigorous and decifive, and the jurisdiction of the King's court more extensive than under the Monarchs on the Continent? Or, was it owing to the fettlement of the Normans in England, who having never adopted the practice of private war in their own country, abolished it in the kingdom which they conquered? It is afferted in an ordonance of John King of France. that in all times past, persons of every rank in Normandy have been permitted to wage private war, and the practice has been deemed unlawful. Ordon. tom. ii. p. 407. If this fact were certain, it would go far towards explaining the peculiarity which I have mentioned. But as there are some English Acts of Parliament, which, according to the remark of the learned author of the Objervations on the Statutes, chiefly the more ancient, recite falsehoods, it may be added, that this is not peculiar to the laws of that country. Notwithstanding the positive affertion contained in this public law of France, there is good reason for considering it as a flatute which recites a falsehood. This, however, is not the place for discussing that point. It is an inquiry not unworthy the curiofity of an English antiquary.

In Castile, the pernicious practice of private war prevailed, and was authorised by the customs and law of the kingdom. Leges Tauri, tit. 76. cum commentario Anton. Gomezii, p. 551. As the Castilian nobles were no less turbulent than powerful, their quarrels and hostilities involved their country

country in many calamities. Innumerable proofs of this occur in Mariana. In Aragon, the right of private revenge was likewife authorifed by law; exercifed in its full extent, and accompanied with the same unhappy consequences. Hieron. Blanca Comment. de Rebus Arag. ap. Schotti Hifpan. illustrat. vol. iii. p. 733. Lex Jacobi I. A. D. 1247. Fueros & Observancias del Reyno de Aragon, lib. ix. p. 182. Several confederacies between the Kings of Aragon and their nobles, for the restoring of peace, founded on the truce of God, are still extant. Petr. de Marca, Marca five Limes Hifpanic. App. 1303. 1388. 1428. As early as the year 1165, we find a combination of the King and court of Aragon, in order to abolish the right of private war, and to punish those who prefumed to claim that privilege. Anales de Aragon por Zurita, vol. i. p. 73. But the evil was so inveterate, that as late as A. D. 1519, Charles V. was obliged to publish a law enforcing all former regulations tending to suppress this practice. Fueros & Observanc. lib. ix. 183. b.

THE Lombards, and other northern nations who fettled in Italy, introduced the fame maxims concerning the right of revenge into that country, and these were followed by the same effects. As the progress of the evil was perfectly similar to what happened in France, the expedients employed to check its career, or to extirpate it finally, resembled those which I have enumerated. Murat. Ant. Ital, vol. ii. p. 306, &c.

In Germany, the diforders and calamities occasioned by the right of private war were greater and more intolerable than in any other country of Europe. The Imperial authority was fo much fhaken and enfeebled by the violence of the civil wars excited by the contests between the Popes and the Emperors of the Franconian and Suabian lines, that not only the nobility but the cities acquired almost independent power, and scorned all fubordination and obedience to the laws. The frequency of these faida, or private wars, is often mentioned in the German Annals, and the fatal effects of them are most pathetically described, Datt. de Pace Imper. pub. lib. i. cap. v. nº 30. & passim. The Germans early adopted the Treuga Dei, which was first established in France. This, however, proved but a temporary and ineffectual remedy. The diforders multiplied fo fatt, and grew to be fo enormous, that they threatened the dissolution of society, and compelled the Germans to have recourse to the only remedy of the evil, viz. an absolute prohibition of private wars. The Emperor William published his edict to this purpose, A. D. 1255, an hundred and fixty years previous to the ordonance of Charles VI. in France. Datt, lib. i. cap. 4. nº 20. But neither he nor his fuceffors had authority to fecure the observance of it. This gave rife to a practice in Germany, which conveys to us a striking idea both of the intolerable calamities occasioned by private wars, and of the feebleness of government during the twelfth and thirteenth centuries. The cities

cities and nobles entered into alliances and affociations, by which they bound themselves to maintain the public peace, and to make war on fuch as should violate it. This was the origin of the league of the Rhine, of Suabia, and of many finaller confederacies diftinguished by various names. The rife, progress, and beneficial effects of these affociations are traced by Datt, with great accuracy. Whatever degree of public peace or of regular administration was preserved in the Empire from the beginning of the twelfth century to the close of the fifteenth, Germany owes to these leagues. During that period, political order, respect for the laws, together with the equal administration of justice, made considerable progress in Germany. But the final and perpetual abolition of the right of private war was not accomplished until A. D. 1495. The Imperial authority was by that time more firmly established, the ideas of men with respect to government and subordination were become more just. That barbarous and pernicious privilege of waging private war, which the nobles had to long poffeffed, was declared to be incompatible with the happiness and existence of society. In order to terminate any differences which might arise among the various members of the Germanic body, the Imperial chamber was instituted with supreme jurisdiction, to judge without appeal in every question brought before it. That court has subfifted fince that period, forming a very respectable tribunal,

of effential importance in the German constitution. Datt, lib. iii, iv, v. Pfeffel Abregé de l'Histoire du Droit, &c. p. 556.

NOTE XXII. SECT. I. p. 67. [Y].

IT would be tedious and of little use to enumerate the various modes of appealing to the justice of God, which superstition introduced during the ages of ignorance. I shall mention only one, because we have an account of it in a placitum or trial in the presence of Charlemagne, from which we may learn the imperfect manner in which justice was administered even during his reign. In the year 775, a contest arose between the bishop of Paris and the abbot of St. Denys, concerning the property of a small abbev. Each of them exhibited deeds and records, in order to prove the right to be in them. Instead of trying the authenticity, or confidering the import of these, the point was referred to the judicium crucis Each produced a person, who, during the celebration of mass, stood before the cross with his arms expanded; and he, whose representative first became weary, and altered his posture, lost the cause. The person employed by the bishop on this occasion had less strength or less spirit than his adverfary, and the question was decided in favour of the abbot. Mabillon de Re Diplomat. lib. vi. p. 498. If a prince so enlightened as Charlemagne countenanced fuch an abfurd mode of decision, it is no wonder that other monarchs should

should tolerate it so long. M. de Montesquieu has treated of the trial by judicial combat at confiderable length. The two talents which diftinguish that illustrious author, industry in tracing all the circumstances of ancient and obscure institutions, and fagacity in penetrating into the causes and principles which contributed to establish them. are equally conspicuous in his observations on this fubject. To these I refer the reader, as they contain most of the principles by which I have endeavoured to explain this practice. De l'Esprit des Loix, lib. xxviii. It feems to be probable from the remarks of M. de Montesquieu, as well as from the facts produced by Muratori, tom. iii. Differt. xxxviii. that appeals to the justice of God by the experiments with fire and water, &c. were frequent among the people who fettled in the different provinces of the Roman Empire, before they had recourse to the judicial combat; and vet the judicial combat feems to have been the most ancient mode of terminating any controversy among the barbarous nations in their original fettlements. This is evident from Velleius Paterculus, lib. ii. c. 118. who informs us, that all questions which were decided among the Romans by legal trial, were terminated among the Germans by arms. The fame thing appears in the ancient laws and customs of the Swedes, quoted by Jo. O. Stiernhöök de jure Sueonum & Gothorum vetufto, 4to, Holmiæ 1682, lib. i. c. 7. It is probable that when the various tribes which invaded the Empire

were converted to Christianity, their ancient custom of allowing judicial combats appeared so glaringly repugnant to the precepts of religion, that, for some time, it was abolished, and by degrees, several circumstances which I have mentioned, led them to resume it.

IT feems likewise to be probable from a law quoted by Stiernhöök in the treatife which I have mentioned, that the judicial combat was originally permitted, in order to determine points respecting the personal character or reputation of individuals, and was afterwards extended not only to criminal cases, but to questions concerning property. The words of the law are, " if any man shall fay to another these reproachful words, "you are not a " man equal to other men," or, " you have not "the heart of a man," and the other shall reply "I am a man as good as you," let them meet on the highway. If he who first gave offence appear and the person offended absent himself, let the latter be deemed a worse man even than he was called; let him not be admitted to give evidence in judgment either for man or woman, and let him not have the privilege of making a testament. If he who gave the offence be ablent, and only the perfon offended appear, let him call upon the other thrice with a loud voice, and make a mark upon the earth, and then let him who absented himself be deemed infamous, because he uttered words which he durst not support. If both shall appear properly 11

properly armed, and the person offended shall fall in the combat, let a half compensation be paid for his death. But if the person who gave the offence shall fall, let it be imputed to his own rashness. The petulance of his tongue hath been fatal to him. Let him lie in the field without any compensation being demanded for his death." Lex Uplandica, ap. Stiern. p. 76. Martial people were extremely delicate with respect to every thing that affected their reputation as foldiers. By the laws of the Salians, if any man called another a hare, or accused him of having left his shield in the field of battle, he was ordained to pay a large fine. Leg. Sal. tit. xxxii. § 4.6. By the law of the Lombards, if any one called another arga, i.e. a good for nothing fellow, he might immediately challenge him to comba. Leg. Longob. lib. i. tit. v. § 1. By the law of the Salians, if one called another cenitus, a term of reproach equivalent to arga, he was bound to pay a very high fine. Tit. xxxii. § 1. Paulus Diaconus relates the violent improfison which this reproachful expression made upon one of his countrymen, and the fatal effects with which it was attended. De Gestis Longobard. liv. vi. c. 24. Thus the ideas concerning the point of honour, which we are apt to confider as a modern refinement, as well as the practice of duclling, to which it gave rife, are derived from the notions of our ancestors, while in a state of society very little improved.

As M. de Montesquieu's view of this subject did not lead him to confider every circumstance relative to judicial combats, I shall mention some particular facts necessary for the illustration of what I have faid with respect to them. A remarkable instance occurs of the decision of an abstract point of law by combat. A question arose in the tenth century concerning the right of representation, which was not then fixed, though now universally established in every part of Europe. "It was a matter of doubt and dispute (faith the historian), whether the fons of a fon ought to be reckoned among the children of the family, and fucceed equally with their uncles, if their father happened to die while their grandfather was alive. An affembly was called to deliberate on this point, and it was the general opinion that it ought to be remitted to the examination and decision of judges. But the Emperor following a better course, and defirous of dealing honourably with his people and nobles, appointed the matter to be decided by battle between two champions. He who appeared in behalf of the right of children to represent their deceased father was victorious; and it was established, by a perpetual decree, that they should hereafter share in the inheritance together with their uncles." Wittickindus Corbienfis, lib. Annal. ap. M. de Lauriere Pref. Ordon. vol. i. p. xxxiii. If we can suppose the caprice of folly to lead men to any action more extravagant than this of fettling a point in law by combat, it must be that of referring

referring the truth or falsehood of a religious opinion to be decided in the fame manner. To the difgrace of human reason, it has been capable even of this extravagance. A question was agitated in Spain in the eleventh century, whether the Mufarabic Liturgy and ritual which had been used in the churches of Spain, or that approved of by the See of Rome, which differed in many particulars from the other, contained the form of worship most acceptable to the Deity. The Spaniards contended zealoufly for the ritual of their ancestors. The Popes urged them to receive that to which they had given their infallible fanction. A violent contest arose. The nobles proposed to decide the controverfy by the fword. The King approved of this method of decision. Two knights in complete armour entered the lifts. John Ruys de Matanca, the champion of the Musarabic Liturgy, was victorious. But the Queen and Archbishop of Toledo, who favoured the other form, infifted on having the matter submitted to another trial, and had interest enough to prevail in a request, inconsistent with the laws of combat, which being confidered as an appeal to God, the decision ought to have been acquiesced in as final. A great fire was kindled. A copy of each Liturgy was cast into the flames. It was agreed that the book which flood this proof, and remained untouched, should be received in all the churches of Spain. The Musarabic Liturgy trium hed likewise in this trial, and if we may believe R derigo de Toledo, re-Vol. I. A a mained

mained unhurt by the fire, when the other was reduced to ashes. The Queen and Archbishop had power or art fufficient to elude this decision also, and the use of the Musarabic form of devotion was permitted only in certain churches. A determination no less extraordinary than the whole transaction. Roder. de Toledo, quoted by P. Orleans, Hist. de Revol. d'Espagne, tom. i. p. 217. Mariana, lib. i. c. 18. vol. i. p. 378.—A remarkable proof of the general use of trial by combat, and of the predilection for that mode of decision, occurs in the laws of the Lombards. It was a custom in the middle ages, that any person might fignify publicly the law to which he chose to be subjected; and by the prescriptions of that law he was obliged to regulate his transactions, without being bound to comply with any practice authorized by other codes of law. Perfons who had fubjected themselves to the Roman law, and adhered to the ancient jurisprudence, as far as any knowledge of it was retained in those ages of ignorance, were exempted from paying any regard to the forms of proceedings established by the laws of the Burgundians, Lombards, and other barbarous people. But the Emperor Otho, in direct contradiction to this received maxim, ordained, "That all persons, under whatever law they lived, even although it were the Roman law, should be bound to conform to the edicts concerning the trial by combat." Leg. Longob. lib. ii. tit. 55. § 38. While the trial by judicial combat subfifted, proof

proof by charters, contracts, or other deeds, became ineffectual; and even this species of written evidence, calculated to render the proceedings of courts certain and decifive, was eluded. When a charter or other instrument was produced by one of the parties, his opponent might challenge it, affirm that it was false and forged, and offer to prove this by combat. Leg. Longob. ibid. § 34. It is true, that among the reasons enumerated by Beaumanoir, on account of which judges might refuse to permit a trial by combat, one is, " If the point in contest can be clearly proved or afcertained by other evidence." Coust. de Beauv. ch. 63. p. 323. But that regulation removed the evil only a fingle step. For the party who suspected that a witness was about to depose in a manner unfavourable to his cause, might accuse him of being fuborned, give him the lie, and challenge him to combat; if the witness was vanguished in battle, no other evidence could be admitted, and the party by whom he was fummoned to appear loft his cause. Leg. Baivar. tit. 16. § 2. Leg. Burgund. tit. 45. Beauman. ch. 61. p. 315. The reason given for obliging a witness to accept of a defiance, and to defend himself by combat, is remarkable, and contains the same idea which is still the foundation of what is called the point of honour; " for it is just, that if any one affirms that he perfectly knows the truth of any thing, and offers to give oath upon it, that he should not hesitate to maintain the veracity of his affirmation in combat." Leg. Burgund. tit. 45.

Aa2

THAT

THAT the trial by judicial combat was established in every country of Europe, is a fact well known, and requires no proof. That this mode of decision was frequent, appears not only from the codes of ancient laws which established it, but from the earliest writers concerning the practice of law in the different nations of Europe. They treat of this custom at great length; they enumerate the regulations concerning it with minute accuracy; and explain them with much folicitude. It made a capital and extensive article in jurisprudence. There is not any one subject in their system of law which Beaumanoir, Defontaines, or the compilers of the Affises de Jerusalem, seem to have considered as of greater importance; and none upon which they have bestowed so much attention. The same obfervation will hold with respect to the early authors of other nations. It appears from Madox, that trials of this kind were fo frequent in England, that fines, paid on these occasions, made no inconfiderable branch of the King's revenue. Hift. of the Excheq. vol. i. p. 349. A very curious account of a judicial combat between Mesire Robert de Beaumanoir, and Mesire Pierre Tournemine, in presence of the duke of Bretagne, A. D. 1385, is published by Morice Mem. pour fervir de preuves à l'Hist. de Bretagne, tom. ii. p. 498. All the formalities observed in such extraordinary proceedings are there described more minutely, than in any ancient monument which I have had an opportunity of confidering. Tournemine was accused by Beaumanoir of having murdered his brother. The

The former was vanquished, but was faved from being hanged upon the spot, by the generous intercession of his antagonist. A good account of the origin of the laws concerning judicial combat is published in the history of Pavia, by Bernardo Sacci, lib. ix. c. 8. in Græv. Thes. Antiquit. Ital. vol. iii. 743.

This mode of trial was fo acceptable, that ecclefiaftics, notwithft:nding the prohibitions of the church, were constrained not only to connive at the practice, but to authorize it. A remarkable instance of this is produced by Pasquier Recherches, lib. iv. ch. i. p. 350. The abbot Wittikindus, whose words I have produced in this note, confidered the determination of a point in law by combat, as the best and most honourable mode of decision. In the year 978, a judicial combat was fought in the presence of the Emperor. The archbishop Aldebert advised him to terminate a contest which had arisen between two noblemen of his court, by this mode of decision. The vanquished combatant, though a person of high rank, was beheaded on the spot. Chronic. Ditmari Episc. Mersb. chez Bouquet Recueil des Hist. tom. x. p. 121. Questions concerning the property of churches and monasteries, were decided by combat. In the year 961, a controverfy concerning the church of St. Medard, whether it belonged to the abbey of Beaulieu or not, was terminated by judicial combat. Bouquet Recueil des Hist. tom. ix. p. 729. Ibid. p. 612, &c. The Emperor Henry I. Aa3 declares.

declares, that this law, authorizing the practice of judicial combats, was enacted with consent and applause of many saithful bishops. Ibid. p. 231. So remarkably did the martial ideas of those ages prevail over the genius and maxims of the canon law, which in other instances was in the highest credit and authority with ecclesiastics. A judicial combat was appointed in Spain, by Charles V. A. D. 1522. The combatants sought in the Emperor's presence, and the battle was conducted with all the rites prescribed by the ancient laws of chivalry. The whole transaction is described at great length by Pontus Heuterus Rer. Austriac. lib. viii. c. 17. p. 205.

THE last instance which occurs in the history of France, of a judicial combat authorized by the magistrate, was the famous one between M. Jarnac and M. de la Chaistaignerie, A. D. 1547. A trial by combat was appointed in England, A. D. 1571, under the inspection of the judges in the court of Common Pleas; and though it was not carried to the same extremity with the former, Queen Elizabeth having interposed her authority, and enjoined the parties to compound the matter, yet, in order to preserve their honour, the lists were marked out. and all the forms previous to the combat were obferved with much ceremony. Spelm. Gloff. voc. Campus, p. 103. In the year 1631, a judicial combat was appointed between Donald Lord Rea, and David Ramfay, Efg. by the authority of the Lord high Constable, and Earl Marshal of England; but

that

that quarrel likewise terminated without blood-shed, being accommodated by Charles I. Another instance occurs seven years later. Rushworth in Observations on the Statutes, &c. p. 266.

NOTE XXIII. Sect. I. p. 74. [Z].

THE text contains the great outlines which mark the course of private and public jurisdiction in the feveral nations of Europe. I shall here follow more minutely the various steps of this progress, as the matter is curious and important enough to merit this attention. The payment of a fine by way of fatisfaction to the person or family injured, was the first device of a rude people, in order to check the career of private refentment, and to extinguish those faida, or deadly feuds, which were profecuted among them with the utmost violence. This custom may be traced back to the ancient Germans, Tacit. de Morib. Germ. c. 21. and prevailed among other uncivilized nations. Many examples of this are collected by the ingenious and learned author of Historical Law Tracts, vol. i. p. 41. These fines were ascertained and levied in three different manners. At first they were settled by voluntary agreement between the parties at variance. When their rage began to subside, and they felt the bad effects of their continuing in enmity, they came to terms of concord, and the fatisfaction made was called a composition, implying that it was fixed by mutual confent. De l'Esprit des Loix, lib. xxx. c. 19. It is apparent from fome Aa4 of

of the more ancient codes of laws, that at the time when these were compiled, matters still remained in that simple state. In certain cases, the person who had committed an offence, was left exposed to the refentment of those whom he had injured. until he should recover their favour, quoquo modo potuerit. Lex Frision. tit. 11. § 1. The next mode of levying these fines was by the sentence of arbiters. An arbiter is called in the Regiam maiestatem amicabilis compositor, lib. xi. c. 4. § 10. He could estimate the degree of offence with more impartiality than the parties interested, and determine with greater equity what fatisfaction ought to be demanded. It is difficult to bring an authentic proof of a custom previous to the records preserved in any nation of Europe. But one of the Formulæ Andegavenses compiled in the fixth century, feems to allude to a transaction carried on not by the authority of a judge, but by the mediation of arbiters chosen by mutual consent. Bouquet Recueil des Histor. tom. iv. p. 566. But as an arbiter wanted authority to enforce his decisions, judges were appointed with compulsive power to oblige both parties to acquiesce in their decisions. Previous to this last step, the expedient of paying compositions was an imperfect remedy against the pernicious effects of private resentment. As foon as this important change was introduced, the magistrate, putting himself in place of the person injured, ascertained the composition with which he ought to rest satisfied. Every possible injury that could occur in the intercourse of civil fociety

fociety was confidered, and estimated, and the compositions due to the person aggrieved were fixed with fuch minute attention as discovers, in most cases, amazing discernment and delicacy, in some instances unaccountable caprice. Besides the composition payable to the private party, a certain sum called a fredum, was paid to the King or State, as Tacitus expresses it, or to the fiscus, in the Ianguage of the barbarous laws. Some authors, blending the refined ideas of modern policy with their reasonings concerning ancient transactions. have imagined that the fredum was a compensation due to the community, on account of the violation of the public peace. But it is manifestly nothing more than the price paid to the magistrate for the protection which he afforded against the violence of refentment. The enacting of this was a confiderable step towards improvement in criminal jurifprudence. In some of the more ancient codes of laws, the freda are altogether omitted, or fo feldom mentioned, that it is evident they were but little known. In the later codes, the fredum is as precifely specified as the composition. In common cases it was equal to the third part of the composition. Capitul. vol. i. p. 52. In some extraordinary cases, where it was more difficult to protect the person who had committed violence, the fredum was augmented. Capitul. vol. i. p. 515. These freda made a considerable branch in the revenues of the barons; and in whatever diffrict territorial jurisdiction was granted, the royal judges were prohibited from levying any freda. In explaining

plaining the nature of the fredum, I have followed, in a great measure, the opinion of M. de Montesquieu, though I know that several learned antiquaries have taken the word in a different fense. De l'Esprit des Loix, liv. xxx. c. 20, &c. The great object of judges was to compel the one party to give, and the other to accept the fatisfaction prescribed. They multiplied regulations to this purpose, and enforced them by grievous penalties. Leg. Longob. lib. i tit. 9. § 34. Ibid. tit. 37. § 1, 2. Capitul. vol. i. p. 371. § 22. The perfon who received a composition was obliged to cease from all farther hostility, and to confirm his reconciliation with the adverse party by an oath. Leg. Longob. lib. i. tit. 9. § 8. As an additional and more permanent evidence of reconciliation, he was required to grant a bond of fecurity to the person from whom he received a composition, abfolving him from all farther profecution. Marculfus, and the other collectors of ancient writs, have preferved feveral different forms of fuch bonds, Marc. lib. xi. § 18. Append. § 23. Form. Sirmondicæ, § 39. The Letters of Slanes, known in the law of Scotland, are perfectly fimilar to these bonds of fecurity. By the letters of Slanes, the heirs and relations of a person who had been murdered, bound themselves, in consideration of an Assythment or composition paid to them, to forgive, " pass over, and for ever forget, and in oblivion inter, all rancour, malice, revenge, prejudice, grudge, and refentment, that they have or may conceive against the aggressor or his posterity, for

the crime which he had committed, and discharge him of all action, civil or criminal, against him or his estate, for now and ever." System of Stiles by Dallas of St. Martin's, p. 862. In the ancient form of letters of Slanes, the private party not only forgives and forgets, but pardons and grants remiffion of the crime. This practice, Dallas, reasoning according to the principles of his own age, confiders as an encroachment on the rights of fovereignty, as none, fays he, could pardon a criminal but the king. Ibid. But in early and rude times, the profecution, the punishment, and the pardon of criminals, were all deeds of the private person who was injured. Madox has published two writs, one in the reign of Edward I. the other in the reign of Edward III. by which private persons grant a release or pardon of all trespasses, telonies, robberies, and murders committed. Formul. Anglican. No. 702. 705. In the last of these instruments, some regard feems to be paid to the rights of the fovereign, for the pardon is granted en quant que en nous est. Even after the authority of the magistrate was interposed in punishing crimes, the punishment of criminals is long contidered chiefly as a gratification to the refentment of the perions who have been injured. In Persia a murderer is still delivered to the relations of the perion whom he has flain. who put him to death with their own hands. If they refuse to accept of a sum of money as a compentation, the fovereign, absolute as he is, cannot pardon the murderer. Voyages de Chardin, iii p. 417. edit. 1735, 4to. Voyages de Tavernier, liv.

liv. 5. c. 5. 10. Among the Arabians, though one of the first polished people in the East, the same custom still subsists. Description de l'Arabie par M. Nieubuhr, p. 28. By a law in the kingdom of Aragon as late as the year 1564, the punishment of one condemned to death cannot be mitigated but by consent of the parties who have been injured. Fueros & Observancias del Reyno de Aragon, p. 204. 6.

IF, after all the engagements to cease from enmity which I have mentioned, any person renewed hostilities, and was guilty of any violence, either towards the person from whom he had received a composition, or towards his relations and heirs, this was deemed a most heinous crime, and punished with extraordinary rigour. It was an act of direct rebellion against the authority of the magistrate, and was repressed by the interposition of all his power. Leg. Longob. lib. i. tit. 9. § 8. 34. Capit. vol. i. p. 371. § 22. Thus the avenging of injuries was taken out of private hands, a legal composition was established, and peace and amity were restored under the inspection, and by the authority of a judge. It is evident, that at the time when the barbarians fettled in the provinces of the Roman Empire, they had fixed judges established among them with compulsive authority. Persons vested with this character are mentioned by the earliest historians. Du Cange. voc. Judices. The right of territorial jurisdiction was not altogether an usurpation of the feudal barons, or an invasion of the prerogative

prerogative of the fovereign. There is good reason to believe, that the powerful leaders, who feized different districts of the countries which they conquered, and kept possession of them as allodial property, assumed from the beginning the right of jurisdiction, and exercised it within their own territories. This jurifdiction was supreme, and extended to all causes. The clearest proofs of this are produced by M. Bouquet. Le Droit publique de France ecclairci, &c. tom. i. p. 206, &c. The privilege of judging his own vaffals, appears to have been originally a right inherent in every baron who held a fief. As far back as the archives of nations can conduct us with any certainty, we find the jurisdiction and fief united. One of the earliest charters to a layman which I have met with, is that of Ludovicus Pius, A. D. 814. And it contains the right of territorial jurisdiction, in the most express and extensive terms. Capitul. vol. ii. p. 1405. There are many charters to churches and monafteries of a more early date, containing grants of similar jurisdiction, and prohibiting any royal judge to enter the territories of those churches or monasteries, or to perform any act of judicial authority there. Bouquet Recueil des Hist. tom. iv. p. 628. 631. 633. tom. v. p. 703. 710. 752. 762. Muratori has published many very ancient charters containing the fame immunities. Antiq. Ital. Differt. lxx. In most of these deeds, the royal judge is prohibited from exacting the freda due to the possessor of territorial jurisdiction, which shews that they constituted a valuable part of the revenue of each superior lord at that juncture. The expence of obtaining a fen-

tence in a court of justice during the middle ages was so considerable, that this circumstance alone was fufficient to render men unwilling to decide any contest in judicial form. It appears from a charter in the thirteenth century, that the baron who had the right of justice, received the fifth part of the value of every subject, the property of which was tried and determined in his court. If, after the commencement of a law-fuit, the parties terminated the contest in an amicable manner, or by arbitration. they were nevertheless bound to pay the fifth part of the subject contested, to the court before which the fuit had been brought. Hist. de Dauphine. Geneve, 1722, tom. i. p. 22. Similar to this is a regulation in the charter of liberty granted to the town of Friburg, A.D. 1120. If two of the citizens shall quarrel, and if one of them shall complain to the superior lord or to his judge, and after commencing the fuit, shall be privately reconciled to his adversary, the judge, if he does not approve of this reconciliation, may compel him to go on with his law-fuit, and all who were present at the reconciliation shall forfeit the favour of the superior lord. Historia Zaringo Badensis. Auctor. Jo. Dan. Schoepflinus. Carolfr. 1765. 4to. vol. v. p. 55.

What was the extent of that jurisdiction which those who held fies possessed originally, we cannot now determine with certainty. It is evident that, during the disorders which prevailed in every kingdom of Europe, the great vassals took advantage of the feebleness of their Monarchs, and enlarged their jurisdictions to the utmost. As early as the tenth century,

century, the more powerful barons had usurped the right of deciding all causes, whether civil or criminal. They had acquired the High Juflice as well as the Low. Establ. de St. Louis, lib. i. c. 24, 25. Their fentences were final, and there lay no appeal from them to any superior court. Several striking instances of this are collected by Brussel. Traité des Fiefs, liv. iii. c. 11, 12, 13. Not fatisfied with this, the more potent barons got their territories erected into Regalities, with almost every royal prerogative and jurisdiction. Instances of these were frequent in France. Bruss. ibid. In Scotland, where the power of the feudal nobles became exorbitant, they were very numerous. Historical Law Tracts, vol. i. tract vi. Even in England, though the authority of the Norman kings circumfcribed the jurisdiction of the barons within more narrow limits than in any other feudal kingdom, feveral counties palatine were erected, into which the king's judges could not enter, and no writ could come in the King's name, until it received the feal of the county palatine. Spelman. Gloff. voc. Comites Palatini; Blackstone's Commentaries on the Laws of England, vol. iii. p. 78. These lords of regalities had a right to claim or rescue their vassals from the King's judges, if they assumed any jurisdiction over them. Bruffel, ubi fupra. In the law of Scotland this privilege was termed the right of repledging; and the frequency of it not only interrupted the course of justice, but gave rise to great disorders in the exercise of it. Hist. Law Tracts, ibid. The jurisdiction of the counties palatine seems to have

have been productive of like inconveniences in England.

THE remedies provided by Princes against the bad effects of these usurpations of the nobles, or inconfiderate grants of the crown, were various, and gradually applied. Under Charlemagne and his immediate descendants, the regal prerogative still retained great vigour, and the Duces, Comites, and Missi Dominici, the former of whom were ordinary and fixed judges, the latter extraordinary and itinerant judges, in the different provinces of their extensive dominions, exercised a jurisdiction co-ordinate with the barons in some cases. and fuperior to them in others. Du Cange; voc. Dux, Comites, & Missi. Murat. Antiq. Differt. viii. But under the feeble race of monarchs who fucceeded them, the authority of the royal judges declined, and the barons acquired that unlimited jurisdiction which has been described. Louis VI. of France attempted to revive the function of the Missi Dominici under the title of Juges des Exempts, but the barons were be. come too powerful to bear fuch an encroachment on their jurisdiction, and he was obliged to desist from employing them. Henaut Abregé Chron. tom. ii. p. 730. His fuccessor (as has been observed) had recourse to expedients less alarming. The appeal de defaute de droit, or on account of the refusal of justice, was the first which was attended with any considerable effect. According to the maxims of feudal law, if a baron had not as many vaffals as enabled him

him to try by their poers, the parties who offered to plead in his court, or if ne delayed or refuted to proceed in the trial, the cause might be carried, by appeal, to the court of the superior lord of whom the baron held, and tried there. De l'Efprit des Loix, liv. xxviii. c. 28. Du Cange, voc. defectus Justitiæ. The number of Peers or affessors in the courts of Barons was frequently very confiderable. It appears from a criminal trial in the court of the viscount de Lautrec, A. D 1299, that upwards of two hundred persons were present, and affifted in the trial, and voted in passing judgment. Hist. de Langued. par D. D. de Vic & Vaisette, tom. iv. Preuves, p. 114. But as the right of jurisdiction had been usurped by many inconsiderable barons, they were often unable to hold courts. This gave frequent occasion to fuch appeals, and rendered the practice familiar. By degrees fuch appeals began to be made from the courts of the more powerful barons, and it is evident, from a decision recorded by Brussel, that the royal juages were willing to give countenance to any pretext for them. Traité des Fiefs, tom. i. p. 235. 261. This species of appeal had less effect in abridging the juritdiction of the nobles, than the appeal on account of the injustice of the fentence. When the feudal monarchs were powerful, and their judges poff-ffed extensive authority, such appeals seem to have been frequent. Capitul. vol. i. p. 175. 180; and they were made in a manner fuitable to the rudeness of a fimple age. The persons aggrieved retorted to the palace of their fovereign, and with outcies and VOL. I. Bb loud

loud noise called to him for redress. Capitul. lib. iii. c. 59. Chronic. Lawterbergiense ap. Mencken. Script. German. vol. ii. p. 284. b. In the kingdom of Aragon, the appeals to the Justiza, or supreme judge, were taken in fuch a form as supposed the appeliant to be in immediate danger of death, or of fome violent outrage; he rushed into the presence of the judge, crying with a loud voice, Avi, Avi, Fuerza, Fuerza, thus imploring (as it were) the instant interposition of that supreme judge in order to save him. Hier. Blanca Comment. de rebus Aragon. ap. Script. Hispanic. Pistorii, vol. iii. p. 753. The abolition of the trial by combat facilitated the revival of appeals of this kind. The effects of the subordination which appeals established, in introducing attention, equity, and confistency of decifion into courts of judicature, were foon conspicuous; and almost all causes of importance were carried to be finally determined in the King's courts. Bruffel, tom. i. 252. Various circumstances which contributed towards the introduction and frequency of fuch appeals are enumerated De l'Esprit de Loix, liv. xxviii. c. 27. Nothing, however, was of fuch effect as the attention which monarchs gave to the constitution and dignity of their courts of justice. It was the ancient custom for the feudal monarchs, to prefide themselves in their courts, and to administer justice in person. Marculf. lib. i. § 25. Murat. Differt. xxxi. Charlemagne, whilft he was dreffing, used to call parties into his presence, and having heard and confidered the fubject of litigation, gave judgment concerning it. Eginhartus vita

vita Caroli magni, cited by Madox Hist. of Exchequer, vol. i. p. 91. This trial and decision of causes by the sovereigns themselves could not sail of rendering their courts respectable. St. Louis, who encouraged to the utmost it e practice of appeals, revived this ancient custom, and administered justice in person with all the ancient simplicity. "I have often feen the faint," fays Joinville, " fit under the shade of an oak in the wood of Vincennes, when all who had any complaint freely approached him. At other times he gave orders to spread a carpet in a garden, and feating himself upon it, heard the causes that were brought before him." Hist. de St. Louis, p. 13. edit. 1761. Princes of inferior rank, who poffessed the right of justice, fometimes dispensed it in person, and presided in their tribunals. Two instances of this occur with respect to the Dauphines of Vienne. Hist. de Dauphiné, tom. i. p. 18. tom. ii. p. 257. But as Kings and Princes could not decide every cause in person, nor bring them all to be determined in the fame court; they appointed Baillis, with a right of jurisdiction, in different districts of their kingdom. These possession powers fomewhat similar to those of the ancient Comites. It was towards the end of the twelfth century and beginning of the thirteenth, that this office was first instituted in France. Bruffel, liv. ii. c. 35. When the King had a court established in different quarters of his dominions, this invited his subjects to have resource to it. It was the private interest of the Baillis, as well as an object of public policy, to extend their jurisdiction. B b 2 They

They took advantage of every defect in the rights of the barons, and of every error in their proceedings, to remove causes out of their courts, and to bring them under their own cognizance. There was a distinction in the feudal law, and an extremely ancient one, between the high justice and the low. Capitul. 3. A. D. 812. § 4. A. D. 815. § 3. Establ. de St. Louis, liv. i. c. 40. Many barons possessed the latter jurisdiction who had no title to the former. The former included the right of trying crimes of every kind, even the highest; the latter was confined to petty trespasses. This furnished endless pretexts for obstructing, restraining, and reviewing the proceedings in the baron courts. Ordon. ii. 457. § 25. 458. § 29. A regulation of greater importance succeeded the institution of Baillis. The King's supreme court or parliament was rendered fixed as to the place, and constant as to the time of its meetings. In France, as well as in the other feudal kingdoms, the King's court of justice was originally ambulatory, followed the person of the monarch, and was held only during some of the great festivals. Philip Augustus, A. D. 1305, rendered it stationary at Paris, and continued its terms during the greater part of the year. Pasquier Recherches, liv. ii. c. 2. & 3, &c. Ordon. tom. i. p. 366. § 62. He and his fucceffors vested extensive powers in that court; they granted the members of it feveral privileges and diffinctions which it would be tedious to enumerate. Pasquier, ibid. Velly Hist. de France, tom. vii. p. 307. Persons eminent for integrity and

and skill in law were appointed judges there. Ibid. By degrees the final decision of all causes of importance was brought into the parliament of Paris, and the other parliaments which administered justice in the King's name, in different provinces of the kingdom. This jurisdiction, however, the parliament of Paris acquired very flowly, and the great vaffals of the crown made violent efforts in order to obstruct the attempts of that parliament to extend its authority. Towards the close of the thirteenth century, Philip the Fair was obliged to prohibit his parliament from taking cognizance of certain appeals brought into it from the courts of the Count of Bretagne, and to recognize and respect his right of supreme and final jurisdiction. Memoires pour servir de Preuves à l'Histoire de Bretagne par Morice, tom. i. p. 1037. 1074. Charles VI. at the end of the following century was obliged to confirm the rights of the Dukes of Bretagne in still more ample form. Ibid. tom. ii. p. 580, 581. So violent was the opposition of the barons to this right of appeal, which they confidered as fatal to their privileges and power, that the authors of the Encyclopedie have mentioned feveral instances in which barons put to death, or mutilated, such persons as ventured to appeal from the fentences pronounced in their courts, to the parliament of Paris, tom. xii. Art. Parlement, p. 25.

The progress of jurisdiction in the other seudal kingdoms was in a great measure similar to that which we have traced in France. In England, the territorial jurisdiction of the barons was both Bb 3 ancient

ancient and extensive. Leg. Edw. Conf. Nº 5. and o. After the Norman conquest it became more strictly feudal; and it is evident from facts recorded in the English history, as well as from the institution of Counties Palatine, which I have already mentioned, that the uturnations of the nobles in England were not less bold or extensive than those of their contemporaries on the continent. The fame expedients were employed to circumscribe or abolish those dangerous jurisdictions. William the Conqueror established a constant court in the hall of his palace; from which the four courts now entrusted with the administration of justice in England took their rife. Henry II. divided his kingdom into fix circuits, and fent itinerant judges to hold their courts in them at stated seasons. Blackstone's Commentaries on the Laws of England, vol. iii. 57. Justices of the peace were appointed in every county by subsequent monarchs; to whose jurisdiction the people gradually had recourse in many civil causes. The privileges of the Counties Palatine were gradually limited; with respect to some points they were abolished; and the administration of justice was brought into the King's courts, or before judges of his appointment. The feveral steps taken for this purpose are enumerated in Dalrymple's History of Feudal Property, chap. vii.

In Scotland the usurpations of the nobility were more exorbitant than in any other feudal kingdom. The progress of their encroachments, and the methods taken by the crown to limit or abolish their territorial and independent jurisdictions,

both

both which I had occasion to consider and explain in a former work, differed very little from those of which I have now given the detail. Hiftory of Scotland, vol. i. p. 45.

I should perplex myfelf and my readers in the labyrinth of German jurisprudence, if I were to attempt to delineate the progress of jurisdiction in the Empire, with a minute accuracy. It is fufficient to observe, that the authority which the Aulic council and Imperial chamber now possess, took its rife from the same defire of redressing the abutes of territorial jurifdiction, and was acquired in the same manner that the royal courts attained influence in other countries of Europe. All the important facts with respect to both these particulars, may be found in Phil. Datt, de pace publica Imperii, lib. iv. The capital articles are pointed out in Pfeffel Abregé de l'Histoire & Droit publique d'Allemagne, p. 556. 581.; and in Traité du Droit publique de l'Empire par M. le Cog. de Villeray. The two last treatises are of great authority, having been composed under the eye of M. Schoepflin of Strafburg, one of the ableft public lawyers in Germany.

NOTE XXIV. SECT. I. p. 78. [AA].

IT is not easy to fix with precision the period at which Ecclefiaftics first began to claim exemption from the civil jurisdiction. It is certain, that during the early and purest ages of the church, they pretended to no fuch immunity. The authority of

B b 4

the civil magistrate extended to all persons, and to all causes. This fact has not only been clearly established by Protestant authors, but is admitted by many Roman Catholics of eminence, and particularly by the writers in defence of the liberties of the Gallican church. There are feveral original papers published by Muratori, which shew that, in the ninth and tenth centuries, causes of the greatest importance relating to ecclefiaftics were still determined by civil judges. Antiq. Ital. vol. v. differt. lxx. Proofs of this are produced likewise by M. Houard, Anciennes Loix des François, &c. vol. i. p. 200. Ecclefiastics did not shake off all at once their subjection to civil courts. This privilege, like their other usurpations, was acquired flowly, and flep by flep. This exemption feems at first to have been merely an act of complaisance, flowing from veneration for their character. Thus from a charter of Charlemagne in favour of the church of Mans, A. D. 796, to which M. l'Abbé de Foy refers in his Notice de Diplomes, tom. i. p. 201, that monarch directs his judges, if any difference should arise between the administrators of the revenues of that church and any person whatever, not to fummon the administrators to appear in mallo publico; but first of all to meet with them, and to endeavour to accommodate the difference in an amicable manner. This indulgence was in process of time improved into a legal exemption; which was founded on the same superstitious respect of the laity for the clerical character and function. A remarkable instance of this occurs in a charter 14

a charter of Frederic Barbarossa, A. D. 1172, to the monastery of Altenburg. He grants them judicium non tantum sanguinolentis plagæ, sed vitæ æ mortis; he prohibits any of the royal judges from disturbing their jurisdiction; and the reason which he gives for this ample concession is, nam quorum, ex Dei gratia, ratione divini ministerii onus leve est, æ jugum suave; nos penitus nolumus illos oppressionis contumelia, vel manu Laica, fatigari. Mencken Script. rer. Germ. vol. iii. p. 1067.

It is not necessary for illustrating what is contained in the text, that I should describe the manner in which the code of the canon law was compiled, or shew that the doctrines in it most favourable to the power of the clergy, are founded on ignorance, or supported by fraud and forgery. The reader will find a full account of thele in Gerard. Van Mastricht. Historia Juris Ecclesiastici, & in Science de Government par M. Real, tom. vii. c. 1. & 3. § 2, 3, &c. The history of the progress and extent of ecclesiastical jurisdiction, with an account of the arts which the clergy employed in order to draw causes of every kind into the spiritual courts, is no less curious, and would throw great light upon many of the customs and institutions of the dark ages; but it is likewise foreign from the present subject. Du Cange in his Gloffary, voc. Curia Christianitatis, has collected most of the causes with respect to which the clergy arrogated an exclusive jurisdiction, and

refers to the authors, or original papers, which confirm his observations. Giannone in his Civil History of Naples, lib. xix. § 3. has ranged these under proper heads, and scrutinizes the pretensions of the church with his usual boldness and discernment. M. Fleury observes, that the clergy multiplied the pretexts for extending the authority of the spiritual courts with so much boldness, that it was foon in their power to withdraw almost every person and every cause from the jurisdiction of the civil magistrate. Hist. Eccles. tom. xix. Disc. Prelim. 16. But how ill-founded foever the jurifdiction of the clergy may have been, or whatever might be the abuses to which their manner of exercifing it gave rife, the principles and forms of their jurisprudence were far more perfect than that which was known in the civil courts. It feems to be certain that ecclefiaftics never fubmitted, during any period in the middle ages, to the laws contained in the codes of the barbarous nations, but were governed entirely by the Roman law. They regulated all their transactions by fuch of its maxims as were preferved by tradition, or were contained in the Theodofian code, and other books extant among them. This we learn from a custom which prevailed universally in those ages. Every person was permitted to chuse among the various codes of laws then in force, that to which he was willing to conform. In any transaction of importance, it was usual for the persons contracting to mention the law to which they fubmitted, that it might be known how

how any controversy that should arise between them was to be decided. Innumerable proofs of this occur in the charters of the middle ages. But the clergy confidered it as fuch a valuable privilege of their order to be governed by the Roman law, that when any person entered into holy orders, it was usual for him to renounce the code of laws to which he had been formerly subject, and to declare that he now fubmitted to the Roman law. Constat me Johannem clericum, filium quondam Verandi, qui prosessium, ex natione meâ, lege vivere Langobardorum, fed tamen, pro honore ecclefiastico, lege nunc videor vivere Romana. Charta, A. D. 1072. Farulfus prefbyter qui professus sum, more sacerdotii mei, lege vivere Romana. Charta, A. D. 1075. Muratori Antichita Estensi. vol. i. p. 78. See likewise Houard Anciennes Loix des François, &c. vol. i. p. 203.

The code of the canon law began to be compiled early in the ninth century. Mem. de l'Acad. des Inscript. tom. xviii. p. 346, &c. It was above two centuries after that before any collection was made of those customs, which were the rule of judgments in the courts of the barons. Spiritual judges decided, of course, according to written and known laws; Lay judges, lest without any fixed guide, were directed by loose traditionary customs. But besides this general advantage of the canon law, its forms and principles were more consonant to reason, and more favourable to the equitable decision of every point in controversy, than those which prevailed in lay courts. It appears from

Notes XXI. and XXIII concerning private wars, and the trial by combat, that the whole spirit of ecclefiastical juri-prudence was adverse to those fanguinary cuttoms which were destructive of justice; and the whole force of ecclefiaftical authority was exerted to abolish them, and to substitute trials by law and evidence in their room. Almost all the forms in lay courts, which contribute to establish, and continue to preferve order in judicial proceedings, are borrowed from the canon law. Fleury Instit. du droit canon. part iii. c. 6. p. 52. St. Louis, in his Establissemens, confirms many of his new regulations concerning property, and the administration of justice, by the authority of the canon law, from which he borrowed them. Thus, for instance, the first hint of attaching moveables for the recovery of a debt, was taken from the canon law. Estab. liv. ii. c. 21 and 40. And likewise the cessio bonorum, by a person who was in olvent. Ibid. In the same manner, he established new regulations with respect to the effects of perfons dying intestate, liv. i. c. 89. These and many other falutary regulations the Canonifts had borrowed from the Roman law. Many other examples might be produced of more perfect jurifprudence in the canon law than was known in lay courts. For that reason it was deemed an high privilege to be subject to ecclesiastical jurisdiction. Among the many immunities, by which men were allured to engage in the dangerous expeditions for the recovery of the Holy Land, one of the most confiderable was the declaring fuch as took the Cross

Cross to be subject only to the spiritual courts, and to the rules of decision observed in them. See Note XIII. and Du Cange, voc. crucis privilegia.

NOTE XXV. SECT. I. p. 80. [BB].

THE rapidity with which the knowledge and study of the Roman law spread over Europe is amazing. The copy of the Pandects was found at Amalphi, A. D. 1137. Irnerius opened a college of civil law at Bologna a few years after. Giann. Hist. book xi. c. 2. It began to be taught as a part of academical learning in different parts of France before the middle of the century. Vaccarius gave lectures on the civil law at Oxford, as early as the year 1147. A regular fystem of feudal law, formed plainly in imitation of the Roman code, was composed by two Milanese lawyers about the year 1150. Gratian published the code of canon law, with large additions and emendations, about the same time. The earliest collection of those customs, which served as the rules of decision in the courts of justice, is the Affices de ferusalem. They were compiled, as the preamble ioforms us, in the year 1099, and are called Jas Consuetudinarium quo regebatur regnum orientale. Willerm. Tyr. lib. xix. c. 2. But peculiar circumstances gave occasion to this early compilation. The victorious Cruraders lettled as a colony in a foreign country, and adventurers from ail the different nations of Europe composed this new 10ciety. It was necessary on that account to aftertain the laws and customs which were to regulate

the transactions of business, and the administration of justice among them. But in no country of Europe was there, at that time, any collection of customs, nor had any attempt been made to render law fixed. The first undertaking of that kind was by Glanville, Lord Chief Justice of England, in his Tractatus de Legibus & Consuetudinibus Angliæ, composed about the year 1181. The Regiam Maiestatem in Scotland, ascribed to David I. feems to be an imitation, and a fervile one of Glanville. Several Scottish Antiquaries, under the influence of that pious credulity, which difposes men to assent, without hesitation, to whatever they deem for the honour of their native country, contend zealoufly, that the Regiam Majestatem is a production prior to the treatife of Glanville; and have brought themselves to believe, that a nation, in a superior state of improvement, borrowed its laws and inflitutions from one confiderably less advanced in its political progress. The internal evidence (were it my province to examine it) by which this theory might be refuted, is, in my opinion, decisive. The external circumstances which have seduced Scottish authors into this mistake, have been explained with fo much precision and candour by Sir David Dalrymple, in his examination of some of the arguments for the high antiquity of Regiam Majestatem, Edin. 1769, 4to. that it is to be hoped the controversy will not be again revived. Pierre de Fontaines, who tells us, that he was the first who had attempted fuch a work in France, composed his 20 Confeil.

Confeil, which contains an account of the customs of the country of Vermandois, in the reign of St. Louis, which began A. D. 1226. Beaumanoir, the author of the Confirmes de Beauvoisis, lived about the fame time. The Establissemens of St. Louis, containing a large collection of the cuftoms which prevailed within the royal domains, were published by the authority of that monarch. As foon as men became acquainted with the advantages of having written customs and laws, to which they could have recourse on every occasion, the practice of collecting them became common. Charles VII. of France, by an ordonance A. D. 1453, appointed the customary laws in every province of France to be collected and arranged. Velley and Villaret. Histoire, tom. xvi. p. 113. His successor, Louis XI. renewed the injunction. But this falutary undertaking hath never been fully executed, and the juriforudence of the French nation remains more obscure and uncertain than it would have been if these prudent regulations of their monarchs had taken effect. A mode of judicial determination was established in the middle ages, which affords the clearest proof that judges, while they had no other rule to direct their decrees but unwritten and traditionary cuftoms, were often at a loss how to find out the facts and principles, according to which they were bound to decide. They were obliged, in dubious cases, to call a certain number of old men, and to lay the case before them, that they might inform them what was the practice or custom with regard to the point

point. This was called Enqueste par tourbe. Du Cange, voc. Turba. The effects of the revival of the Roman jurisprudence have been explained by M. de Montesquieu, liv. xxviii. c. 42. and by Mr. Hume, Hift. of England, vol. ii. p. 441. I have adopted many of their ideas. Who can pretend to review any subject which such writers have confidered, without receiving from them light and information? At the same time I am convinced, that the knowledge of the Roman law was not fo entirely lost in Europe during the middle ages, as is commonly believed. My subject does not require me to examine this point. Many strikin facts with regard to it are collected by Donato Antonio d'Asti Dall' Uso e autorita della regione civilè nelle provincie dell' Imperio Occidentale. Nap. 1751. 2 vol. Svo.

That the civil law is intimately connected with the municipal jurisprudence in several countries of Europe, is a fact so well known, that it needs no illustration. Even in England, where the common law is supposed to form a system perfectly distinct from the Roman code, and although such as apply in that country to the study of the common law boast of this distinction with some degree of affectation, it is evident that many of the ideas and maxims of the civil law are incorporated into the English jurisprudence. This is well illustrated by the ingenious and learned author of Observations on the Statutes, chiefly the more ancient, 3d edit. p. 76, &c.

NOTE XXVI. SECT. I. p. 82. [CC].

THE whole history of the middle ages makes it evident, that war was the fole profession of gentlemen, and almost the only object attended to in their education. Even after fome change in manners began to take place, and the civil arts of life had acquired some reputation, the ancient ideas with respect to the accomplishments necessary for a perfon of noble birth, continued long in force. In the Memoires de Fleuranges, p. 9, &c. we have an account of the youthful exercises and occupations of Francis I. and they were altogether martial and athletic. That father of letters owed his relish for them, not to education, but to his own good fense and good taste. The manners of the superior order of ecclefiastics during the middle ages furnish the strongest proof that, in some instances, the distinction of professions was not completely ascertained in Europe. The functions and character of the clergy are obvioufly very different from those of laymen; and among the inferior orders of churchmen, this constituted a distinct character separate from that of other citizens. But the dignified ecclefiaftics, who were frequently of noble birth, were above fuch a distinction; they retained the idea of what belonged to them as gentlemen, and in spite of the decrees of Popes, or the canons of councils, they bore arms, led their vaffals to the field, and fought at their head in battle. Among them the priesthood was scarcely a separate profession; the military accomplishments which they thought effential to them as gentlemen, were cultivated; the theological fcience, and pacific virtues VOL. I. Cc fuitable fuitable to their spiritual function, were neglected and despised.

As foon as the science of law became a laborious study, and the practice of it a separate profession, fuch persons as rose to eminence in it obtained honours which had formerly been appropriated to foldiers. Knighthood was the most illustrious mark of diffinction during feveral ages, and conferred privileges to which rank or birth alone were not entitled. To this high dignity persons eminent for their knowledge of law were advanced, and were thereby placed on a level with those whom their military talents had rendered conspicuous. Miles Justitiæ, Miles Literatus became common titles. Matthew Paris mentions such knights as early as A. D. 1251. If a judge attained a certain rank in the courts of justice, that alone gave him a right to the honour of knighthood. Pafquier Recherches. liv. xi. c. 16. p. 130. Differtations Historiques sur la Chevalerie par Honorè de Sainte Marie, p. 164, &c. A profession that led to offices, which ennobled the persons who held them, grew into credit, and the people of Europe became accustomed to see men rise to eminence by civil as well as military talents.

NOTE XXVII. SECT. I. p. 86. [DD].

The chief intention of these notes, was to bring at once under the view of my readers, such facts and circumstances as tend to illustrate or confirm what is contained in that part of the history to which they refer. When these lay scattered in many different authors, and were taken from books not generally

generally known, or which many of my readers might find it difagreeable to confult, I thought it would be of advantage to collect them together. But when every thing neceffary for the proof or illustration of my narrative or reasoning may be found in any one book which is generally known, or deserves to be so, I shall satisfy myself with referring to it. This is the case with respect to Chivalry. Almost every sact which I have mentioned in the text, together with many other curious and instructive particulars concerning this singular institution, may be found in Memoires sur l'ancienne Chevalerie considerée comme une establissement politique & militaire, par M. de la Curne de St. Palaye.

NOTE XXVIII. SECT. I. p. 91. [EE].

THE subject of my enquiries does not call me to write a history of the progress of science. The facts and observations which I have produced, are fufficient to illustrate the effects of its progress upon manners and the state of society. While science was altogether extinct in the western parts of Europe, it was cultivated in Constantinople and other parts of the Grecian Empire. But the subtile genius of the Greeks turned almost entirely to theological disputation. The Latins borrowed that spirit from them, and many of the controverfies which still occupy and divide theologians, took their rife among the Greeks, from whom the other Europeans derived a confiderable part of their knowledge. See the testimony of Æneas Sylvius ap. Conringium de antiq. academicis, p. 43. Histoire literaire de France, tom. vii. p. 113, &c.

C C 2

tom. ix. p. 151, &c. Soon after the Empire of the Caliphs was established in the East, some illustrious princes arole among them, who encouraged science. But when the Arabians turned their attention to the literature cultivated by the ancient Greeks and Romans, the chafte and correct tafte of their works of genius appeared frigid and unanimated to a people of a more warm imagination. Though they could not admire the poets and historians of Greece or of Rome, they were fensible of the merit of their philosophers. The operations of the intellect are more fixed and uniform than those of the fancy or tafte. Truth makes an impression nearly the fame in every place; the ideas of what is beautiful, elegant, or fublime, vary in different climates. The Arabians, though they neglected Homer, translated the most eminent of the Greek philosophers into their own language; and, guided by their precepts and discoveries, applied themselves with great ardour to the study of geometry, astronomy, medicine, dialectics, and metaphysics. In the three former they made confiderable and useful improvements, which have contributed not a little to advance those sciences to that high degree of perfection which they have attained. In the two latter, they chose Aristotle for their guide, and refining on the fubtle and diftinguishing spirit which characterizes his philosophy, they rendered it in a great degree frivolous or unintelligible. The schools established in the East for teaching and cultivating these sciences were inhigh reputation. They communicated their love of science to their countrymen, who conquered Africa and Spain; and the schools instituted

inflituted there were little inferior in fame to those in the East. Many of the persons who distinguished themselves by their proficiency in science during the twelfth and thirteenth centuries, were educated among the Arabians. Bruckerus collects many instances of this, Histor. Philos. v. iii. p. 681, &c. Almost all the men eminent for science during feveral centuries, if they did not refort in person to the schools in Africa and Spain, were instructed in the philosophy of the Arabians. The first knowledge of the Aristotelian philosophy in the middle ages was acquired by translations of Aristotle's works out of the Arabic. The Arabian commentators were deemed the most skilful and authentic guides in the study of his system. Conring. antiq. acad. Diff. iii. p. 95, &c. Supplem. p. 241, &c. Murat. antiquit. Ital. vol. iii. p. 932, &c. From them the Schoolmen derived the genius and principles of their philosophy, which contributed so much to retard the progress of true science.

THE establishment of Colleges or Universities is a remarkable æra in literary history. The schools in cathedrals and monafteries confined themselves chiefly to the teaching of grammar. There were only one or two mafters employed in that office. But in colleges, professors were appointed to teach all the different parts of science. The course or order of education was fixed. The time that ought to be allotted to the study of each science was ascertained. A regular form of trying the proficiency of students was prescribed; and academical titles and honours were conferred on fuch as acquitted

Cc3

themselves

themselves with approbation. A good account of the origin and nature of these is given by Seb Bacmeisterus Antiquitates Rostochienses, sive, Historia Urbis & Academiæ Rostoch. ap. Monumenta inedita Rer. Germ. per E. J. de Westphalen, vol. iii. p. 781. Lipf. 1743. The first obscure mention of these academical degrees in the university of Paris (from which the other universities in Europe have borrowed most of their customs and institutions) occurs A. D. 1215. Crevier. hist. de l'univ. de Paris, tom. i. p. 296, &c. They were completely established A. D. 1231. Ibid. 248. It is unnecesfary to enumerate the feveral privileges to which bachelors, mafters, and doctors were entitled. One circumstance is sufficient to demonstrate the high degree of estimation in which they were held. Doctors in the different faculties contended with knights for precedence, and the dispute was terminated in many instances by advancing the former to the dignity of knighthood, the high prerogatives of which I have mentioned. It was even afferted. that a doctor had a right to that title without creation. Bartolus taught—doctorem actualiter regentem in jure civili per decennium effici militem ipso facto. Honorè de St. Marie Dissert. p. 165. This was called Chevalerie de lectures, and the persons advanced to that dignity, Milites Clerici. These new establishments for education, together with the extraordinary honours conferred on learned men, greatly increased the number of scholars. In the year 1262, there were ten thousand students in the university of Bologna; and it appears from the history of that university, that law was the only

science taught in it at that time. In the year 1340, there were thirty thousand in the university of Oxford. Speed's Chron. ap. Anderson's Chronol. Deduction of Commerce, vol. i. p. 172. In the fame century, ten thousand persons voted in a question agitated in the university of Paris; and as graduates alone were admitted to that privilege, the number of students must have been very great. Velly Hift. de France, tom. xi. p. 147. There were indeed few universities in Europe at that time; but fuch a number of students may nevertheless be produced as a proof of the extraordinary ardour with which men applied to the study of science in those ages; it shows likewise that they already began to consider other professions beside that of a foldier as honourable and useful.

NOTE XXIX. SECT. I. p. 93. [FF].

THE great variety of subjects which I have endeavoured to illustrate, and the extent of this upon which I now enter, will justify my adopting the words of M. de Montesquieu, when he begins to treat of commerce. "The subject which follows "would require to be discussed more at large; but the nature of this work does not permit it. I wish to glide on a tranquil stream; but I am "hurried along by a torrent."

Many proofs occur in history of the little intercourse between nations during the middle ages. Towards the close of the tenth century, Count Bouchard, intending to found a monastery at St.

Cc4

Maur

Maur des Fosses, near Paris, applied to an abbot of Clogny in Burgundy, famous for his fanctity, intreating him to conduct the monks thither. The language in which he addressed that holy man is fingular: he tells him, that he had undertaken the labour of fuch a great journey; that he was fatigued with the length of it, therefore hoped to obtain his request, and that his journey into such a diffant country should not be in vain. The anfwer of the abbot is still more extraordinary: He refused to comply with his defire, as it would be extremely fatiguing to go along with him into a strange and unknown region. Vita Burchardi venerabilis Comitis ap. Bouquet Rec. des Hift. vol. x. p. 351. Even fo late as the beginning of the twelfth century, the monks of Ferrieres in the diocefe of Sens did not know that there was fuch a city as Tournay in Flanders; and the monks of St. Martin of Tournay were equally unacquainted with the fituation of Ferrieres. A transaction in which they were both concerned made it necessary for them to have some intercourse. The mutual interest of both monasteries prompted each to find out the fituation of the other. After a long fearch, which is particularly described, the discovery was made by accident. Herimannus Abbas de Restauratione St. Martini Tornacensis ap. Dacher. Spicel. vol. xii. p. 400. The ignorance of the middle ages with respect to the fituation and geography of remote countries was still more remarkable. The most ancient geographical chart which now remains as a monument of the state of that science in Europe during the middle

ages, is found in a manuscript of the Chronique de St. Denys. There the three parts of the earth then known are so represented, that Jerusalem is placed in the middle of the globe, and Alexandria appears to be as near to it as Nazareth. Mem. de l'Acad. des Belles Lettres, tom. xvi. p. 185. There feems to have been no inns or houses of entertainment for the reception of travellers during the middle ages. Murat. Antiq. Ital. vol. iii. p. 581, &c. This is a proof of the kittle intercourse which took place between different nations. Among people whose manners are simple, and who are feldom visited by strangers, hospitality is a virtue of the first rank. This duty of hospitality was so necessary in that state of society which took place during the middle ages, that it was not confidered as one of those virtues which men may practise or not, according to the temper of their minds, and the generofity of their hearts. Hospitality was enforced by flatutes, and fuch as neglected this duty were liable to punishment. Quicunque hofpiti venienti lectum, aut focum negaverit, trium folidorum inlatione mulctetur. Leg. Burgund. tit. xxxviii. § 1. Si quis homini aliquo pergenti in itinere mansionem vetaverit sexaginta solidos componat in publico. Capitul. lib, vi. § 82. This increase of the penalty, at a period so long after that in which the laws of the Burgundians were published, and when the state of society was much improved, is very remarkable. Other laws of the fame purport are collected by Jo. Fred. Polac. Systema Jurisprud. Germanicæ, Lips. 1733, p. 75.

The laws of the Slavi were more rigorous than any that he mentions; they ordained, " that the moveables of an inhospitable person should be confiscated, and his house burnt. They were even so solicitous for the entertainment of strangers, that they permitted the landlord to steal for the support of his guest." Quod noctu furatus fueris, cras appone, hospitibus. Rerum Mecleburgicar, lib. viii. a Mat. To. Beehr. Lipf. 1751, p. 50. In consequence of these laws, or of the state of society which made it proper to enact them, hospitality abounded while the intercourse among men was inconsiderable, and secured the stranger a kind reception under every roof where he chose to take shelter. This, too, proves clearly, that the intercourse among men was rare, for as foon as this became frequent, what was a pleasure became a burden, and the entertaining of travellers was converted into a branch of commerce

But the laws of the middle ages afford a proof still more convincing of the small intercourse between different nations. The genius of the seudal system, as well as the spirit of jealousy which always accompanies ignorance, concurred in discouraging strangers from settling in any new country. If a person removed from one province in a kingdom to another, he was bound within a year and day to acknowledge himself the vassal of the baron in whose estate he settled; if he neglected to do so, he became liable to a penalty; and, if at his death he neglected to leave

a certain legacy to the baron within whose territory he had refided, all his goods were confiscated. The hardships imposed on foreigners settling in a country, were still more intolerable. In more early times, the superior lord of any territory in which a foreigner fettled, might feize his person, and reduce him to servitude. Very striking instances of this occur in the history of the middle ages. The cruel depredations of the Normans in the ninth century, obliged many inhabitants of the maritime provinces of France to fly into the interior parts of the kingdom. But instead of being received with that humanity to which their wretched condition entitled them, they were reduced to a state of servitude. Both the civil and ecclefiaftical powers found it necessary to interpose, in order to put a stop to this barbarous practice. Potgiesser. de Statu Servor. lib. i. c. 1. § 16. In other countries, the laws permitted the inhabitants of the maritime provinces to reduce fuch as were shipwrecked on their coast to servitude. Ibid. § 17. This barbarous custom prevailed in many countries of Europe. The practice of feizing the goods of perfons who had been shipwrecked, and of confiscating them as the property of the lord on whose manor they were thrown, feems to have been universal. De Westphalen Monum. inedita Rer. Germ. vol. iv. p. 907, &c. et Du Cange, voc. Laganum, Beehr. Rer. Macleb. lib. p. 512. Among the ancient Welsh, three forts of persons, a madman, a stranger, and a leper, might be killed with impunity. Leges Hoel Dda, quoted in Observat. on the Statutes, chiefly the more ancient, p. 22. M. de Lauriere produces teveralancient deeds which prove, that in different provinces of France strangers became the flaves of the lord on whose lands they settled. Gloffaire du Droit François. Art. Aubaine. p. 92. Beaumanoir favs, "that there are feveral places in France, in which, if a stranger fixes his residence for a year and day, he becomes the flave of the lord of the manor." Couft, de Beav. ch. 45. p. 254. As a practice fo contrary to humanity could not fubfift long, the fuperior lords found it necessary to rest satisfied, instead of enflaving aliens, with levying certain annual taxes upon them, or impoling upon them fome extraordinary duties or fervices. But when any ftranger died, he could not convey his effects by will; and all his real as well as personal estate fell to the king, or to the lord of the barony, to the exclusion of his natural heirs. This is termed in France Droit D' Aubaine. Pref. de Laurier. Ordon. tom. i. p. 15. Bruffel. tom. ii. p. 944. Du Cange, voc. Albani. Pasquier Recherches, p. 367. This practice of confiscating the effects of strangers upon their death was very ancient. It is mentioned, though very obscurely, in a law of Charlemagne, A. D. 813. Capitul. Baluz. p. 507. § 5. Not only persons who were born in a foreign country were subject to the Droit D'Aubaine, but in some countries fuch as removed from one diocese to another, or from the lands of one baron to another. Bruffel. vol. ii. p. 947. 949. It is hardly possible to conceive any law more unfavourable to the intercourse between

between nations. Something fimilar to it, however, may be found in the ancient laws of every kingdom in Europe. With respect to Italy, see Murat. Ant. vol. ii. p. 14. As nations advanced in improvement this practice was gradually abolithed. It is no small difference to the French jurisprudence, that this barbarous, inhospitable custom should have so long remained among a people so highly civilized.

THE confusion and outrage which abounded under a feeble form of government, incapable of framing or executing falutary laws, rendered the communication between the different provinces of the same kingdom extremely dangerous. It appears from a letter of Lupus, abbot of Ferrieres, in the ninth century, that the highways were so much infested by banditti, that it was necessary for travellers to form themselves into companies or caravans, that they might be fafe from the affaults of robbers. Bouquet Recueil des Hift. vol. vii. p. 515. The numerous regulations published by Charles the Bald in the time century, discover the frequency of these disorders; and fuch acts of violence were become fo common. that by many they were hardly confidered as criminal. For this reason the inferior judges, called Centenarii, were required to take an oath, that they would neither commit any robbery themselves, nor protect such as were guilty of that crime. Capital. edit. Baluz. vol. ii. p. 63. 68. The historians of the ninth and tenth centuries give pathetic descriptions

of these disorders. Some remarkable passages to this purpose are collected by Mat. Jo. Beehr. Rer. Mecleb, lib, viii, p. 603. They became so frequent and audacious, that the authority of the civil magistrate was unable to repress them. The ecclesiastical jurisdiction was called in to aid it. Councils were held with great folemnity, the bodies of the faints were brought thither, and, in presence of their facred reliques, anathemas were denounced against robbers, and other violaters of the public peace. Bouquet Recueil des Hist. tom. x. p. 360. 431.536. One of these forms of excommunication, iffued A. D. 988, is still preserved, and is so singular, and composed with eloquence of such a peculiar kind, that it will not perhaps be deemed unworthy of a place here. After the usual introduction, and mentioning the outrage which gave occasion to the anathema, it runs thus: "Obtenebrescant oculi vestri, qui concupiverunt; arescant manus, quæ rapuerunt, debilitentur omnia membra, quæ adjuverunt. Semper laboretis, nec requiem inveniatis, fructuque vestri laboris privemini. Formidetis, & paveatis, à facie persequentis, & non persequentis hostis, ut tabescendo deficiatis. Sit portio vestra cum Juda traditore Domini, in terra mortis et tenebrarum; donec corda vestra ad satisfactionem plenam convertantur.—Ne cessant a vobis hæ maledictiones, scelerum vestrorum persecutrices, quamdiu permanebitis in peccato pervasionis. Amen, Fiat, Bouquet, ibid. p. 517.

NOTE XXX. Sect. I. p. 98. [GG].

WITH respect to the progress of commerce which I have described, p. 93, &c. it may be obferved, that the Italian states carried on some commerce with the cities of the Greek empire, as early as the age of Charlemagne, and imported into their own country the rich commodities of the East. Murat. Antiq. Ital. vol. ii. p. 882. In the tenth century, the Venetians had opened a trade with Alexandria in Egypt. Ibid. The inhabitants of Amalphi and Pifa had likewife extended their trade to the same ports. Murat. Ib. p. 884, 885. The effects of the Crusades in increafing the wealth and commerce of the Italian states, and particularly that which they carried on with the East, I have explained, page 34th of this volume. They not only imported the Indian commodities from the East, but established manufactures of curious fabric in their own country. Several of these are enumerated by Muratori in his Differtations concerning the arts and the weaving of the middle ages. Antiq. Ital. vol. ii. p. 349. 399. They made great progress, particularly in the manufacture of filk, which had long been peculiar to the eaftern provinces of Afia. Silk stuffs were of such high price in ancient Rome, that only a few persons of the first rank were able to purchase them. Under Aurelian, A. D. 270, a pound of filk was equal in value to a pound of gold. Absit ut auro fila pensentur. Libra enim auri tunc libra ferici fuit. Vopiscus in Aureliano. Justinian.

Justinian, in the fixth century, introduced the art of rearing filk-worms into Greece, which rendered the commodity fomewhat more plentiful, though ftill it was of fuch great value, as to remain an article of luxury or magnificence, referved only for persons of the first order, or for public solemnities. Roger I. king of Sicily, about the year 1130, carried off a number of artificers in the filk trade from Athens, and fettling them in Palermo, introduced the culture of filk into his kingdom, from which it was communicated to other parts of Italy. Gianon. Hift. of Naples, b. xi. c. 7. This feems to have rendered filk fo common, that, about the middle of the fourteenth century, a thousand citizens of Genoa appeared in one procession clad in filk robes. Sugar is likewife a production of the East. Some plants of the fugar-cane were brought from Asia; and the first attempt to cultivate them in Sicily was made about the middle of the twelfth century. From thence they were transplanted into the fouthern provinces of Spain. From Spain they were carried to the Canary and Madeira isles, and at length into the new world. Ludovico Guicciardini, in enumerating the goods imported into Antwerp about the year 1500, mentions the fugar which they received from Spain and Portugal as a confiderable article. He describes that sugar as the product of the Madeira and Canary islands. Defcritt. de Paesi Bassi, p. 180, 181. The sugar-cane was introduced into the West Indies before that time, but the cultivation of it was

not fo improved, or fo extensive as to furnish an article of much consequence in commerce. In the middle ages, though sugar was not raised in such quantities, or employed for so many purposes, as to become one of the common necessaries of life, it appears to have been a considerable article in the commerce of the Italian states.

THESE various commodities with which the Italians furnished the other nations of Europe, procured them a favourable reception in every kingdom. They were established in France in the thirteenth century with most extensive immunities. They not only obtained every indulgence favourable to their commerce, but personal rights and privileges were granted to them, which the natives of the kingdom did not enjoy. Ordon. tom. iv. p. 668. By a special proviso, they were exempted from the Droit d'Aubaine. Ibid. p. 670. As the Lombards (a name frequently given to all Italian merchants in many parts of Europe) engroffed the trade of every kingdom in which they fettled, they became masters of its cash. Money of course was in their hands not only a fign of the value of other commodities, but became an object of commerce itself. They dealt largely as bankers. In an ordonance, A. D. 1295, we find them stiled mercatores and campfores. They carried on this as well as other branches of their commerce with somewhat of that rapacious spirit which is natural to monopolizers who are not restrained by the competition of rival traders. An abfurd opinion, which prevailed in the middle ages, VOL. I. was,

was, however, in some measure, the cause of their exorbitant demands, and may be pleaded in apology for them. Trade cannot be carried on with advantage, unless the persons who lend a sum of money are allowed a certain premium for the use of it, as a compensation for the risk which they run in permitting another to traffic with their stock. premium is fixed by law in all commercial countries, and is called the legal interest of money. But the Fathers of the church had prepofteroufly applied the prohibitions of usury in scripture to the payment of legal interest, and condemned it as a fin. The schoolmen, missed by Aristotle, whose fentiments they followed implicitly, and without examination, adopted the fame error, and enforced it. Blackstone's Commentaries on the Laws of England, vol. ii. p. 455. Thus the Lombards found themselves engaged in a traffic which was every where deemed criminal and odious. They were liable to punishment if detected. They were not fatisfied, therefore, with that moderate premium, which they might have claimed if their trade had been open and authorifed by law. They exacted a fum proportional to the danger and infamy of a discovery. Accordingly, we find that it was usual for them to demand twenty per cent. for the use of money in the thirteenth century. Murat. Antiq. Ital. vol. i. p. 893. About the beginning of that century, the counters of Flanders was obliged to borrow money in order to pay her hufband's ranfom. She procured the fum requifite, either from Italian merchants or from Jews. The lowest 17

lowest interest which she paid to them was above twenty per cent. and fome of them exacted near thirty. Martene and Durand. Thefaur. Anecdotorum, vol. i. p. 886. In the fourteenth century, A. D. 1311, Philip IV. fixed the interest which might be legally exacted in the fairs of Champagne at twenty per cent. Ordonan. tom. i. p. 484. The interest of money in Aragon was somewhat lower. James I. A. D. 1242, fixed it by law at eighteen per cent. Petr. de Marca. Marca five Limes Hispan, app. 1433. As late as the year 1490, it appears that the interest of money in Placentia, was at the rate of forty per cent. This is the more extraordinary, because at that time the commerce of the Italian States was become confiderable. Memorie Storiche de Piacenza, tom. viii. p. 104. Piac. 1760. It appears from Lud. Guicciardini, that Charles V. had fixed the rate of interest in his dominions in the Low Countries at twelve per cent, and at the time when he wrote, about the year 1560, it was not uncommon to exact more than that fum. He complains of this as exorbitant, and points out its but effects both on agriculture and commerce. Descritt, di Paesi Bassi, p. 172. This high interest of money is alone a proof that the profits on commerce were exorbitant; and that it was not carried on to great extent. The Lombards were likewife established in England in the thirteenth century, and a confiderable fireet in the city of London still bears their nam: They enjoyed great privileges, and carried on an extensive commerce, particularly as bankers. See Dd2 Anderson's

Anderson's Chronol. Deduction. vol. i. p. 137. 160. 204. 231. where the statutes or other authorities which confirm this are quoted. But the chief mart for Italian commodities was at Bruges. Navigation was then so imperfect, that to fail from any port in the Bultic, and to return again, was a voyage too great to be performed in one fummer. For that reason, a magazine or storehouse half-way between the commercial cities in the north, and those in Italy, became necessary. Bruges was pitched upon as the most convenient flation. That choice introduced vast wealth into the Low Countries. Bruges was at once the staple for English wool; for the woollen and linen manufactures of the Netherlands; for the naval ftores and other bulky commodities of the North; and for the Indian commodities, as well as domestic productions imported by the Italian States. The extent of its commerce in Indian goods with Venice alone, appears from one fact. In the year 1318, five Venetian galeasses laden with Indian commodities arrived at Bruges, in order to dispote of their cargoes at the fair. There galeaffes were veffels of very considerable burden. L. Guic. Descritt. di Pach Baffi, p. 174. Bruges was the greatest emporium in all Europe. Many proofs of this occur in the historians and records of the thirteenth and Courteenth centuries. But, instead of multiplying quotations, I shall refer my readers to Anderson, vol. i. p. 12. 137. 213. 24), &c. The nature of this work prevents me from entering into any more minute detail, but there are fome detached facts, which 17

which give an high idea of the wealth both of the Flemish and It ian commercia thates. The Doke of Brabant contracted his daughter to the Back Prince, fon o' Edward III of Ling and, A. D. 1339, and gave her a portion which we may recit on to be of equal value with three hundred thouland pounds of our present mon y. Rymer's Fædera, vol. v. p. 113. John Gale. zzo Vitconti Duke of Milan concluded a treaty of marriage between I is daughter and Lionel Duke of Clarence, Edward's third fon, A. D. 1367, and granted her a portion equal to two hundred thousand ; ounds of our prefent money. Rymer's Fæder. vol. vi. p. 547. These exorbitant sums so far exceeding what was then granted by the most powerful monarchs, and which appear extraordinary even in the prefent age when the wealth of Europe is to much increased, must have arisen from the riches which flowed into thole countries from their extensive and lucrative commerce. The first source of wealth to the towns fituated on the Baltic fea feems to have been the herring fishery; the shoals of herrings frequenting at that time the coalls of Sweden and Denmark. in the same manner as they now refort to the British coasts. The effects of this filhery are thus deferibed by an author of the thirteenth century. The Danes, fays he, who were formerly clad in the poor garb of failors, are now clothed in fearlet, purple, and fine linen. For they abound with wealth flowing from their annual fifthery on the coast of Schonen; so that all nations resort to them, bringing their gold, filver, and precious com-

Dd3

medities,

modities, that they may purchase herrings, which the divine bounty beslows upon them. Arnoldus Lubecensis ap. Coming. de Urbib. German. § \$7.

THE Hanstatic league is the most powerful commercial confederacy known in history. Its origin towards the close of the twelfth century, and the objects of its union, are described by Knipschildt Tractarus Historico Politico Juridicus de Juribus Civitat. Imper. lib. i. cap. 4. Anderson has mentioned the chief facts with respect to their commercial progress, the extent of the privileges which they obtained in different countries, their successful wars with feveral monarchs, as well as the spirit and zeal with which they contended for those liberties and rights without which it is in peffible to carry on commerce to advantage. The vigorous efforts of a fociety of merchants attentive only to commercial objects, could not fail of defluting new and more liberal ideas concerning justice and order in every country of Europe where they fettled.

In England, the progress of commerce was extremely flow; and the causes of this are obvious. During the Saxon heptarchy, England, split into many petty kingdoms, which were perpetually at variance with each other; exposed to the sierce incursions of the Danes, and other northern pirates; and sunk in barbarity and ignorance, was in no condition to cultivate commerce, or to pursue any system of useful and salutary policy. When a better prospect began to open by the union of the kingdom

kingdom under one monarch, the Norman conquest took place. This occasioned such a violent shock, as well as fuch a fudden and total revolution of property, that the nation did not recover from it during feveral reigns. By the time that the conflitution began to acquire fome flability, and the English had so incorporated with their conquerors as to become one people, the nation engaged with no less ardour than imprudence in support of the pretentions of their tovereigns to the crown of France, and long wasted its vigour and genius in its wild efforts to conquer that kingdom. When by ill fuccefs, and repeated disappointments, a period was at last put to this fatal frenzy, and the nation beginning to enjoy fome repofe, had leifure to breathe and to gather new strength, the descructive wars between the houses of York and Lancaster broke out, and involved the kingdom in the worst of all calamities. Thus, befides the common obftructions of commerce occasioned by the nature of the feudal government, and the state of manners during the middle ages, its progress in England was retarded by peculiar causes. Such a succession of events adverte to the commercial spirit was sufficient to have checked its growth, although every other circumstance had favoured it. The English were accordingly one of the last nations in Europe who availed themselves of those commercial advantages which were natural or poculiar to their country. Before the reign of Edward III. all the wool of England, except a finall quantity wrought inro coarie cloths for home confumption, was fold to Dd4 the

the Flemings or Lombards, and manufactured by them. Though Edward, A. D. 1326, began to allure some of the Flemish weavers to settle in England, it was long before the English were capable of fabricating cloth for foreign markets, and the export of unwrought wool flill continued to be the chief article of their commerce. Anderson passim. - All foreign commodities were brought into England by the Lombards or Hanseatic merchants. The English ports were frequented by ships both from the north and fouth of Europe, and they amely allowed foreigners to reap all the profits arifing from the fupply of their wants. The first commercial treaty of England on record, is that with Haquin King of Norway, A. D. 1217. Anders. vol. i. p. 108. But the English did not venture to trade in their own ships to the Baltic until the beginning of the fourteenth century. Ibid. 151. It was after the middle of the fifteenth, before they fent any ship into the Mediterranean. Ibid. p. 177. Nor was it long before this period that their veffels began to visit the ports of Spain or Portugal. But though I have pointed out the flow progress of the English commerce as a fact little attended to, and yet meriting confideration; the concourse of foreigners to the ports of England, together with the communication among all the different countries in Europe, which went on increasing from the beginning of the twelfth century, is sufficient to justify all the observations and reasonings in the text concerning the influence of commerce on the state of manners and of society.

NOTE XXXI. SECT. III. p. 183. [HH].

I HAVE not been able to discover the precise manner in which the Justiza was appointed. Among the claims of the junta or union formed against James I. A. D. 1264, this was one; that the King should not nominate any person to be Justiza, without the confent or approbation of the ricoshombres or nobles. Zurita Anales de Aragon, vol. i. p. 180. But the King in his answer to their remonstrance afferts, "that it was established by immemorial practice, and was conformable to the laws of the kingdom, that the King, in virtue of his royal prerogative, should name the Justiza." Zurita, Ibid. 181. Blanca, 656. From another paffage in Zurita, it appears, that while the Aragonese enjoyed the privilege of the union, i. e. the power of confederating against their fovereign as often as they conscived that he had violated any of their rights and immunities, the Justiza was not only nominated by the King, but held his office during the King's pleafure. Nor was this practice attended with any bad effects, as the privilege of the union was a fufficient and effectual check to any abuse of the royal prerogative. But when the privilege of the union was abolithed as dangerous to the order and peace of fociety, it was agreed that the Justiza should continue in office during life. Several Kings, however, a tempted to remove Juilizas who were obnoxious to them, and they fometimes fucceeded in the attempt. In order to guard against this encroachment, which would would have destroyed the intention of the inftitution, and have rendered the Justiza the dependant and tool of the crown, inflead of the guardian of the people, a law was enacted in the Cortes, A. D. 1442, ordaining that the Justiza should continue in office during life, and should not be removed from it unless by the authority of the Cortes. Fueros & Observancias del Reyno de Arag. lib. i. p. 22. By former laws the person of the Justiza had been declared facred, and he was responsible only to the Cortes. Ibid. p. 15, b. Zurita and Blanca, who both published their histories while the Juffiza of Aragon retained the full exercise of his privileges and jurisdiction, have neglected to explain feveral circumstances with regard to the office of that respectable magistrate, because they sulfressed their works to their countrymen, who were well acquainted with every particular concoming the functions of a judge, to whom they looked up as to the guardian of their liberties. It is vain to confult the later historians of Spain, about any point with refrect to which the excellent hiftorians whom I have named are filent. The ancient constitution of their country was overturned. and despotisin established on the ruin of its liberties, when the writers of this and the preceding century composed their histories, and on that account they had little curiofity to know the nature of those institutions to which their ancestors owed the enjoyment of freedom, or they were afraid to describe them with much accuracy. The spirit with which Mariana, his continuator Miniana, and Ferreras.

Forreras, write their hittories, is very different from that of the two hittorians of Aragon, from whom I have taken my account of the conflictation of that kingdom.

Two circumstances concerning the Justiza, befides those which I have mentioned in the text, are worthy of observation, 1. None of the ricoshombres, or noblemen of the first order, could be appointed Justiza. He was taken out of the second clais of cava leros, who feem to have been nearly of the fame condition or rank with gentlemen or commoners in Great Britain. Fucros & Oblervanc. del Reyno, &c. lib. i. p. 21, b. The reason was, By the laws of Amgon, the ricos-hombres were not subject to capital punishment; but as it was necessary for the fecurity of liberty, that the Justiza should be accountable for the manuer in which he executed the high truth repoted in him, it was a powerful restraint upon him to know that he was liable to be punished capitally. Blanca, p. 657. 756. Zurita, tom. ii. 229. Fueros & Observanc. lib. ix. p. 182, b. 183. It appears too from many paffages in Zuritz, that the Justiza was appointed to check the domineering and oppreffive foirit of the nobles, as well as to fet bounds to the power of the monarch, and therefore he was chosen from an order of citizens equally interested in opposing both.

2. A magistrate possessed of such vast powers as the Justiza, might have exercised them in a manner

manner pernicious to the state, if he himself had been subject to no controul. A constitutional remedy was on that account provided against this danger. Seventeen persons were chosen by lot in each meeting of the Cortes. There formed a tribunal, called the court of inquisition, into the office of Justiza. This court met at three stated terms in each year. Every person had liberty of complaining to it of any iniquity or neglect of duty in the Justiza, or in the inferior judges, who acted in his name. The Justiza and his deputies were called to answer for their conduct. The members of the court passed sentence by ballot. They might punish by degradation, confiscation of goods, or even with death. The law which erected this court, and regulated the form of its procedure, was enacted A. p. 1461. Zurita Anales, iv. 102. Blanca Comment. Rer. Aragon, 770. Previous to this period, inquiry was made into the conduct of the Justiza, though not with the same formality. He was, from the first institution of the office, subject to the review of the Cortes. The constant dread of such an impartial and severe inquiry into his behaviour, was a powerful motive to the vigilant and faithful discharge of his duty. A remarkable instance of the authority of the Justiza, when opposed to that of the king, occurs in the year 1386. By the constitution of Aragon, the eldest son or heir apparent of the crown postfessed considerable power and jurisdiction in the kingdom. Fueros & Obfervan. del Reyno de Arag. lib. i. p. 16. Peter IV. instigated by a fecond

fecond wife, attempted to deprive his fon of this, and enjoined his fubjects to yield him no obedience. The Prince immediately applied to the Justiza; " the fafeguard and defence, fays Zurita, egainst all violence and oppression." The Justiza granted him the firmo de derecho, the effect of which was, that upon his giving furety to appear in judgment, he could not be deprived of any immunity or privilege which he poileffed, but in confequence of a legal trial before the Justiza, and of a fentence pronounced by him. This was published throughout the kingdom, and notwithstanding the proclamation in contradiction to this which had been issued by the King, the Prince continued in the exercise of all his rights, and his authority was univerfally recognized. Zurita Anales de Aragon, tom. ii. 385.

NOTE XXXII. SECT. III, p. 184. [11].

I have been induced, by the concurring testimony of many respectable authors, to mention this as the constitutional form of the oath of allegiance, which the Aragonese took to their Sovereigns. I must acknowledge, however, that I have not found this singular oath in any Spanish author whom I have had an opportunity of consulting. It is mentioned neither by Zurita, nor Bianca, nor Argensola, nor Sayas, who were all historiographers appointed by the Cortes of Aragon to record the transactions of the kingdom. All these writers possess a merit, which is very rare

among hittorians. They are extremely accurate in tracing the progress of the laws and constitution of their country. Their filence with respect to this, creates some suspicion concerning the genuinenets of the oath. But as it is mentioned by to many authors, who produce the ancient Spanish words in which it is expressed, it is probable that they have taken it from fome writer of credit, whose works have not fallen into my hands. The spirit of the oath is perfectly agreeable to the genius of the Aragonese constitution. Since the publication of the first edition, the learned M. Totze, Professor of History at Batzow in the Dutchy of Mecklenburgh, has been fo good as to point out to me a Spanish author of great authority, who has published the words of this oath. It is An. tonio Perez, a native of Aragon, fecretary to Philip II. The words of the oath are, " Nos. que valemos tanto como vos, os hazemos nuestro Rey y Segnor, con tal que nos guardeys nuestros fueros, y libertades, v fi No, No." Las Obras y Relaciones de Ant. Perez. Svo. par Juan de la Planche 1631. p. 143.

The privilege of Union which I have mentioned in the preceding note, and alluded to in the text, is indeed one of the most fingular which could take place in a regular government, and the oath that I have quoted expresses nothing more than this constitutional privilege entitled the Aragonese to perform. If the King or his ministers violated any of the laws or immunities of

the Aragonese, and did not grant immediate redrefs in confequence of their reprefentations and remonstrances, the nobles of the first rank, or Ricos-hombres de natura, & de mejnada, the equeitrian order, or the nobility of the fecond clais, called Hidalgos & Infanciones, together with the magistrates of cities, might, either in the Cortes, or in a voluntary affembly, join in union, and binding themselves by mutual oaths and the exchange of hostages to be faithful to each other, they might require the King, in the name and by the authority of this body corporate, to grant them redress. If the King refused to comply with their request, or took arms in order to oppose them, they might, in virtue of the privilege of union, inflantly withdraw their allegiance from the King, refuse to acknowledge him as their Sovereign, and proceed to elect another monarch; nor did they incur any guilt, or become liable to any profecution on that account. Blanca Com. Rer. Arag. 661. 660. This union did not refemble the confederacies in other feudal kingdoms. It was a conftitutional affociation, in which legal privileges were verted: which issued its mandates under a common feal, and proceeded in all its operations by regular and ascertained forms. This dangerous right was not only claimed, but exercised. In the year 1287, the Aragonele formed an union in opposition to Alfonso III. and obliged that King not only to comply with their demands, but to ratify a privilege to fatal to the power of the crown. Zuma Anales, tom. i. p. 322. In the year 1347, an union

union was formed against Peter IV. with equal fuccess, and a new ratification of the privilege was extorted. Zurita, tom. ii. p. 202. But foon after, the King having defeated the leaders of the union in battle, the privilege of union was finally abrogated in the Cortes, and all the laws or records which contained any confirmation of it were cancelled or deftroyed. The King, in prefence of the Cortes, called for the act whereby he had ratified the union, and having wounded his hand with his poniard, he held it above the record, "that privilege, fays he, which has been " fo fatal to the kingdom, and fo injurious to royalty, should be effaced with the blood of a 66 King." Zurita, tom. ii. p. 229. The law abolishing the union is published. Fueros & Observanc. lib. ix. p. 178. From that period, the Justiza became the constitutional guardian of public liberty, and his power and jurisdiction occasioned none of those violent convulsions which the tumultuary privilege of the union was apt to produce. The constitution of Aragon, however, still remained extremely free. One fource of this liberty arose from the early admission of the reprefentatives of cities into the Cortes. It feems probable from Zurita, that burgeffes were constituent members of the Cortes from its first institution. He mentions a meeting of Cortes, A. D. 1133, in which the procuraciones de las ciudades y villas were present. Tom. i. p. 51. This is the constitutional language in which their prefence is declared in the Cortes, after the journals of that court

were regularly kept. It is probable, that an hiftorian to accurate as Zurita would not have used these words, if he had not taken them from some authentic record. It was more than a century after this period before the representatives of cities formed a constituent part in the supreme assemblies of the other European nations. The free spirit of the Aragonese government is conspicuous in many particulars. The Cortes not only opposed the attempts of their kings to increase their revenue, or to extend their prerogative, but they claimed rights and exercifed powers which will appear extraordinary even in a country accustomed to the enjoyment of liberty. In the year 1286, the Cortes claimed the privilege of naming the members of the King's council and the officers of his household, and they feem to have obtained it for some time. Zurita, tom. i. p. 303. 307. It was the privilege of the Cortes to name the officers who commanded the troops raifed by their authority. This feems to be evident from a passage in Zurita. When the Cortes, in the year 1503, raifed a body of troops to be employed in Italy, it paffed an act empowering the King to name the officers who should command them, Zurita, tom. v. p. 274; which plainly implies that without this warrant it did not belong to him in virtue of his prerogative. In the Fueros & Observancias del Reyno de Aragon, two general declarations of the rights and privileges of the Aragonese are published; the one in the reign of Pedro I. A. D. 1283, the other in that of James II. A. D. 1325. VOL. I. Еe

They are of fuch a length, that I cannot infert them; but it is evident from these, that not only the privileges of the nobility, but the rights of the people, personal as well as political, were, at that period, more extensive and better understood than in any kingdom in Europe. Lib. i. p. 7.9. The oath by which the King bound himfelf to observe those rights and liberties of the people, was very folemn. Ibid. p. 14, b. & p. 15. The Cortes of Aragon discovered not only the jealousy and vigilance which are peculiar to free states, in guarding the effential parts of the constitution, but they were forupulously attentive to observe the most minute forms and ceremonies to which they were accustomed. According to the established laws and customs of Aragon, no foreigner had liberty to enter the hall in which the Cortes affembled. Ferdinand, in the year 1481, appointed his Queen. Isabella, regent of the kingdom, while he was absent during the course of the campaign. The law required that a regent should take the oath of fidelity in presence of the Cortes; but as Isabella was a foreigner, before the could be admitted, the Cortes thought it necessary to pass an act authorizing the ferjeant-porter to open the door of the hall, and to allow her to enter; " fo attentive were they " (fays Zurita) to observe their laws and forms, even fuch as may feem most minute." Tom. iv. p. 313.

THE Aragonese were no less solicitous to secure the personal rights of individuals, than to maintain

the freedom of the constitution; and the spirit of their statutes with respect to both was equally liberal. Two facts relative to this matter merit obfervation. By an express statute in the year 1335, it was declared to be unlawful to put any native Aragonese to the torture. If he could not be convicted by the testimony of witnesses, he was instantly absolved. Zurita, tom. ii. p. 66. Zurita records the regulation with the fatisfaction natural to an historian, when he contemplates the humanity of his countrymen. He compares the laws of Aragon to those of Rome, as both exempted citizens and freemen from fuch ignominious and cruel treatment, and had recourse to it only in the trial of flaves. Zurita had reason to bestow such an encomium on the laws of his country. Torture was at that time permitted by the laws of every other nation in Europe. Even in England, from which the mild spirit of legislation has long banished it, torture was not, at that time, unknown. Observations on the Statutes, chiefly the more ancient, &c. p. 66.

THE other fact shows, that the same spirit which influenced the legislature prevailed among the people. In the year 1485, the religious zeal of Ferdinand and Isabella prompted them to introduce the inquisition into Aragon. Though the Aragonese were no less superstitiously attached than the other Spaniards to the Roman Catholic saith, and no less desirous to root out the seeds

Ee 2

of error and of herefy which the Jews and Moors had scattered, yet they took arms against the inquisitors, murdered the chief inquisitor, and long opposed the establishment of that tribunal. The reason which they gave for their conduct was, That the mode of trial in the inquisition was inconsistent with liberty. The criminal was not constronted with the witnesses, he was not acquainted with what they deposed against him, he was subjected to torture, and the goods of persons condemned were consistented. Zurita Anales, tom. iv. p. 341.

THE form of government in the kingdom of Valencia, and principality of Catalonia, which were annexed to the crown of Aragon, was likewise extremely favourable to liberty. The Valencians enjoyed the privilege of union in the same manner with the Aragonese. But they had no magistrate resembling the Justiza. The Catalonians were no less jealous of their liberties than the two other nations, and no less bold in afferting them. But it is not necessary for illustrating the following history to enter into any further detail concerning the peculiarities in the constitution of these kingdoms.

NOTE XXXIII. SECT. III. p. 185. [KK].

I HAVE fearched in vain among the historians of Castile for such information as might enable me to trace the progress of laws and government

in Castile, or to explain the nature of the constitution with the same degree of accuracy wherewith I have described the political state of Aragon. It is manifest not only from the historians of Castile, but from its ancient laws, particularly the Fuero Juzgo, that its monarchs were originally elective. Ley 2. 5. 8. They were chosen by the bishops, the nobility, and the people, ibid. It appears from the same venerable code of laws, that the prerogative of the Castilian monarchs was extremely limited. Villaldiego, in his commentary on the Fuero Juzgo, produces many facts and authorities in confirmation of both these particulars. Dr. Geddes, who was well acquainted with Spanish literature, complains that he could find no author who gave a distinct account of the Cortes or supreme affembly of the nation, or who described the manner in which it was held, or mentioned the precise number of members who had a right to fit in it. He produces, however, from Gil Gonzales d'Avila, who published a history of Henry II. the writ of fummons to the town of Abula, requiring it to chuse representatives to appear in the Cortes which he called to meet A. D. 1390. From this we learn, that Prelates, Dukes, Marquisses, the masters of the three military orders, Condes and Ricos-hombres, were required to attend. These composed the bodies of ecclefiaftics and nobles, which formed two members of the legislature. The cities which fent members to that meeting of the Cortes were forty-eight. The number of representatives (for the cities had Ec 3 right

right to chuse more or sewer according to their respective dignity) amounted to an hundred and twenty-sive. Geddes' Miscellaneous Tracts, vol. i. 331. Zurita having occasion to mention the Cortes which Ferdinand held at Toro A. D. 1505, in order to secure for himself the government of Castile after the death of Isabella, records, with his usual accuracy, the names of the members present, and of the cities which they represented. From that list it appears, that only eighteen cities had deputies in this assembly. Anales de Aragon, tom. vi. p. 3. What was the occasion of this great difference in the number of cities represented in these two meetings of the Cortes, I am unable to explain.

NOTE XXXIV. SECT. III. p. 187. [LL].

A GREAT part of the territory in Spain was engroffed by the nobility. L. Marinæus Siculus, who composed his treatise De Rebus Hispaniæ during the reign of Charles V. gives a catalogue of the Spanish nobility, together with the yearly rent of their estates. According to his account, which he affirms was as accurate as the nature of the fubject would admit, the fum total of the annual revenue of their lands amounted to one million four hundred and eighty-two thousand ducats. If we make allowance for the great difference in the value of money in the fifteenth century from that which it now bears, and confider that the catalogue of Marinæus includes only the Titulados, or nobility whose families were diffinguished by some honorary

honorary title, their wealth must appear very great. L. Marinæus ap. Schotti Scriptores Hispan. vol. i. p. 323. The Commons of Castile, in their contests with the Crown, which I shall hereafter relate, complain of the extensive property of the nobility as extremely pernicious to the kingdom. In one of their manifestoes they affert, that from Valladolid to St. Jago in Galicia, which was an hundred leagues, the crown did not possess more than three villages. All the rest belonged to the nobility, and could be subjected to no public burden. Sandov. Vida del Emperor Carl. V. vol. i. p. 422. It appears from the testimony of authors quoted by Bovadilla, that these extensive possessions were bestowed upon the Ricos-hombres, hidalgos, and cavalleros, by the Kings of Castile, in reward for the affistance which they had received from them in expelling the Moors. They likewise obtained by the same means a confiderable influence in the cities, many of which anciently depended upon the nobility. Politica para Corregidores. Amb. 1750, fol. vol. i. 440. 442.

NOTE XXXV. SECT. III. p. 190. [MM].

I HAVE been able to discover nothing certain, as I observed, Note XVIII, with respect to the origin of communities or free cities in Spain. It is probable, that as soon as the considerable towns were recovered from the Moors, the inhabitants who fixed their residence in them, being persons of distinction and credit, had all the privilege of E e 4 municipal

municipal government and jurisdiction conferred upon them. Many striking proofs occur of the splendour, wealth, and power of the Spanish cities. Hieronymus Paulus wrote a description of Barcelona in the year 1491, and compares the dimenfions of the town to that of Naples, and the elegance of its buildings, the variety of its manufactures, and the extent of its commerce, to Florence. Hieron. Paulus ap. Schottum Script. Hifp. ii. 844. Marinæus describes Toledo as a large and populous city. A great number of its inhabitants were persons of quality and of illustrious rank. Its commerce was great. It carried on with great activity and fuccess the manufactures of filk and wool; and the number of inhabitants employed in these two branches of trade, amounted nearly to ten thousand. Marin. ubi supr. p. 308. I know no city, fays he, that I would prefer to Valladolid for elegance and splendour. Ibid. p. 312. We may form some estimate of its populoutness from the following circumstances. The citizens having taken arms in the year 1516, in order to oppose a meafure concerted by cardinal Ximenes, they mustered in the city, and in the territory which belonged to it, thirty thousand fighting men. Sandov. Vida del Emper. Carl. V. tom. i. p. 81. The manufactures carried on in the towns of Spain were not intended merely for home confumption, they were exported to foreign countries, and their commerce was a confiderable fource of wealth to the inhabitants. The maritime laws of Barcelona are the foundation of mercantile jurisprudence 15

jurisprudence in modern times, as the Leges Rhodiæ were among the ancients. All the commercial states in Italy adopted these laws, and regulated their trade according to them. Sandi Storia Civile Veneziani, vol. ii. 865. It appears from feveral ordonances of the Kings of France, that the merchants of Amgon and Caffile were received on the same footing, and admitted to the same privileges with those of Italy. Ordenances des hoys, &c. tom. ii. p. 135. iii. 166. 504. 635. Cities in fuch a flourishing state became a respectable part of the fociety, and were entitled to a confiderable share in the legislature. The magistrates of Barcelona aspired to the highest honour a Spanish subject can enjoy, that of being covered in the presence of their fovereign, and of being treated as grandees of the kingdom. Origin de la dignidad de Grande de Castilla por don Alonso Carillo. Madr. 1657. p. 18.

NOTE XXXVI. SECT. III. p. 193. [NN].

The military order of St. Jago, the most honourable and opulent of the three Spanish orders, was instituted about the year 1170. The bull of confirmation by Alexander III. is dated A. D. 1176. At that time a considerable part of Spain still remained under subjection to the Moors, and the whole country was much exposed to depredations not only of the enemy, but of banditti. It is no wonder, then, that an institution, the object of which was to oppose the enemies of the Christian taich, and to restrain and punish those who

who disturbed the public peace, should be extremely popular, and meet with general encouragement. The wealth and power of the order became so great, that, according to one historian. the Grand Master of St. Jago was the person in Spain of greatest power and dignity next to the King. Æl. Anton. Nebriffenfis, ap. Schott. Scrip. Hisp. i. 812. Another historian observes, that the order possessed every thing in Castile that a King would most defire to obtain. Zurita Anales, v. 22. The knights took the vows of obedience, of poverty, and of conjugal chaftity. By the former they were bound implicitly to obey the commands of their grand mafter. The order could bring into the field a thousand men at arms. Æl. Ant. Nebriff, p. 813. If, as we have reason to believe, these men at arms were accompanied, as was usual in that age, this was a formidable body of cavalry. There belonged to this order eighty-four commanderies, and two hundred priories and other benefices. Differtations fur la Chevalerie par Hon. de St. Marie, p. 262. It is obvious how formidable to his fovereign the command of these troops, the administration of fuch revenues, and the disposal of so many offices, must have rendered a subject. The other two orders, though inferior to that of St. Jago in power and wealth, were nevertheless very confiderable fraternities. When the conquest of Granada deprived the knights of St. Jago of those enemies against whom their zeal was originally directed, superstition found out a new object, in defence

defence of which they engaged to employ their courage. To their usual oath, they added the following clause: "We do swear to believe, to maintain, and to contend in public and in private, that the Virgin Mary, the Mother of God, our Lady, was conceived without the stain of original fin." This addition was made about the middle of the seventeenth century. Honorè de St. Marie Differtations, &c. p. 263.-Nor is fuch a fingular engagement peculiar to the order of St. Jago. The members of the fecond military order in Spain, that of Calatrava, equally zealous to employ their prowefs in defence of the honours of the Bleffed Virgin, have likewife profeffed themselves her true knights. Their vow, conceived in terms more theologically accurate than that of St. Jago, may afford fome amusement to an English reader. "I vow to God, to the Grand Master, and to you who here represent his person, that now, and for ever, I will maintain and contend, that the Virgin Mary, Mother of God, our Lady, was conceived without original fin, and never incurred the pollution of it; but that in the moment of her happy conception, and of the union of her foul with her body, the Divine Grace prevented and preserved her from original guilt, by the merits of the passion and death of Christ our Redeemer, her future Son, foreseen in the Divine Council, by which the was truly redeemed, and by a more noble kind of redemption than any of the children of Adam. In the belief of this truth, and in maintaining the honour of the most Holy Virgin, through the strength of Almighty

Almighty God, I will live and will die." Definiciones de la Orden de Calatrava, conforme al Capitulo General en 1652, fol. Madr. 1748. p. 153. Though the church of Rome hath prudently avoided to give its fanction to the doctrine of the immaculate conception, and the two great monaftic orders of St. Dominick and St. Francis have efpouled opposite opinions concerning it, the Spaniards are fuch ardent champions for the honour of the Virgin, that when the present King of Spain instituted a new military order in the year 1771, in commemoration of the birth of his grandfon, he put it under the immediate protection of the most Holy Mary in the mystery of her immaculate conception. Constitutiones de la Real y distinguida Orden. Espanola de Carlos III. p. 7. To undertake the defence of the Virgin Mary's honour had fuch a relemblance to that species of refined gallantry, which was the original object of chivalry, that the zeal with which the military orders bound themselves, by a solemn vow, to defend it, was worthy of a true knight, in those ages when the spirit of the inftitution subtisted in full vigour. But in the present age, it must excite some surprise to see the institution of an illustrious order connected with a doctrine so extravagant and destitute of any foundation in Scripture.

NOTE XXXVII. SECT. III. p. 196. [OO].

I HAVE frequently had occasion to take notice of the defects in police during the middle ages, occasioned by the seebleness of government, and

the want of proper fubordination among the different ranks of men. I have observed in a former Note, that this greatly interrupted the intercourse between nations, and even between different places in the fame kingdom. The description which the Spanish historians give of the frequency of rapine, murder, and every act of violence, in all the provinces of Spain, are amazing, and prefent to us the idea of a fociety but little removed from the diforder and turbulence of that which has been called a state of nature. Zurita Anales de Arag. i. 175. Æl. Ant. Nebriffensis rer. a Ferdin. gestar. Hift. ap. Schottum, II. 849. Though the excess of these disorders rendered the institution of the Santa Hermandad necessary, great care was taken at first to avoid giving any offence or alarm to the nobility. The jurifdiction of the judges of the Hermandad was expressly confined to crimes which violated the public peace. All other offences were left to the cognizance of the ordinary judges. If a person was guilty of the most notorious perjury, in any trial before a judge of the Hermandad, he could not punish him, but was obliged to remit the case to the ordinary judge of the place. Commentaria in Regias Hispan. Constitut. per Alph. de Azevedo, pars v. p. 22c. &c. fol. Duaci, 1612. Notwithstanding these restrictions, the barons were early sensible how much the establishment of the Hermandad would encroach on their jurisdiction. In Castile, some opposition was made to the institution; but Ferdinand had the address to obtain the consent of

the Constable to the introduction of the Here mandad into that part of the kingdom where his estate lay; and by that means, as well as the popularity of the institution, he surmounted every obstacle that stood in its way. Æl. Ant. Nebriffen. 851. In Aragon, the nobles combined against it with great spirit; and Ferdinand, though he supported it with vigour, was obliged to make fome concessions in order to reconcile them. Zurita Anales de Arag. iv. 356. The power and revenue of the Hermandad in Castile feems to have been very great. Ferdinand, when preparing for the war against the Moors of Granada, required of the Hermandad to furnish him fixteen thousand beafts of burden, together with eight thousand men to conduct them, and he obtained what he demanded. Æl. Ant. Nebriff. 881. The Hermandad has been found to be of fo much use in preserving peace, and restraining or detecting crimes, that it is still continued in Spain; but as it is no longer necessary either for moderating the power of the nobility, or extending that of the crown, the vigour and authority of the inflitution diminish gradually.

NOTE XXXVIII. SECT. III. p. 199. [PP].

Nothing is more common among Antiquaries, and there is not a more copious fource of error, than to decide concerning the infitutions and manners of past ages, by the forms and ideas which prevail in their own times. The French lawyers in the seventeenth and eighteenth centuries, having

having found their fovereigns in possession of abfolute power, feem to think it a duty incumbert on them to maintain that fuch unbounded authority belonged to the crown in every periol of their monarchy. "The government of France," fays M. de Real very gravely, "is purely monarchical at this day, as it was from the beginning. Our Kings were absolute originally as they are at present." Science du Governement, tom. it. p. 31. It is impossible, however, to conceive two states of civil fociety more unlike to each other, than that of the French nation under Clovis, and that under Louis XV. It is evident from the codes of laws of the various tribes which fettled in Gaul and the countries adjacent to it, as well as from the history of Gregory of Tours, and other early annalists, that among all these people the form of government was extremely rude and fimple, and that they had scarcely begun to acquire the first rudiments of that order and police which are neceffary in extensive societies. The King or leader had the command of foldiers or companions, who followed his standard from choice, not by constraint. I have produced the clearest evidence of this, Note VI. An event related by Gregory of Tours, lib. iv. c. 14. affords the most striking proof of the dependence of the early French Kings on the fentiment and inclination of their people. Clotaire I. having marched at the head of his army, in the year 553, against the Saxons, that people, intimidated at his approach, fued for peace, and

and offered to pay a large fum to the offended monarch. Clotaire was willing to close with what they proposed. But his army insisted to be led forth to battle. The King employed all his eloquence to persuade them to accept of what the Saxons were ready to pay. The Saxons, in order to sooth them, increated their original offer. The King renewed his solicitations: But the army enraged, rushed upon the King, tore his tent in pieces, dragged him out of it, and would have slain him on the spot, if he had not consented to lead them instantly against the enemy.

IF the early monarchs of France possessed such limited authority, even while at the head of their army, their prerogative during peace will be found to be still more confined. They afcended the throne not by any hereditary right, but in confequence of the election of their fubjects. In order to avoid an unnecessary number of quotations, I refer my readers to Hottomanni Franco-gallia, cap. vi. p. 47. edit. 1573. where they will find the fullest proof of this from Gregory of Tours, Amoinus, and the most authentic historians of the Merovingian Kings. The effect of this election was not to invest them with absolute power. Whatever related to the general welfare of the nation, was submitted to public deliberation, and determined by the fuffrage of the people, in the annual affemblies called Les Champs de Mars and Les Champs de Mai. Mai. These affemblies were called Champs, because, according to the custom of all the barbarous nations, they were held in the open air, in some plain capable of containing the vast number of persons who had a right to be present. Jo. Jac. Sorberus de Comitiis veterum Germanorum, vol. i. § 19, &c. They were denominated Champs de Mars and de Mai, from the months in which they were held. Every freeman feems to have had a right to be present in these assemblies. Sorberus, ibid. § 133, &c. The ancient annals of the Franks describe the persons who were present in the affembly held A. D. 788, in these words: In placito Ingelheimensi conveniunt pontifices, majores, minores, facerdotes, reguli, duces, comites, præfecti, cives, oppidani, Apud Sorber. § 304. There every thing that concerned the happiness of their country, fays an ancient historian, every thing that could be of benefit to the Franks, was confidered and enjoined. Fredegarius ap. Du Cange Glossar. voc. Campus Martii. Chlotharius II. describes the business, and acknowledges the authority of these affemblies. They are called, says he, that whatever relates to the common fafety may be confidered and resolved by common deliberation; and whatever they determine, to that I will conform. Amoinus de Gest. Franc. lib. iv. c. i. ap. Bouquet Recueil, iii. 116. The statutory clauses, or words of legislative authority in the decrees issued in these assemblies, run not in the name of the King alone. "We have treated. fays Childebert, in a decree, A. D. 532, in the VOL. I. Ff affembly

affembly of March, together with our Nobles. concerning fome affairs, and we now publish the conclusion, that it may come to the knowledge of all." Childeb. Decret. ap. Bouquet Recueil des Histor. tom. iv. p. 3. We have agreed together with our vaffals. Ibid. § 2. It is agreed in the affembly in which we were all united. Ibid. § 4. The Salic laws, the most venerable monument of French jurisprudence, were enacted in the same Dictaverunt Salicam legem proceres ipfius gentis, qui tunc temporis apud eam erant Rectores. Sunt autem electi de pluribus viri quatuor-qui per tres Mallos convenientes, omnes causarum origines solicité discurrendo, tractantes de fingulis judicium decreverunt hoc modo. Præf. Leg. Salic. ap. Bouquet. Ibid. p. 122. Hoc decretum est apud regem & principes ejus, & apud cunctum populum christianum, qui infra regnum Merwingorum consistunt. Ibid. p. 124. Nay, even in their charters, the Kings of the first race are careful to specify that they were granted with the confent of their vasfals. Ego Childebertus. Rex unà cum consensu et voluntate Francorum. &c. A. D. 558. Bouquet, ibid. 622. Chlotharius III. unà cum patribus nostris episcopis, optimatibus, cæterisque palatii nostri ministris, A. D. 664. Ibid. 648. De consensu fidelium nostrorum. Mably Observ. tom. i. p. 239. The historians likewise describe the functions of the King in the national affemblies in fuch terms as imply that his authority there was extremely fmall, and that every thing depended on the court itself. Ipfe Rex (lays

(says the author of Annales Francorum, speaking of the Field of March) sedebat in sella regia, circumstante exercitu, præcipiebatque is, die illo, quicquid a Francis decretum erat. Bouquet Recueil, tom. ii. p. 647.

That the general affemblies exercised supreme jurisdiction over all persons, and with respect to all causes, is so evident as to stand in need of no proof. The trial of Brunehaut, A. D. 613, how unjust soever the sentence against her may be, as related by Fredegarius, Chron. cap. 42. Bouquet, ibid. 430, is in itself sufficient proof of this. The notorious violence and iniquity of the sentence, serve to demonstrate the extent of jurisdiction which this assembly possessed, as a Prince so sanguinary as Clothaire II. thought the sanction of its authority would be sufficient to justify his rigorous treatment of the mother and grandmother of so many Kings.

WITH respect to conferring donatives on the Prince, we may observe, that among nations whose manners and political institutions are simple, the public, as well as individuals, having few wants, they are little acquainted with taxes, and free uncivilized tribes distain to submit to any stated imposition. This was remarkably the case of the Germans, and of all the various people that is fued from that country. Tacitus pronounces two tribes not to be of German origin, because they submitted to pay taxes. De Morib. Germ. c. 43.

And speaking of another tribe according to the ideas prevalent in Germany, he fays, " they were not degraded by the imposition of taxes." Ibid. c. 29. Upon the settlement of the Franks in Gaul, we may conclude, that while elated with the confciousness of victory, they would not renounce the high-spirited ideas of their ancestors, or voluntarily fubmit to a burden which they regarded as a badge of fervitude. The evidence of the earliest records and historians justify this conclusion. M. de Montesquieu, in the twelfth and subsequent chapters of the thirteenth book of l'Esprit des Loix, and M. de Mably Observat. sur l'Hist. de France, tom. i. p. 247, have investigated this fact with great attention, and have proved clearly that the property of freemen among the Franks was not fubject to any flated tax. That the flate required nothing from persons of this rank, but military service at their own expence, and that they should entertain the King in their houses when he was upon any progress through his dominions, or his officers when fent on any public employment, furnishing them with carriages and horses. Monarchs subfifted almost entirely upon the revenues of their own domains, and upon the perquifites arifing from the administration of justice, together with a few small fines and forfeitures exacted from such as had been guilty of certain trespasses. foreign from my subject to enumerate these. reader may find them in Observat. de M. de Mably, vol. i. p. 267.

WHEN any extraordinary aid was granted by free men to their fovereign, it was purely voluntary. In the annual affembly of March or May, it was the custom to make the King a present of money, of horses or arms, or of some other thing of value. This was an ancient custom, and derived from their ancestors the Germans. Mos est civitatibus, ultro ac viritim conferri principibus vel armentorum vel frugum, quod pro honore acceptum, etiam necessitatibus subvenit. Tacit. de Mor. Germ. c. 15. These gifts, if we may form a judgment concerning them from the general terms in which they are mentioned by the ancient historians, were confiderable, and made no fmall part of the royal revenue. Many passages to this purpose are produced by M. du Cange, Differt. iv. sur Joinville, 153. Sometimes a conquered people specified the gift which they bound themselves to pay annually, and it was exacted as a debt if they failed. Annales Metenses, ap. du Cange, ibid. p. 155. It is probable that the first step towards taxation was to afcertain the value of these gifts which were originally gratuitous, and to compel the people to pay the fum at which they were rated. Still, however, some memory of their original was preserved, and the aids granted to monarchs in all the kingdoms of Europe were termed benevolences or free gifts.

THE Kings of the fecond race in France were raised to the throne by the election of the people. Pepinus Rex pius, says an author who wrote a few F f 3 years

years after the transaction which he records, per authoritatem Papæ, & unctionem fancti chrismatis & electionem omnium Francorum in regni folio fublimatus est. Claufula de Pepini consecratione ap. Boug. Recueil des Histor. tom. v. p. 9. At the same time, as the chief men of the nation had transferred the crown from one family to another, an oath was exacted of them, that they should maintain on the throne the family which they had now promoted; ut nunquam de alterius lumbis regem in avo præfumant eligere. Ibid. p. 10. This oath the nation faithfully observed during a confiderable space of time. The posterity of Pepin kept possession of the throne; but with respect to the manner of dividing their dominions among their children, Princes were obliged to confult the general affembly of the nation. Thus Pepin himself, A. D. 768, appointed his two sons, Charles and Carlomannus, to reign as joint fovereigns; but he did this, unà cum consensu Francorum et procerum suorum seu & episcoporum, before whom he laid the matter in their general affembly. Conventus apud fanctum Dionysium, Capitular. vol. i. p. 187. This destination the French confirmed in a subsequent assembly, which was called upon the death of Pepin; for, as Eginhart relates, they not only appointed them Kings, but by their authority they regulated the limits of their respective territories. Vita Car. Magni ap. Bouquet Recueil, tom. v. p. 90. In the same manner, it was by the authority of the supreme affemblies that any dispute which arose among the descendants of the royal family was determined. Charlemagne recognizes this important part of their jurisdiction, and confirms it in his charter concerning the partition of his dominions; for he appoints, that, in case of any uncertainty with respect to the right of the several competitors, he whom the people shall chuse, shall succeed to the crown. Capitular. vol. i. 442.

UNDER the fecond race of Kings the affembly of the nation, distinguished by the name of Conventus, Malli, Placita, were regularly affembled once a year at least, and frequently twice in the year. One of the most valuable monuments of the history of France is the treatife of Hincmarus, archbishop of Rheims, de ordine Palatii. He died A. D. 882, only fixty-eight years after Charlemagne, and he relates in that short discourse the facts which were communicated to him by Adalhardus, a minister and confident of Charlemagne. From him we learn, that this great monarch never failed to hold the general affembly of his subjects every year. In quo placito generalitas univerforum majorum tam clericorum quam laicorum conveniebat. Hincm. oper, edit. Sirmondi, vol. ii. c. 29 211. In these affemblies, matters which related to the general fafety and state of the kingdom were always discussed, before they entered upon any private or less important business. Ibid. c. 33. p. 213. His immediate fucceffors imitated his example, and transacted no affair of importance without the advice of their great council.

Ff4

UNDER

UNDER the second race of Kings, the genius of the French government continued to be in a good measure democratical. The nobles, the dignified ecclefiaftics, and the great officers of the crown, were not the only members of the national council; the people, or the whole body of free-men either in person or by their representatives, had a right to be present in it. Hincmarus, in describing the manner of holding the general affemblies, fays, that if the weather was favourable, they met in the open air; but if otherwise, they had different apartments allotted to them: fo that the dignified clergy were separated from the laity, and the comites vel hujusmodi principes sibimet honorificabiliter a cætera multitudine fegregarentur. Ibid. c. 35. p. 114. Agobardus, archbishop of Lyons, thus describes a national council in the year 833, wherein he was present. Qui ubique conventus extitit ex reverendissimis episcopis, & magnificentissimis viris illustribus, collegio quoque abbatum & comitum, promiscuæque ætatis et dignitatis populo. The catera multitudo of Hincmarus is the fame with the populus of Agobardus, and both describe the inferior order of free-men. the fame who were afterwards known in France by the name of the third estate, and in England by the name of commons. The people, as well as the members of higher dignity, were admitted to a share of the legislative power. Thus, by a law, A. D. 803, it is ordained, "that the question shall be put to the people with respect to every new law, and if they shall agree to it, they shall 18 confirm

confirm it by their fignature." Capit. vol. i. 394. There are two capitularia which convey to us a full idea of the part which the people took in the administration of government. When they felt the weight of any grievance, they had a right to petition the fovereign for redrefs. One of these petitions, in which they defire that ecclefiaftics might be exempted from bearing arms, and from ferving in person against the enemy, is still extant. It is addressed to Charlemagne, A. D. 803, and expressed in such terms as could have been used only by men conscious of liberty, and of the extensive privileges which they possessed. They conclude with requiring him to grant their demand, if he wished that they should any longer continue faithful subjects to him. That great monarch, instead of being offended or surprised at the boldness of their petition, received it in a most gracious manner, and fignified his willingness to comply with it. But sensible that he himself did not possess legislative authority, he promises to lay the matter before the next general affembly, that fuch things as were of common concern to all might be there confidered and established by common consent. Capitul. tom. i. p. 405-409. As the people by their petitions brought matters to be proposed in the general assembly, we learn from another capitulare the form in which they were approved there, and enacted as laws. The propositions were read aloud, and then the people were required to declare whether they affented to them or not. They fignified their affent by crying three three times, "We are fatisfied," and then the capitulare was confirmed by the subscription of the monarch, the clergy, and the chief men of the laity. Capitul. tom. i. p. 627. A. D. 822. It feems probable from a capitulare of Carolus Calvus, A. D. 851, that the fovereign could not refule his affent to what was proposed and established by his subjects in the general assembly. Tit. ix. & 6. Capitul. vol. ii. p. 47. It is unnecessary to multiply quotations concerning the legislative power of the national affembly of France under the second race, or concerning its right to determine with regard to peace and war. The uniform style of the Capitularia is an abundant confirmation of the former. The reader who defires any farther information with respect to the latter, may confult Les Origines ou l'Ancien Gouvernement de la France, &c. tom. iii. p. 87, &c. What has been faid with respect to the admission of the people or their representatives into the supreme assembly merits attention, not only in tracing the progress of the French government, but on account of the light which it throws upon a fimilar question agitated in England, concerning the time when the commons became part of the legislative body in that kingdom.

NOTE XXXIX. SECT. III. p. 201. [QQ].

THAT important change which the constitution of France underwent, when the legislative power was transferred from the great council of the nation to the King, has been explained by the French

French antiquaries with less care than they beflow in illustrating other events in their history. For that reason I have endeavoured with greater attention to trace the steps which led to this memorable revolution. I shall here add some particulars which tend to throw additional light upon it. The Leges Salicæ, the Leges Burgundionum, and other codes published by the several tribes which fettled in Gaul, were general laws extending to every person, to every province and district where the authority of those tribes was acknowledged. But they feem to have become obsolete; and the reason of their falling into disuse is very obvious. Almost the whole property of the nation was allodial when these laws were framed. But when the feudal institutions became general, and gave rife to an infinite variety of questions peculiar to that species of tenure, the ancient codes were of no use in deciding with regard to these, because they could not contain regulations applicable to cates which did not exift at the time when they were compiled. This confiderable change in the nature of property made it necessary to publish the new regulations contained in the Capitularia. Many of these, as is evident from the perufal of them, were public laws extending to the whole French nation, in the general affembly of which they were enacted. The weakness of the greater part of the monarchs of the fecond race, and the diforder into which the nation was thrown by the depredations of the Normans, encouraged the barons to usurp an independent independent power formerly unknown in France. The nature and extent of that jurisdiction which they assumed I have formerly considered. The political union of the kingdom was at an end, its ancient constitution was dissolved, and only a feudal relation fubfifted between the King and his vassals. The regal jurisdiction extended no further than the domains of the crown. Under the last Kings of the second race, these were reduced almost to nothing. Under the first Kings of the third race, they comprehended little more than the patrimonial estate of Hugh Capet, which he annexed to the crown. Even with this accession, they continued to be of small extent. Velly, Hist. de France, tom. iii. p. 32. Many of the most confiderable provinces in France did not at first acknowledge Hugh Capet as a lawful Monarch. There are still extant several charters, granted during the first years of his reign, with this remarkable clause in the form of dating the charter; " Deo regnante, rege expectante," regnante domino nostro Iesu Christo, Francis autem contra jus regnum usurpante Ugone rege. Bouquet Recueil, tom. x. p. 544. A Monarch whose title was thus openly disputed, was not in a condition to affert the royal jurisdiction, or to limit that of the barons.

ALL these circumstances rendered it easy for the barons to usurp the rights of royalty within their own territories. The Capitularia became no less obsolete than the ancient laws; local customs were every where introduced, and became the fole rule by which all civil transactions were conducted, and all causes were tried. The wonderful ignorance, which became general in France during the ninth and tenth centuries, contributed to the introduction of customary law. Few persons, except ecclesiastics, could read; and as it was not in the power of such illiterate persons to have recourse to written laws, either as their guide in business, or their rule in administering justice, the customary law, the knowledge of which was preserved by tradition, universally prevailed.

During this period, the general affembly of the nation feems not to have been called, nor to have once exerted its legislative authority. Local customs regulated and decided every thing. A striking proof of this occurs in tracing the progress of the French jurisprudence. The last of the Capitularia collected by M. Baluze, was iffued in the year 921, by Charles the Simple. An hundred and thirty years elapted from that period to the publication of the first ordonance of the Kings of the third race, contained in the great collection of M. Lauriere, and the first ordonance which appears to be an act of legislation extending to the whole kingdom, is that of Philip Augustus, A. D. 1190. Ordon. tom. i. p. 1. 18. During that long period of two hundred and fixtynine years, all transactions were directed by local customs, and no addition was made to the statutory law of France. The ordonances, previous to

the reign of Philip Augustus, contain regulations, the authority of which did not extend beyond the King's domains.

VARIOUS instances occur of the caution with which the Kings of France ventured at first to exercise legislative authority. M. l'Ab. de Mably produces an ordonance of Philip Augustus, A. D. 1206, concerning the Jews, who, in that age, were in some measure the property of the lord in whose territories they refided. But it is rather a treaty of the King with the countess of Champagne, and the Compte de Dampierre, than an act of royal power; and the regulations in it feem to be effablished not so much by his authority, as by their consent. Observat. sur l'hist. de France, ii. p. 355. In the same manner an ordonance of Louis VIII. concerning the Jews, A. D. 1223, is a contract between the King and his nobles, with respect to their manner of treating that unhappy race of men. Ordon. tom. i. p. 47. The Establissemens of St. Louis, though well adapted to ferve as general laws to the whole kingdom, were not published as such, but only as a complete code of customary law, to be of authority within the King's domains. The wisdom, the equity, and the order conspicuous in that code of St. Louis, procured it a favourable reception throughout the kingdom. The veneration due to the virtues and good intentions of its author, contributed not a little to reconcile the nation to that legislative authority which the King began to assume. Soon after the reign

reign of St. Louis, the idea of the King's possessing supreme legislative power became common. If, fays Beaumanoir, the King makes any establishment specially for his own domain, the barons may nevertheless adhere to their ancient customs; but if the establishment be general, it shall be current throughout the whole kingdom, and we ought to believe that fuch establishments are made with mature deliberation, and for the general good. Cout. de Beauvoisis, c. 48. p. 265. Though the Kings of the third race did not call the general affembly of the nation, during the long period from Hugh Capet to Philip the Fair, yet they feem to have confulted the bishops and barons who happened to be present in their court, with respect to any new law which they published. Examples of this occur Ordon. tom. i. p. 3 & 5. This practice feems to have continued as late as the reign of St. Louis, when the legislative authority of the crown was well established. Ordon. tom. i. p. 58. A. D. 1246. This attention paid to the barons facilitated the Kings acquiring fuch full possession of the legislative power, as enabled them afterwards to exercise it without observing that formality.

THE affemblies distinguished by the name of the States General, were first called A. D. 1302, and were held occasionally from that period to the year 1614, since which time they have not been summoned. These were very different from the ancient assemblies of the French nation under

the Kings of the first and second race. There is no point with respect to which the French antiquaries are more generally agreed, than in maintaining that the States General had no suffrage in the paffing of laws, and poffeffed no proper legiflative jurisdiction. The whole tenor of the French history confirms this opinion. The form of proceeding in the States General was this. The King addressed himself, at opening the meeting, to the whole body affembled in one place, and laid before them the affairs on account of which he had fummoned them. Then the deputies of each of the three orders, of nobles, of clergy, and of the third estate, met apart, and prepared their cahier or memorial, containing their answer to the propositions which had been made to them, together with the representations which they thought proper to lay before the King. These answers and representations were considered by the King in his council, and generally gave rife to an ordonance. These ordonances were not addressed to the three estates in common. Sometimes the King addressed an ordonance to each of the estates in particular. Sometimes he mentioned the affembly of the three estates. Sometimes mention is made only of the affembly of that estate to which the ordonance is addreffed. Sometimes no mention at all is made of the affembly of estates, which suggested the propriety of enacting the law. Preface au tom. iii. des Ordon, p. xx. Thus the States General had only the privilege of advising and remonstrating; the legislative authority resided in the King alone.

NOTE XL. SECT. III. p. 206. [RR].

If the parliament of Paris be confidered only as the supreme court of justice, every thing relative to its origin and jurisdiction is clear and obvious. It is the ancient court of the King's palace, new-modelled, rendered stationary, and invested with an extensive and ascertained jurisdiction. The power of this court, while employed in this part of its functions, is not the object of present confideration. The pretenfions of the parliament to control the exercise of the legislative authority, and its claim of a right to interpole with respect to public affairs, and the political administration of the kingdom, lead to inquiries attended with great difficulty. As the officers and members of the parliament of Paris were anciently nominated by the King, were paid by him, and on feveral occasions were removed by him at pleasure (Chronic. Scandaleuse de Louis XI, chez les Mem. de Comines, tom. ii. p. 51. Edit. de M. Lenglet de Fresnoy), they cannot be considered as representatives of the people, nor could they claim any share in the legislative power as acting in their name. We must therefore search for some other fource of this high privilege. 1. The parliament was originally composed of the most eminent persons in the kingdom. The peers of France, ecclesiaftics of the highest order, and noblemen of illustrious birth, were members of it, to whom were added fome clerks and counfellors learned in the laws. Pasquier Recherches, p. 44, &c. Ency-Vol. I. Gg clopedie,

clopedie, tom. xii. Art. Parlement. p. 3, 5. A court thus conflituted was properly a committee of the States General of the kingdom, and was composed of those barons and fideles, whom the Kings of France were accustomed to consult with regard to every act of jurisdiction or legislative authority. It was natural, therefore, during the intervals between the meetings of the States General, or during those periods when that affembly was not called, to confult the parliament, to lay matters of public concern before it, and to obtain its approbation and concurrence, before any ordonance was published, to which the people were required to conform. 2. Under the fecond race of Kings, every new law was reduced into proper form by the Chancellor of the kingdom. was proposed by him to the people, and when enacted, was committed to him to be kept among the public records, that he might give authentic copies of it to all who should demand them. Hincm. de Ord. Palat. c. 16. Capitul. Car. Calv. tit. xiv. § 11. tit. xxxiii. The Chancellor prefided in the parliament of Paris at its first institution. Encyclopedie, tom. iii. art. Chancelier, p. 88. was therefore natural for the King to continue to employ him in his ancient functions of framing, taking into his custody, and publishing the ordonances which were iffued. To an ancient copy of the Capitularia of Charlemagne, the following words are subjoined: Anno tertio clementissimi domini nostri Caroli Augusti, sub ipso anno, hæc facta Capitula funt, & confignata Stephano comiti,

ut hæc manifesta faceret Parisiis mallo publico, & illa legere faceret coram Scabineis, quod ita & fecit, & omnes in uno consenserunt, quod ipsi voluissent observare usque in posterum, etiam omnes Scabinei, Episcopi, Abbates, Comites, manu propria subter fignaverunt. Bouquet Recueil, tom. v. p. 663. Mallus fignifies not only the public affembly of the nation, but the court of justice held by the Comes, or missus dominicus. Scabini were the judges, or the affeffors of the judges in that court. Here then feems to be a very early instance, not only of laws being published in a court of justice, but of their being verified or confirmed by the subscription of the judges. If this was the common practice, it naturally introduced the verifying of edicts in the parliament of Paris. But this conjecture I propole with that diffidence, which I have felt in all my reasonings concerning the laws and inftitutions of foreign nations. 3. This supreme court of justice in France was dignified with the appellation of parliament, the name by which the general affembly of the nation was diffinguished towards the close of the fecond race of Kings; and men, both in reasoning and in conduct, are wonderfully influenced by the fimilarity of names. The preferring the ancient names of the magistrates established while the republican government subfifted in Rome, enabled Augustus and his successors to affume new powers with less observation and greater eafe. The bestowing the same name in France upon two courts, which were extremely different, Gg2 contributed

contributed not a little to confound their jurisdiction and functions.

ALL these circumstances concurred in leading the Kings of France to avail themselves of the parliament of Paris as the instrument of reconciling the people to the exercise of legislative authority by the Crown. The French, accustomed to see all new laws examined and authorised before they were published, did not sufficiently distinguish between the effect of performing this in the national assembly, or in a court appointed by the King. But as that court was composed of respectable members, and who were well skilled in the laws of their country, when any new edict received its sanction, that was sufficient to dispose the people to submit to it.

When the practice of verifying and registering the royal edicts in the parliament of Paris became common, the parliament contended that this was necessary in order to give them legal authority. It was established as a fundamental maxim in French jurisprudence, that no law could be published in any other manner; that without this formality no edict or ordonance could have any effect; that the people were not bound to obey it, and ought not to confider it as an edict or ordonance until it was verified in the supreme court, after free deliberation. Roche-flavin des Parlemens de France, 4to. Gen. 1621. p. 921. The parliament, at different times, hath, with great fortitude and integrity, opposed 20

opposed the will of their sovereigns; and, notwith-standing their repeated and peremptory requisitions and commands, hath resused to verify and publish such edicts as it conceived to be oppressive to the people, or subversive of the constitution of the kingdom. Roche-slavin reckons, that between the year 1562 and the year 1589, the parliament resused to verify more than a hundred edicts of the Kings. Ibid. 925. Many instances of the spirit and constancy with which the parliaments of France opposed pernicious laws, and afferted their own privileges, are enumerated by Limnæus in his Notitiæ Regni Franciæ, lib. i. c. 9. p. 224.

Bur the power of the parliament to maintain and defend this privilege, bore no proportion to its importance, or to the courage with which the members affected it. When any monarch was determined that an edict should be carried into execution, and found the parliament inflexibly refolved not to verify or publish it, he could easily supply this defect by the plenitude of his regal power. He repaired to the parliament in person, he took possession of his feat of justice, and commanded the edict to be read, verified, registered, and published in his presence. Then, according to another maxim of French law, the King himself being present, neither the parliament, nor any magistrate whatever, can exercise any authority, or perform any function. Adveniente Principe, ceffat magiftratus. Roche-flavin, ibid. p. 928, 929. Encyclopedie, tom. ix. Art. Lit. de Justice, p. 581. Gg3

Roche-flavin mentions feveral inflances of Kings who actually exerted this prerogative, so fatal to the residue of the rights and liberties transmitted to the French by their ancestors. Pasquier produces some instances of the same kind. Rech. p. 61. Limnæus enumerates many other instances, but the length to which this note has swelled prevents me from inserting them at length, though they tend greatly to illustrate this important article in the French history, p. 245. Thus by an exertion of prerogative, which, though violent, seems to be constitutional, and is justified by innumerable precedents, all the efforts of the parliament to limit and control the King's legislative authority, are rendered inessectual.

I wave not attempted to explain the conflitution or jurisdiction of any parliament in France but that of Paris. All of them are formed upon the model of that most ancient and respectable tribunal, and all my observations concerning it will apply with full force to them.

NOTE XLI. SECT. III. p. 211. [SS].

The humiliating posture in which a great Emperor implored absolution is an event so singular, that the words in which Gregory himself describes it merit a place here, and convey a striking picture of the arrogance of that Pontiss. Per triduum, ante portam castri, deposito omni regio cultu, miserabiliter, utpote discalceatus, & laneis indutus, persistens,

persistens, non prius cum multo sletu apostolicæ miterationis auxilium, & consolationem implorari destitit, quam omnes qui ibi aderant, & ad quos rumor ille pervenit, ad tantam pietatem, & compassionis misericordiam movit, ut pro eo multis precibus & lacrymis intercedentes, omnes quidem insolitam nostræ mentis duritiem mirarentur; nonnulli vero in nobis non apostolicæ sedis gravitatem, sed quasi tyrannicæ feritatis crudelitatem esse clamârunt. Epist. Gregor. ap. Memorie della Contessa Matilda da Fran. Mar. Fiorentini. Lucca, 1756, vol. i. p. 174.

NOTE XLII. SECT. III. p. 222. [TT].

As I have endeavoured in the history to trace the various steps in the progress of the constitution of the Empire, and to explain the peculiarities in its policy very fully, it is not necessary to add much by way of illustration. What appears to be of any importance, I shall range under distinct heads.

1. WITH respect to the power, jurisdiction, and revenue of the Emperors. A very just idea of these may be formed by attending to the view which Psessel gives of the rights of the Emperors at two different periods. The first at the close of the Saxon race, A. D. 1024. These, according to his enumeration, were the right of conferring all the great ecclesiastical benefices in Germany; of receiving the revenues of them during a vacancy;

Gg4

of mortmain, or of succeeding to the effects of ecclefiaftics who died intestate. The right of confirming or of annulling the elections of the Popes. The right of affembling councils, and of appointing them to decide concerning the affairs of the church. The right of conferring the title of King upon their vaffals. The right of granting vacant fiefs. The right of receiving the revenues of the Empire, whether arifing from the Imperial domains, from imposts and tolls, from gold or filver mines, from the taxes paid by the Jews, or from forfeitures. The right of governing Italy as its proper fovereigns. The right of erecting free cities, and of establishing fairs in them. The right of affembling the diets of the Empire, and of fixing the time of their duration. The right of coining money, and of conferring that privilege on the states of the Empire. The right of administering both high and low justice within the territories of the different states. Abregé, p. 160. The other period is at the extinction of the Emperors of the families of Luxemburg and Bavaria, A. D. 1437. According to the same author, the Imperial prerogatives at that time were the right of conferring all dignities and titles, except the privilege of being a state of the Empire. The right of Preces primariæ, or of appointing once during their reign a dignitary in each chapter or religious house. The right of granting difpensations with respect to the age of majority. The right of erecting cities, and of conferring the privilege of coining money. The right of calling the meetings of the diet.

diet, and of presiding in them. Abregé, &c. p. 507. It were easy to shew that Mr. Psessel is well founded in all these affertions, and to confirm them by the testimony of the most respectable authors. In the one period the Emperors appear as mighty sovereigns with extensive prerogatives; in the other, as the heads of a consederacy with very limited powers.

THE revenues of the Emperors decreased still more than their authority. The early Emperors, and particularly those of the Saxon line, besides their great patrimonial or hereditary territories, possessed an extensive domain both in Italy and Germany, which belonged to them as Emperors. Italy belonged to the Emperors as their proper kingdom, and the revenues which they drew from it were very confiderable. The first alienations of the Imperial revenue were made in that country. The Italian cities having acquired wealth, and aspiring at independence, purchased their liberty from different Emperors, as I have observed, Note XV. The sums which they paid. and the Emperors with whom they concluded these bargains, are mentioned by Casp. Klockius de Ærario Norimb. 1671, p. 85, &c. Charles IV. and his fon Wenceslaus, diffipated all that remained of the Italian branch of the domain. The German domain lay chiefly upon the banks of the Rhine, and was under the Government of the Counts Palatine. It is not easy to mark out the boundaries, or to estimate the value of this ancient

ancient domain, which has been fo long incorporated with the territories of different Princes. Some hints with respect to it may be found in the gloffary of Speidelius, which he has entitled Speculum Juridico Philologico-politico Historicum Observationum, &c. Norimb. 1673, vol. i. 679. 1045. A more full account of it is given by Klockius de Ærario, p. 84. Besides this, the Emperors possessed considerable districts of land lying intermixed with the effates of the dukes and barons. They were accustomed to visit these frequently, and drew from their vasials in each what was fufficient to fupport their court during the time of their residence among them. Annalittæ, ap. Struv. tom. i. 611. A great part of these detached possessions were seized by the nobles during the long interregnum, or during the wars occasioned by the contests between the Emperors and the court of Rome. At the same time that fuch encroachments were made on the fixed or territorial property of the Emperors, they were robbed almost entirely of their casual revenues. The Princes and barons appropriating to themselves taxes and duties of every kind, which had usually been paid to them. Pfeffel Abregé. p. 374. The profuse and inconfiderate ambition of Charles IV. fquandered whatever remained of the Imperial revenues after fo many defalcations. He, in the year 1376, in order to prevail with the Electors to chuse his son Wenceslaus King of the Romans, promised each of them a hundred thousand crowns. But being unable to pay fo large

large a fum, and eager to secure the election to his fon, he alienated to the three ecclefiastical Electors, and to the Count Palatine, such countries as still belonged to the Imperial domain on the banks of the Rhine, and likewife made over to them all the taxes and tolls then levied by the Emperors in that district. Trithemius, and the author of the Chronicle of Magdeburgh, enumerate the territories and taxes which were thus alienated, and represent this as the last and fatal blow to the Imperial authority. Struv. Corp. vol. i. p. 437. From that period the shreds of the ancient revenues possessed by the Emperors have been so inconsiderable, that, in the opinion of Speidelius, all that they yield would be so far from defraying the expence of supporting their household, that they would not pay the charge of maintaining the posts established in the Empire. Speidelii Speculum, &c. vol. i. p. 680. These funds, inconsiderable as they were, continued to decrease. Granvelle, the minister of Charles V. afferted in the year 1546, in presence of several of the German princes, that his master drew no money at all from the Empire. Sleid. History of the Reformation, Lond. 1689. p. 372. The same is the case at present. Traite de droite publique de l'Empire, par M. le Coq. de Villeray, p. 55. From the reign of Charles IV. whom Maximilian called the pest of the Empire, the Emperors have depended entirely on their hereditary dominions, as the chief, and almost the only source of their power, and even of their fublistence.

2. THE ancient mode of electing the Emperors, and the various changes which it underwent. require fome illustration. The Imperial crown was originally attained by election, as well as those of most monarchies in Europe. An opinion long prevailed among the antiquaries and public lawyers of Germany, that the right of chusing the Emperors was vested in the archbishops of Mentz. Cologne, and Treves, the King of Bohemia, the Duke of Saxony, the Marquis of Brandenburgh, and the Count Palatine of the Rhine, by an edict of Otho III. confirmed by Gregory V. about the year 996. But the whole tenor of history contradicts this opinion. It appears, that from the earliest period in the history of Germany, the person who was to reign over all, was elected by the fuffrage of all. Thus Conrad I. was elected by all the people of the Franks, fay some annalists; by all the princes and chief men, say others; by all the nation, fay others. See their words, Struv. Corp. 211. Conringius de German. Imper. Repub, Acroamata Sex. Ebroduni 1654. p. 103. In the year 1024, posterior to the supposed regulations of Otho III. Conrad II. was elected by all the chief men, and his election was approved and confirmed by the people, Struv. Corp. 284. At the election of Lotharius II. A. D. 1125, fixty thoufand perfons of all ranks were present. He was named by the chief men, and their nomination was approved by the people. Struv. ibid. p. 357. The first author who mentions the seven Electors is Martinus Polonus, who flourished in the reign of Frederick

Frederick II. which ended A. D. 1250. We find that in all the ancient elections to which I have referred, the Princes of the greatest power and authority were allowed by their countrymen to name the person whom they wished to appoint Emperor, and the people approved or disapproved of their nomination. This privilege of voting first is called by the German lawyers the right of Prætaxation. Pfeffel Abregé, p. 316. This was the first origin of the exclusive right which the Electors acquired. The Electors poffeffed the most extensive territories of any princes in the Empire; all the great offices of the state were in their hands by hereditary right; as foon as they obtained or engroffed fo much influence in the election as to be allowed the right of prætaxation, it was vain to oppose their will, and it even became unnecessary for the inferior ecclefiaftics and barons to attend, when they had no other function but that of confirming the deed of these more powerful Princes by their affent. During times of turbulence, the fubordinate members of the Germanic body could not refort to the place of election without a retinue of armed vaffals, the expence of which they were obliged to defray out of their own revenues; and finding their attendance to be unnecessary, they were unwilling to waste them to no purpose. The rights of the seven Electors were supported by all the descendants and allies of their powerful families, who shared in the splendour and influence which they enjoyed by this diftinguishing privilege. Pfeffel Abregé, p. 376. The seven Electors

Electors were confidered as the representatives of all the orders which composed the highest class of German nobility. There were three archbishops, chancellors of the three great districts into which the Empire was anciently divided; one King, one Duke, one Marquis, and one Count. All these circumstances contributed to render the introduction of this confiderable innovation into the constitution of the Germanic body extremely easy. Every thing of importance, relating to this branch of the political state of the empire is well illustrated by Onuphrius Panvinius, an Augustinian Monk of Verona, who lived in the reign of Charles V. His treatife, if we make fome allowance for that partiality which he expresses in favour of the powers which the Popes claimed in the Empire, has the merit of being one of the first works in which a controverted point in history is examined with critical precision, and with a proper attention to that evidence which is derived from records, or the testimony of contemporary historians. It is inserted by Goldastus in his Politica Imperialia, p. 2.

As the Electors have engrossed the sole right of chusing the Emperors, they have assumed likewise that of deposing them. This high power the Electors have not only presumed to claim, but have ventured, in more than one instance, to exercise. In the year 1298, a part of the Electors deposed Adolphus of Nassau, and substituted Albert of Austria in his place. The reasons on which

they found their fentence, shew that this deed flowed from factious, not from public-spirited motives. Struv. Corp. vol. i. 540. In the first year of the sifteenth century, the Electors deposed Wencessaus, and placed the Imperial crown on the head of Rupert, Elector Palatine. The act of deposition is still extant. Goldasti Constit. vol. i. 379. It is pronounced in the name and by the authority of the Electors, and confirmed by several prelates and barons of the Empire, who were present. These exertions of the electoral power demonstrate that the Imperial authority was sunk very low.

THE other privileges of the Electors, and the rights of the electoral college, are explained by the writers on the public law in Germany.

3. WITH respect to the diets or general affemblies of the Empire, it would be necessary, if my object were to write a particular history of Germany, to enter into a minute detail, concerning the forms of affembling them, the perions who have right to be prefent, their division into feveral Colleges or Benches, the objects of their deliberation, the mode in which they carry on their debates or give their fuffrages, and the authority of their decrees or recesses. But as my only object is to give the outlines of the constitution of the German Empire, it will be fufficient to observe, that, originally, the diets of the Empire were exactly the same with the assemblies of March and of May, held by the Kings of France. They met, at least.

least, once a year. Every freeman had a right to be present. They were affemblies, in which a monarch deliberated with his subjects, concerning their common interest. Arumæus de Comitiis Rom. German. Imperii, 4to. Jenæ, 1660, cap. 7. No 20, &c. But when the Princes, dignified ecclefiaftics, and barons, acquired territorial and independent jurisdiction, the diet became an affembly of the separate states, which formed the confederacy of which the Emperor was head. While the conftitution of the Empire remained in its primitive form, attendance on the diets was a duty, like the other services due from feudal subjects to their sovereign, which the members were bound to perform in perfon; and if any member who had a right to be present in the diet neglected to attend in person, he not only lost his vote, but was liable to an heavy penalty. Arumæus de Comit. c. 5. Nº 40. Whereas, from the time that the members of the diet became independent states, the right of suffrage was annexed to the territory or dignity, not to the person. The members, if they could not, or would not attend in person, might send their deputies, as Princes fend ambassadors, and they were entitled to exercise all the rights belonging to their constituents. Ibid. Nº 42. 46. 49. By degrees, and upon the same principle of confidering the diet as an affembly of independent states, in which each confederate had the right of fuffrage, if any member poffessed more than one of those states or characters which entitle to a feat in the diet, he was allowed a proportional number of fuffrages. Pfeffel Abregé, 622. From the fame cause the Imperial cities, as soon as they became free, and acquired supreme and independent jurisdiction within their own territories, were received as members of the diet. The powers of the diet extend to every thing relative to the common concern of the Germanic body, or that can interest or affect it as a confederacy. The diet takes no cognizance of the interior administration in the different states, unless that happens to disturb or threaten the general safety.

4. WITH respect to the Imperial chamber, the jurisdiction of which has been the great source of order and tranquillity in Germany, it is necessary to observe, that this court was instituted in order to put an end to the calamities occasioned by private wars in Germany. I have already traced the rise and progress of this practice, and pointed out its pernicious effects as fully as their extensive influence during the middle ages required. In Germany, private wars feem to have been more frequent, and productive of worse consequences, than in the other countries of Europe. There are obvious reasons for this. The nobility of Germany were extremely numerous, and the causes of their diffension multiplied in proportion. The territorial jurisdiction which the German nobles acquired, was more complete than that possessed by their order in other nations. They became, in reality, independent powers, and they claimed all the privileges Hh VOL. I.

privileges of that character. The long interregnum from A. D. 1256, to A. D. 1273, accustomed them to an uncontrouled licence, and led them to forget that fubordination which is necessary in order to maintain public tranquillity. At the time when the other monarchs of Europe began to acquire fuch an increase of power and revenues as added new vigour to their goverment, the authority and revenues of the Emperors continued gradually to decline. The diets of the Empire, which alone had authority to judge between fuch mighty barons, and power to enforce its decisions, met very feldom. Conring. Acroamata, p. 234. The diets, when they did affemble, were often composed of several thousand members. Chronic Conftat. ap. Struv. Corp. i. p. 546, and were tumultuary affemblies, ill qualified to decide concerning any question of right. The session of the diets continued only two or three days; Pfeffel Abregé, p. 244: fo that they had no time to hear or discuss any cause that was in the smallest degree intricate. Thus Germany was left, in some meafure, without any court of judicature capable of deciding the contests between its more powerful members, or of repressing the evils occasioned by their private wars.

ALL the expedients which were employed in other countries of Europe, in order to restrain this practice, and which I have described Note XXI. were tried in Germany with little effect. The confederacies of the nobles and of the cities, and the

the division of Germany into various circles, which I mentioned in that Note, were found likewise infufficient. As a last remedy, the Germans had recourse to arbiters whom they called Austrega. The barons and states in different parts of Germany joined in conventions, by which they bound themselves to refer all controversies that might arise between them to the determination of Austregæ, and to submit to their sentences as final. These arbiters are named sometimes in the treaty of convention, an instance of which occurs in Ludewig Reliquæ Manuscr. omnis ævi, vol. ii. 212; fometimes they were chosen by mutual confent upon occasion of any contest that arose; fometimes they were appointed by neutral perfons; and fometimes the choice was left to be decided by lot. Datt. de Pace publica Imperii, lib. i. cap. 27. N° 60, &c. Speidelius Speculum, &c. voc. Auftrag. p. 95. Upon the introduction of this practice, the public tribunals of justice became in a great measure useless, and were almost entirely deferted.

In order to re-establish the authority of government, Maximilian I. instituted the Imperial chamber at the period which I have mentioned. This tribunal consisted originally of a president, who was always a nobleman of the first order, and of sixteen judges. The president was appointed by the Emperor, and the judges, partly by him, and partly by the States, according to forms which it is unnecessary to describe. A sum

Hh 2

was imposed, with their own consent, on the States of the Empire, for paying the salaries of the judges and officers in this court. The Imperial chamber was established first at Francfort on the Maine. During the reign of Charles V. it was removed to Spires, and continued in that city above a century and a half. It is now fixed at Wetzlar. This court takes cognizance of all questions concerning civil right between the States of the Empire, and passes judgment in the last refort, and without appeal. To it belongs likewise the privilege of judging in criminal causes, which may be considered as connected with the preservation of the public peace. Psessel.

ALL causes relating to points of feudal right or jurisdiction, together with such as respect the territorics which hold of the Empire in Italy, belong properly to the jurisdiction of the Aulic council. This tribunal was formed upon the model of the ancient court of the palace inflituted by the Emperors of Germany. It depended not upon the States of the Empire, but upon the Emperor; he having the right of appointing at pleature all the judges of whom it is composed. Maximilian, in order to procure some compensation for the diminution of his authority, by the powers vested in the Imperial chamber, prevailed on the diet, A. D. 1512, to give its consent to the establishment of the Aulic council. Since that time, it has been a great object of policy in the court of Vienna to extend 5

extend the jurisdiction, and support the authority of the Aulic council, and to circumseribe and weaken those of the Imperial chamber. The tedious forms and dilatory proceedings of the Imperial chamber have furnished the Emperors with pretexts for doing so. Lites Spiræ, according to the witticism of a German lawyer, spirant, sed nunquam expirant. Such delays are unavoidable in a court composed of members named by many different States, jealous of each other. Whereas the judges of the Aulic council, depending upon one master, and being responsible to him alone, are more vigorous and decisive. Puffendors. de Statu Imper. German. cap. v. § 20. Pfessel Abregé, p. 581.

NOTE XLIII. SECT. III. p. 225. [UU].

The description which I have given of the Turkish government is conformable to the accounts of the most intelligent travellers who have visited that empire. The count de Marsigli, in his treatise concerning the military state of the Turkish Empire, ch. vi. and the Author of Observations on the religion, laws, government, and manners of the Turks, published at London 1768, vol. i. p. 81. differ from other writers who have described the political constitution of that powerful monarchy. As they had opportunity, during their long residence in Turkey, to observe the order and justice conspicuous in several departments

ments of administration, they seem unwilling to admit that it should be denominated a despotism. But when the form of government in any country is represented to be despotic, this does not suppose that the power of the monarch is continually exerted in acts of violence, injustice, and cruelty. Under political constitutions of every species, unless when some frantic tyrant happens to hold the sceptre, the ordinary administration of government must be conformable to the principles of justice, and if not active in promoting the welfare of the people, cannot certainly have their destruction for its object. A state, in which the fovereign possesses the absolute command of a vast military torce, together with the disposal of an extensive revenue; in which the people have no privileges, and no part either immediate or remote in legislation; in which there is no body of heleditary nobility, jealous of their own rights and diffractions, to frand as an intermediate order between the Prince and the people, cannot be distinguished by any name but that of a defpotism. The restraints, however, which I have mentioned, arifing from the Capiculy, and from religion, are powerful. But they are not fuch as change the nature or denomination of the government. When a despotic prince employs an armed force to support his authority, he commits the inpreme power to their hands. The Prætorian bands in Rome dethroned, murdered, and exulted their Princes, in the fame wanton manner with the foldiery of the Porte at Conftantinople.

But

But notwithstanding this, the Roman Emperors have been considered by all political writers as possessing despotic power.

THE Author of Observations on the religion, law, government, and manners of the Turks, in a preface to the second edition of his work, hath made fome remarks on what is contained in this Note, and in that part of the text to which it refers. It is with diffidence I fet my opinion in opposition to that of a person, who has observed the government of the Turks with attention, and has described it with abilities. But after a careful review of the subject, to me the Turkish government still appears of such a species as can be ranged in no class but that to which political writers have given the name of despotism. There is not in Turkey any conftitutional restraint upon the will of the fovereign, or any barrier to circumscribe the exercise of his power, but the two which I have mentioned; one afforded by religion, the principle upon which the authority of the Sultan is founded; the other by the army, the instrument which he must employ to maintain his power. The Author represents the Ulema, or body of the law, as an intermediate order between the monarch and the people. Pref. p. 30. But whatever restraint the authority of the Ulema may impose upon the sovereign, is derived from religion. The Moulahs, out of whom the Mufti and other chief officers of the law north be chosen, are ecclefiastics. It is as interpreters of the Koran or Divine Hh4 Will

Will that they are objects of veneration. The check, then, which they give to the exercise of arbitrary power is not different from one of those of which I took notice. Indeed, this restraint cannot be very confiderable. The Mufti, who is the head of the order, as well as every inferior officer of law, is named by the Sultan, and is removable at his pleasure. The strange means employed by the Ulema in 1746, to obtain the dismission of a minister whom they hated, is a manifest proof that they possess but little constitutional authority which can ferve as a restraint upon the will of the fovereign. Observat. p. 92 of 2d edit. If the author's idea be just, it is astonishing that the body of the law should have no method of remonstrating against the errors of administration, but by fetting fire to the capital.

The Author seems to consider the Capiculy or soldiery of the Porte, neither as formidable instruments of the Sultan's power, nor as any restraint upon the exercise of it. His reasons for this opinion are, that the number of the Capiculy is small in proportion to the other troops which compose the Turkish armies, and that in time of peace they are undisciplined. Pres. 2d edit. p. 23, &c. But the troops stationed in a capital, though their number be not great, are always masters of the sovereign's person and power. The Prætorian bands bore no proportion to the legionary troops in the frontier provinces. The soldiery of the Porte are more numerous, and must posses power

of the same kind, and be equally formidable, fometimes to the fovereign, and oftener to the people. However much the discipline of the Janizaries may be neglected at prefent, it certainly was not fo in that age to which alone my defcription of the Turkish government applies. The Author observes, Pref. p. 29, that the Janizaries never deposed any Sultan of themselves, but that forne form of law, true or falfe, has been oferved, and that either the Mufti, or some other minster of religion, has announced to the unhappy prince the law which renders him unworthy of the throne: Observ. p. 102. This will always happen. In every revolution, though brought about by military' power, the deeds of the foldiery must be confirmed and carried into execution with the civil and religious formalities peculiar to the conflitution.

This addition to the Note may ferve as a further illustration of my own sentiments, but is not made with an intention of entering into any controversy with the Author of Observations, &c. to whom I am indebted for the obliging terms in which he has expressed his remarks upon what I had advanced. Happy were it for such as venture to communicate their opinions to the world, if every animadversion upon them were conveyed with the same candid and liberal spirit: In one particular, however, he seems to have misapprehended what I meant. Pref. p. 17. I certainly did not mention his or count Marsigli's long residence in Turkey, as a circumstance which should detract

detract from the weight of their aut rity. I took notice of it, in justice to my read that they might receive my opinion with distrust, as it differed from that of persons whose means of information was so far superior to mine.

NOTE XLIV. SECT. III. p. 227. [XX]

THE institution, the discipline, and the laws who give any account of the Turkish govern. at. The manner in which enthusiatin was employed in order to inspire them with courage, is thus related by Prince Cantemir: " When Amurath I. had formed them into a body, he fent them to Haji Bektash, a Turkish Saint, famous for his miracles and prophecies, defiring him to bestow on them a banner, to pray to God for their fuccess, and to give them a name. The Saint, when they appeared in his prefence, put the fleeve of his gown upon one of their heads, and faid, Let them be called Tengisheri. Let their countenance be ever bright, their hands victorious, their fword keen; let their spear always hang over the heads of their enemies, and wherever they go, may they return with a shining face." History of the Ottoman Empire, p. 33. The number of Janizaries, at the first institution of the body, was not considerable. Under Solyman, in the year 1521, they amounted to twelve thousand. Since that time their number has greatly increased, Marsigli, Etat. &c. ch. xvi. p. 68. Though Solyman possessed such abilities and authority as to restrain this formidable

formidable body within the bounds of obedience, yet its tendency to limit the power of the Sultans was, even in that age, foreseen by sagacious observers. Nicolas Daulphinois, who accompanied M. D'Aramon, ambassador from Henry II. of France to Solyman, published an account of his travels, in which he describes and celebrates the discipline of the Janizaries, but at the same time predicts that they would, one day, become formidable to their masters, and act the same part at Constantinople, as the Prætorian bands had done at Rome. Collection of Voyages from the Earl of Oxford's Library, vol. i. p. 599.

NOTE XLV. SECT, III. p. 229. [YY].

SOLYMAN the Magnificent, to whom the Turkish historians have given the furname of Canuni, or instituter of rules, first brought the finances and military establishment of the Turkish Empire into a regular form. He divided the military force into the Capiculy or foldiery of the Porte, which was properly the standing army, and Serrataculy or foldiers appointed to guard the frontiers. The chief strength of the latter consisted of those who held Timariots and Ziams. These were portions of land granted to certain persons for life, in much the same manner as the military fiefs among the nations of Europe, in return for which military fervice was performed. Solyman, in his Canu-Namé, or book of regulations, fixed with great accuracy the extent of these lands in each province of his Empire, appointed the precise number 12

number of foldiers each person who held a Timariot or a Ziam should bring into the field, and established the pay which they should receive while engaged in fervice. Count Marsigli and Sir Paul Rycaut have given extracts from this book of regulations, and it appears, that the ordinary establishment of the Turkish army exceeded a undred and fifty thousand men. When these added to the foldiery of the Porte, they formed a muitary power greatly superior to what any Christian state could command in the fixteenth century. Marfigli Etat Militaire, &c. p. 136. Rycaut's State of the Ottoman Empire, book iii. ch. ii. As Solyman, during his active reign, was engaged fo constantly in war, that his troops were always in the field, the Serrataculy became almost equal to the Janizaries themselves in discipline and valour.

It is not furprifing, then, that the authors of the fixteenth century should represent the Turks as far superior to the Christians, both in the knowledge and in the practice of the art of war. Guicciardini informs us, that the Italians learned the art of fortifying towns from the Turks. Histor, lib. xv. p. 266. Busbequius, who was ambassador from the Emperor Ferdinand to Solyman, and who had opportunity to observe the state both of the Christian and Turkish armies, published a discourse concerning the best manner of carrying on war against the Turks, in which he points out at great length the immense advantages which the Insidels possessed with respect to discipline, and military improve-

improvements of every kind. Busbequii opera, edit. Elzevir, p. 393, &c. The testimony of other authors might be added, if the matter were in any degree doutful.

BEFORE I conclude these Proofs and Illustrations, I ought to explain the reason of two omissions in them; one of which it is necessary to mention on my own account, the other to obviate an objection to this part of the work.

In all my inquiries and disquisitions concerning the progrets of government, manners, literature, and commerce, during the middle ages, as well as in my delineations of the political conftitution of the different States of Europe at the opening of the fixteenth century, I have not once mentioned M. de Voltaire, who, in his Esjay sur l'histoire generale, has reviewed the fame period, and has treated of all these subjects. This does not proceed from inattention to the works of that extraordinary man, whose genius, no less enterpriting than universal, has attempted almost every different species of literary composition. In many of these he excels. In all, if he had left religion untouched, he is instructive and agreeable. But as he seldom imitates the example of modern historians in citing the authors from whom they derived their information, I could not, with propriety, appeal to his authority in confirmation of any doubtful or unknown fact. I have often, however, followed him as my guide in these researches; and he has not

PROOFS AND ILLUSTRATIONS.

only pointed out the facts with respect to which it was of importance to enquire, but the conclusions which it was proper to draw from them. If he had, at the same time, mentioned the books which relate these particulars, a great part of my labour would have been unnecessary, and many of his readers, who now consider him only as an entertaining and lively writer, would find that he is a learned and well-informed historian.

As to the other omission, every intelligent reader must have observed, that I have not entered, either in the historical part of this volume, or in the Proofs and Illustrations, into the same detail with respect to the ancient laws and customs of the British kingdoms, as concerning those of the other European nations. As the capital facts with regard to the progress of government and manners in their own country are known to most of my readers, such a detail appeared to me to be less effential. Such facts and observations however as were necessary towards completing my defign in this part of the work, I have mentioned under the different articles which are the subjects of my disquisitions. The state of government, in all the nations of Europe, having been nearly the fame during feveral ages. nothing can tend more to illustrate the progress of the English constitution, than a careful enquiry into the laws and customs of the kingdoms on the Continent. This fource of information has been too much neglected by the English antiquaries and lawyers. Filled with admiration of that happy constitution

constitution now established in Great Britain, they have been more attentive to its forms and principles, than to the condition and ideas of remote times, which in almost every particular differ from the present. While engaged in perusing the laws, charters, and early historians of the continental kingdoms, I have often been led to think that an attempt to illustrate the progress of English jurisprudence and policy, by a comparison with those of other kingdoms in a similar situation, would be of great utility, and might throw much light on some points which are now obscure, and decide others, which have been long controverted.



INDEX

TO THE

FIRST VOLUME.

A

AFRICA, the shocking devaluations made there by the Van-

Alanus, his character of the clergy in his time, 279.

Alfred the Great, his complaint of the ignorance of the clergy,

27.7.

Allodial, possession of land, explained, 256. How such possession became subject to military service, ib. Distinguished from beneficiary tenures, 257. How converted into seudal tenures, 265.

Allodium, the etymology of that word, 270.

Ammianus, his character of the Huns, 241. 247.

Amurath, Sultan, the body of Janizaries formed by him, 226.

Anathema, form of that denounced against robbers during the middle ages, 398.

Arabia, the ancient Greek philosophy cultivated there, while lost in Europe, 387, Note. xxviii. The progress of philosophy from

thence to Europe, 388.

Aragon, rife of the kingdom of, 175. Its union with Castile, ib. The constitution and form of its government, 180. The privileges of its Cortes, ib. Office and jurisdiction of the Justica, 182. The regal power very confined, 183. Form of the allegiance sworn to the Kings of ib. The power of the nobility to controul the regal power, 416. Their privilege of union taken away by Peter IV. ib. The establishment of the inquisition opposed there, 420.

Armies, standing, the rife of, traced, 111. By what means they

became more general in Europe, 134.

Arms, the profession of, the most honourable in uncivilized nations, 80.

Ass, an account of the ancient Romish feast of, 284.

Affemblies, legislative, how formed, 43.

general, of France, their power under the first race of Kings, 197. Under the second and third, 198. At what period they lost their legislative authority, 199.

Vol. I. Ii Attila.

Attila, King of the Huns, account of his reception of the Roman ambassadors, 235, Note iii. Some account of his conquests, 242.

Arila, an affembly of Califfian nobies there, folemnly try and depose Henry IV, their long, 179.

Austria, the house of, by whom founded, 212.

B

Baillis, in the old French law, their office explained, 371.

Lal new of power, the first rise of, in Europe, 133. The progress of, 174.

Baltie, the first source of wealth, to the towns situated on that sea,

405.

Barcelona, its trade, riches, and privileges at the close of the fif-

teenth century, 424.

Barons, their independence, and mutual hostilities, under the feudal system, 19. How affected by the enfranchisement of cities, 41. Acquire a participation in legislative government, 43. Their private wars for redress of personal injuries, 52. Methods employed to abolish these contentions, 54. Origin of their supreme and independent jurisdiction, 68. The bad effects resulting from these privileges, 69. The staken by princes to reduce their courts, 71. How obliged to relinquish their judicial prerogatives. 81. Of Italy, subjected to municipal laws, 316, Note xv. Their right of territorial jurisdiction explained, 64. Their emoluments from causes decided in their courts, 366.

Benefices, under the feudal fystem, a history of, 260. When they

became hereditary, 263.

Books, an enquiry into the materials of the ancient ones, 280. The loss of old manuscripts accounted for, ib. The great prices they fold for in ancient times, 281.

Boroughs, representatives of, how introduced into national coun-

C119, 44.

Britons, ancient, their diffress and dejection when deferted by the Romans, and harassed by the Picts and Caledonians, 233, Note i.

Brotherhood of God, an account of that affociation for extinguishing

private wars, 338.

Bruges, how it became the chief mart for Italian commodities du-

ring the middle ages, 404.

Burgundy. Mary, heirefs of, the importance with which her choice in a hufband was confidered by all Europe, 124. The treacherous views of Lewis XI. of France towards her, 127. Is married to the archduke Maximilian, 128. The influence of this match on the Rate of Europe, ib.

Cofar, his account of the ancient Germans, compared with that

of Tacitus, 247.

Calatrava, military order of, in Spain, zealous to employ their prowefs in defence of the honours of the Virgin Mary, 427. The vow used by these knights, ib.

Cambray, treaty of, its object, 140. The confederacy diffolved,

142.

Canon Law, an enquiry into, 74. Progress of ecclesiastical usurpations, 75. The maxims of, more equitable than the civil

courts of the middle ages, 76.

Callile, rife of the kingdom of, 175. Its union with Aragon, ib.
Its king Henry IV. folemnly tried and deposed in an assembly of the nobles, 179. The constitution and government of that kingdom, 184. A hustory of the Cortes of, and its privileges, ib. The kingdom originally elective, 421, Nove xxxiii.

Catalonia, the spirited behaviour of the people there in desence of their rights, against their king, John II. of Aragon, 178.

Confuales, a species of the Obiati, or voluntary slaves, the obligations they entered into, described, 326.

Centenarii, or inferior judges in the middle ages, the extraordinary oath required from them, 398.

Champs de Mars, and de Mai, account of those assemblies of the

ancient Gauls, 433.

Charlemagne, his law to prevent private wars for redrefs of personal injuries, 54. 334. State of Germany under his descendents, 207. Charles IV. Emperor, diffipates the Imperial domains, 456.

val, Francis I. 86. His future grandeur founded on the marriage of the Archduke Maximilian with the heirefs of Burgundy, 128.

VII. of France, the first who introduced standing armies in Europe, 112. His successful extension of the regal preroga-

tive, II5.

VIII. of France, his character, 129. How induced to invade Italy, ib. His refources and preparations for this enterprize, 130. His rapid success, 131. A combination of the Italian states formed against him, 133. Is forced to return back to France, ib. The distressed state of his revenues by this expedition, 139.

Charlevoise, his account of the North American Indians, made use of in a comparison between them and the ancient Germans, 256.

Charters, of immunity or franchife, an enquiry into the nature of those granted by the barons of France to the towns under their jurisdictions, 301, Note xvi. Of communities, granted by the kings of France, how they tended to establish regular government, 39, 302.

Chiveley, the origin of, \$2. Its beneficial effects on human manners, \$5. The enthuliaim of, diffinguished from its falutary confequences, \$5.

Christianity, corrupted when first brought into Europe, 88. Its influence in freeing mankind from the bondage of the feudal

policy, 321, Note xx.

Circles of Germany, the occasion of their being formed, 214.

Cities, the ancient states of, under the feudal policy, 36. The freedom of, where first established, 37. Charters of community, why granted in France by Louis le Gros, 39. Obtain the like all over Europe, 40. Acquire political consideration, 43.

Clargy, the progress of their usurpations, 75. Their plan of jurisprudence more perfect than that of the civil courts in the middle ages, 76. The great ignorance of, in the early feudal times of

Europe, 270.

Cleriza, flave to Willa, widow of duke Hugo, extract from the

charter of manumission, granted to her, 323.

Clermont, council of, resolves on the holy war, 28. See Peter the Hermit, and Crusaides.

Clotaire I. inflance of the fmall authority he had over his army,

43I.

Clotharius, II. his account of the popular affemblies among the an-

cient Gauls, 433.

Clovis, the founder of the French monarchy, unable to retain a facred vafe taken by his army, from being distributed by lot among the rest of the plunder, 254, Note vii.

Colleges, the first establishment of, in Europe, 389.

Combat, judicial, the prohibition of, an improvement in the administration of judice, 56. The foundation and universality of this mode of trial, 62. The pernicious effects of, 64. Various expedients for abolishing this practice, 65. The ancient Swedish law of, for words of reproach, 352. Positive evidence, or points of proof, rendered inessectual by it, 355. This mode of trial authorized by the eccletiastics, 357. The last instances of, in

the histories of France and England, 358.

Commerce, the spirit of crusading how far savourable to, at that early period, 34. The suit establishment of free corporations, 38. Charters of community why granted by Louis le Gros, 39. The like practice obtains all over Europe, 40t The salutary effects of these institutions, ib. The low state of, during the middle ages, 92. Causes contributing to its revival, 93. Promoted by the Hanseatic league, 95. Is cultivated in the Netherlands, 96. Is introduced into Eugland by Edward III. 97. The beneficial consequences resulting from the revival of, ib. The early cultivation of, in Italy, 399.

Common Law, the first compilation of, made in England by Lord

Chief Justice Glanville, 382.

Communities, fee Charters, Cities, Commerce, and Corporations.

Comnena.

Commena, Anne, her character of the Crufaders, 203.

Computs, mariner's, when invented, and its influence on the exten-

fion of commerce, 94.

Composition for personal injuries, the motives for establishing, 14.

The custom of deduced from the practice of the arcient Germans, 359.

Compurgators, introduced as evidence in the jurisprudence of the

middle ages, 58.

Condottieri, in the Italian policy, what. 160.

Courad, count of Franconia, how he obtained election to the Empire, 207.

Conradin, the last rightful heir to the crown of Naples of the house

of Swabia, his unhappy fate, 166.

Constance, treaty of, between the emperor Frederic Barbarossa and

the free cities of Italy, 300.

Conflantinople, its flourishing state at the time of the Crusades, 30. When he taken by the Turks, 223. The Crusaders how looked upon there, 293. The account given of this city by the Latin writers, 294.

Constitutions, popular, how formed, 42.

Cordova, Gonfalvo de, secures the crown of Naples to Ferdinand

of Aragon, 168.

Corporations, and bodies politic, the ellablishments of, how far favourable to the improvement of manners, 36. The privileges of, how first claimed, 38. Charters of community, why granted by Louis le Gros in France, 39. The institution of, obtains all over Europe, 40. Their effects, 36.

Cortes of Aragon, its constitution and privileges, 180. 417.

of Caltile, a history of, and an account of its conflictation and privileges, 184. The vigilance with which it guarded its privi-

leges against the encroachments of the regul power, 187.

Crajude, the first motives of undertaking, 26. The enthusiassic zeal with which they were undertaken, 27. First promoted by Peter the hermit, 28. The success of them, 29. The confequences resulting from them, 30. Their effects on manners, ib. On property, 31. How advantageous to the enlargement of the regal power of the European princes, 32. The commercial effects of, 34, 93. The universal frenzy for engaging in these expeditions accounted for, 285, Note xiii. The privileges granted to those who engaged in them, 287. Stephen earl of Chartres and Blois, his account of them, 289. The expence of conducting them, how raised, 250. Character given of the Crusaders by the Greek writers, 293.

D

DM, the first hint of attaching moveables for the recovery of, derived from the canon law, 380.

I i 3

Deltors,

Debtors, how confidered in the rude and fimple state of fociety,

Diets of Germany, some account of, 46%.

Dollars, in the different faculties, dispute precedence with knights,

\mathbf{E}

Ecclefiastical jurisprudence, more perfect in its plan than the civil

courts of the middle ages, 76.

Exclepatics, when, and by what degrees they claimed exemption from civil jurisdiction, 376. Military talents cultivated and excreifed by those of the middle ages, 384.

Edward III. of England, his endeavours to introduce commerce

into his kingdom, 66.

Electors of Germany, the rife of their privileges, 219.

Ling, St. his del at on or description of a good Christian, 283, Note xi.

Emperors of Germany, an inquiry into their power, jurifdiction, and revenue, 455, Note xlii. The ancient mode of electing

them, 45%.

England, a funmary view of the contests between, and France, 105. The confequences of its losing its continental possessions, 108. The power of the crown, how extended, 122. See Henry VII. Why to many marks of Saxon usages and language, in comparison with those of the Normans, to be found in, 236, Note iv. When corporations began to be established in, 316. Influe of the long continuance of personal servitude there, 327. Inouire mentle Exon laws for putting an end to private wars, 340. The causes of the speedy decline of private wars there, proposed to the refearches of Antiquarians, 344. The last initances of judicial combine or corded in the hillory of, 353. The territorial jurisdiction of the barons how abolished, 374. Cause of the flow prog afro commerce there, 406. The first commercial treaty entered into iv, 208.

Evidence, the imperiect nature of that admitted in law proceedings during the middle ages, 57. Rendered ineffectual by the judi-

cial combat, 35%.

Europe, the alterations in, by the conquests of the Romans, 2. The improvements the nations of, received in exchange for their liberties, ib. Its disadvantages under this change of circumstances, 3. Inquiry into the supposed populousnels of the ancient northen nations, 5. The favage detolations exercised by the Goths, Vandale, and Huns, 11. The univerfal change occafioned by their irruptions and conquells, 12. The first rudiments of the prefent policy of, to be deduced from this period, 13. Origin of the feudal system, 14. See Feudal System. The general barbarism introduced with this policy, 21. At what time government

government and manners began to improve, 25. The causes and events which contributed to this improvement, 26. See Confades, Corporations, People. The mileries occationed by private wars in, 5%. Methods taken to fapprefs them, 54. Judicial combats prohibited, 56. The defects of judicial proceedings in the middle ages, 57. The influence of superfiction in these proceedings, 59. The origin of the independent territoria' jurisdictions of the barons, 67. The bad consequences of their judicial power, 68. The fleps taken by princes to abolith their courts, 71. An enquiry into the canon law, 74. Revival of the Roman law, 79. Effects of the spirit of charalty, 82. How improved by the progress of science and cultivation of literature, 86. Caritalanty corrupted when first received in, 8%. Scholaftic theology the first object of learning in, 89. Low state of commerce in, during the middle ages, 92. Commerce revives in Italy, (4. Is promoted by the Hanfeatic league, 95. Is cultivated in the Netherlands, 96. The effects of the progress of commerce on the polithing of manners, 97. The effects of the marriage of the heirefs of Eurgundy with the archduke Maximilian, on the state of, 128. By what means standing forces became general in, 134. Confequences of the league of Cambray to, 140. A view of the political conditution of the leveral states of, at the commencement of the fixteenth century, 146. Italy, 148. The papacy, 149. Venice, 159. Florence, 163. Naples, 164. Milan, 168. Spain, 172. France, 197. Germany, 206. Turkey, 22 ;. Instances of the fault intercourse among nations in the middle ages, 302.

F

Feedum, the etymology of that word, 271.

Feedmand, king of Aragon, unites the Spanish monarchy, by his marriage with Isabelia of Castile, 175. His schemes to exalt the regal power, 190. Resumes former grants of land from his barons, 191. Unites to the crown the grand masterships of the three military orders, 192. Why he patronized the association

called the Heir Broberhood, against the barons, 195.

Feudal lydeta, the origin of, deduced, 15. The primary object of this policy, 16. Its deficiencies for interior government, 17. Tenures of land, how established under, ib. The rise of intestine diteords among the barons under, 18. The service state of the people, 19. The weak authority of the king, ib. Its influence on the external operations of war, 20. The general extinction of all arts and sciences effected by, 21. Its operation on religion, 22. Its influence on the character of the human mind, 23. At what time government and manners began to be improved, 24. The causes and events which contributed to this improve.

improvement, 25. See Crusules. The ancient state of cities under, 36. The frame of national councils under this policy, 43. How altered by the progress of civil liberty, 44. An inquiry into the administration of justice under, 49. Private war, 51. Judicial combat, 57. The independent jurisdiction of the barons, 68. The distinction between freemen and vassals under, 258. How strangers were considered and treated under, 395.

Fiefs, under the feudal fystem, a history of, 260. When they became hereditary, 263.

Fitzstephens, observations on his account of the state of London, at the time of Henry II. 317.

Flanders. See Netherlands.

Florence, a view of the conflitution of, at the commencement of the fixteenth century, 163. The influence acquired by Cosmo

di Medici in. ib.

France, by what means the towns in, first obtained charters of community, 30. Ordinances of Louis X. and his brother Philip in favour of civil liberty, 48. Methods employed to suppress private wars, 54. St. Louis attempts to discountenance judicial combat, G. A view of the contests between, and England, 106. The confequences of its recovering its provinces from England, 108. The monarchy of, how threngthened by this event, 110. The life of flanding forces in, 111. The regal prerogative firengthened by this measure, 113. The extension of the regai prerogative vigorously pursued by Louis XI. 116. See Louis XI. The effects of the invafion of Italy by Charles VIII. 129. See Charles VIII. National infantry established in, 138. League of Cambray formed against the Venetians, 141. Battle of Ghiarradadda, 142. An enquiry into its ancient government and laws, 197. The power of the general affemblies under the first race of kings, ib. Under the second and third, 198. The regal power confined to the king's own domains, 199. When the general affembly or flates general loft their legislative authority, ib. When the kings began to affert their legislative power, 201. When the government of, became purely monarchical, 202. The regal power nevertheless restrained by the privileges of the nobinty, ib. An enquiry into the jurisdiction of its parliaments, particularly that of Paris, 204. How the allodial property of land there was altered into feudal, 267. The progress of liberty in that kingdom traced, 318, Note xix. The attempts to establish liberty there unsuccessful, 320. The last instance of judicial combat recorded in the history of, 358. The present government of, compared with that of ancient Gaul, 430, Note xxxviii. The states general when first assembled, 447.

Francis 1. of France, his character influenced by the spirit of chi-

valry, 85. Is emulated by the Emperor Charles V. 86.

Frederica

Frederic, Barbarossa, Emperor, the free cities of Italy unite against him, 300. Treaty of Constance with them, ib. Was the sirst who granted privileges to the cities in Germany, 313.

Fredum, in the ancient German usages, explained, 361.

Freemen, how dritinguished from vassals, under the feudal policy, 258. 275. Why often induced to surrender their freedom, and become slaves, 277.

Fulcherius Carnotenfis, his character of the city of Constantinople,

204.

G

Gaul, how allodial property of land was changed into fendal there, 267. The government of, compared with that of modern France, 430, Note xxxviii. The finall authority the Kings of, enjoyed over their armies, illustrated in an anecdote of Clotaire I. 431. Account of the popular affemblies of, 432. The Salie laws, how enacted, 434. Were not subject to taxation, 435. See France.

Geoffrey de Villehardonin, his account of the magnificence of Confrantinople at the time when taken by the Crufaders, 295.

Germans, ancient, an account of their usages and way of life, 247. Their method of engaging in war, ib. A comparison between them and the North American Indians, 250. Why they had no cities, 312, Note xvii. The practice of compounding for per-

fonal injuries by fines, deduced from their usages, 360.

Germany, little interested in foreign concerns at the beginning of the fifteenth century, 107. National infantry established in, 137. State of, under Charlemagne and his descendants, 206. Conrad, count of Franconia, chosen Emperor, 207. His successors in the Imperial dignity, ib. How the nobility of, acquired independent fovereign authority, 208. The fatal effects of aggrandizing the clergy in, 200. The contests between the Emperor Henry IV. and Pope Gregory VII. 210. Rife of the factions of Guelfs and Ghibelines, 211. Decline of the Imperial authority, ib. The house of Austria, by whom founded, 212. A total change in the political constitution of the Empire, ib. The state of anarchy in which it continued to the time of Maximilian, the immediate predecessor of Charles V. 213. Divided into circles, 214. The imperial chamber instituted, ib. The Aulic council reformed, 215. A view of its political conflitution at the commencement of the enfuing history, ib. Its defects pointed out, 216. The Imperial dignity and power compared, 217. Election of the Emperors, 219. The repugnant forms of civil policy in the feveral states of, 220. The opposition between the fecular and ecclenatical members of, 221. The united body hence incapable of acting with vigour, 222. When cities first began

began to be built in, 311. Note xvii. When the cities of, first acquired municipal privileges, 313. The artifles of, when enfranchifed, 314. Immediate cities in the German juriforndence, what, 315. The great calamities occasioned there by private wars, 346. Origin of the league of the Rhine, 347. When private wars were finally abolished there, ib. Inquiry into the power, jurisdiction, and revenue of its Umperers, 453, Note alii. The ancient mode of electing the Emperors, 459. Account of the diets, 463.

Ghibelines. See Guelfs.

Ghiarradadda, the battle of, fatal to the Venetians, 142.

Glarville, Lord Chief Jutlice, the first who compiled a body of

common law, in all Europe, 382.

Goths, Vandals, and Huns, overrun the Roman empire, and precipitate its downfal, 4. The flate of the countries from whence they issued, 5. The motives of the first exemsions, 6. How they came to settle in the countries they conquered, 7. A comparison drawn between them and the Romans, at the period of their irruptions, 8, & feq. Compared with the native Americans, 10. The defolations they occasioned in Europe, 11. The universal change made by them in the state of Europe, 12. The principles on which they made their fettlements, 14. Origin of the feudal system, 15. See Fended System. An inquiry into the administration of justice among, 50. Their private wars, 51. Destroy the monuments of the Roman arts, 87. Their contempt of the Romans, and hatred of their arts, 234, Note ii. Their aversion to literature, ib. No authentic account of their

crigin, or arcient history existing, 235.

Government, how limited by the foundal policy, 18. The effects of the Crusades on, 33. How effected by the enfranchisment of cities, 41. Legislative affemblies how formed, 41. Private wars detructive to the authority of, 54. Methods employed to abolish this hollile mode of redreshing injuries, 55. How affected by the supreme independent jurisdictions of the barons, 68. The theps towards abolishing them, 71. The origin and growth of royal Courts of Juffice, 73. How influenced by the revival of fcience and literature, 91. A view of, at the beginning of the fifteenth century, 100. The power of monarchs then very limited, 101. Their revenues small, ib. Their armies unfit for conquest, 102. The Princes hence incapable of extensive plans of operation, 104. The kingdoms very little connected with each other, 105. How the efforts of, from this period, became more powerful and extensive, 108. The confequences of England long its provinces in France, 109. The schemes of Louis XI. of France to extend the regal power, 116. See Louis XI. The power of the English crown enlarged, 122. See Henry VII. As also that of Spain, 123. How the use of flanding armies be-

came general, 134. A view of the political conflictation of the feveral flates of Europe, at the commencement of the festeenth century, 148. In what respects the charters of communities granted by the Kings of France, tended to introduce a regular form of, 300.

Greece, the breeding of filk worms, when introduced there, 400.

Greek Emperors, their magnificence at Conflantinople, 293.

Gregory of Tours, remarks on the state of Europe during the period of which he wrote the history, 24.

the Great, Pope, his realon for granting liberty to his

flaves, 322.

VII. Pope, the foundation of his contests with Henry IV. Emperor of Germany, 210. The mean submission he extented from Henry, 211. His own account of this affair, 454.

Guilfs and Glibelies, rife of those factions in Germany. 111.

Guicoiardini, the historian, instance of his superstraious reverence for Pope Clement VII. 159, Note.

Guntherus, a Monk, his character of Constantinople at the time when taken by the Cruiaders, 394.

H

Hanseatic league, when formed, and its influence on the extension of commerce, 95, 466.

Henry IV. of Caltile, folemnly tried and deposed by an affembly of

Castilian nobles, 179.

Emperor of Germany, the humiliating flate to which he was reduced by Pope Gregory VII. 210. 458, Note xli.

— VII. of England, his lituation at his accession to the crown, 122. Enables his barons to break their entails and fell their citates, ib. Prohibits his barons keeping retainers, ib. Encourages agriculture, and commerce, ib.

Herelannum, the nature of this fine under the feudal policy, ex-

plained, 259.

Hermandad, Santa, account of that inflitution, 430. History, the most calamitous period of, pointed out, 11.

Holy Brotherhood, an affociation in Spain under that name, on

what occasion formed, 195.

- Land, the original inducements of the Christians to refere it from the hands of the Infidels, 26. See Crufieles and Peter the Hermit.

Honour, points of the ancient Swedish law for determining, 350.

Hospitality, enforced by statutes during the middle ages, 93. Huns, instance of their enthusiastic passion for war, 235. Note, iii. Some account of their policy and manners, 240, 247. See Goths.

Time aries

I

Janizaries, origin, and formidable nature of those troops, 226.

Imperial chamber of Germany instituted, 214. The occasion of its institution, 425.

Indians, North American, a comparison drawn between them and the ancient Germans, 250.

Industry, the spirit of, how excited by the enfranchisements of

cities, 41.

Infantry, the advantages of, beyond cavalry, taught to the rest of Europe by the Swiss, 137. National bodies of established in Germany, ib. In France and Spain, ib.

Inheritance, and right of representation, between orphan grandsons

and their uncles, how decided in the tenth century, 352.

Interest of money, the necessity of admitting, in a commercial view, 402. Preposterously condemned by the churchmen of the middle ages, ib. The cause hence, of the exorbitant exactions

of the Lombard bankers, ib.

Italy, when the cities of, began to form themselves into bodies politic, 38. Commerce first improved there, and the reasons of it, 93. The revolutions in Europe occasioned by the invasion of, by Charles VIII. of France, 129. The state of, at the time of this invasion, 130. The rapid success of Charles, 1,2. A combination of the States of, drives Charles out of, and gives birth to the balance of power in Europe, 133. The political situation of, at the commencement of the fixteenth century, 148. The papacy, 149. Venice, 159. Florence, 163. Naples, 164. Milan, 168. Evidences of the desolation made there by the northern invaders of the Roman Empire, 242. How the cities of, obtained their municipal privileges, 296, Note xv. State of, under Frederic I. 297. Treaty of Constance between the free cities of, and the Emperor Frederic Barbarossa, 300.

Judgment of God, modes of acquittal by, in the law proceedings

during the middle ages, 59. 348. Note xxii.

Judicium Crucis, method of trial by, 348.

Julius II. Pope, forms a confederacy against the Venetians at Cambray, 141. Seizes part of the Venetian territories, 142. The confederacy dissolved, ib. Turns his schemes against France, 143.

Jurisprudence, ecclesiastical, more perfect in its plan than the civil

courts of the middle ages, 55. See Law.

Justice, an enquiry into the administration of, under the feudal policy, 50. The steps towards the improvement of, as civil liberty advanced, 51. Redress chiefly pursued by private wars, 52. Methods taken to suppress private wars, 54. Judicial combats prohibited, 56. The defects of judicial proceedings in the middle ages, ib. Compurgators, the nature of

that kind of evidence, 58. Methods of trial by ordeal, or acquittal by Judgment of God, 59. Origin of the supreme independent jurisdictions of the seudal barons, 68. The extent and bad essential barons courts, 71. The stops taken by monarchs to reduce the barons courts, 71. The growth of royal courts of justice, 72. Inquiry into the canon law, 74. How improved by the revival of the Roman law, 78. When the administration of became a distinct profession, 81.

Tuffice, or supreme judge of Aragon, his office and privileges, 181. An enquiry by whom this officer was elected, 409. Who was eligible to this office, 410. Nature of the tribunal appointed to controll his administration, 412. Instance of his ex-

tensive power, ib.

K

Kirr, his power how circumferibed by the barons, under the feudal fyllem, 19. By what means the Crufades tended to enlarge the regal authority, 33.

Koran, its influence in checking the Sultans of the Ottoman em-

pire, 226.

L

Land, how held at the establishment of the feudal system, 17. See

Feudal Syflem.

the property of, how confidered by the ancient barbarous nations, 255, Note viii. Allodial possession of, explained, 256. The proprietors how subjected to military service, 257. Allodial and beneficiary possession distinguished, 258. Allodial property why generally converted into seudal, 266.

Law, when the fludy of it became a diffinct employment, SI.

--- Cauon, an inquiry into, 74. The maxims of, more equitable than the civil courts of the middle ages, 76. When first

compiled, 379.

-- Roman, how it funk into oblivion. 78. Circumstances which favoured the revival of it, 79. Its effects in improving the administration of Justice, ib. Its rapid progress over Europe, 381, Note xxv.

Lareburrozes, in the Scottish law, explained, 30.4.

by the ordinances of Louis X. of France, and his brother Philip, 48. The spirit of, how excited in France, 317, Note xix. The particulars included in the charters of, granted to husbandmen, 321, Note xx. The influence of the Christian religion in extending, 322. The several opportunites of obtaining, 336.

Limoges, council of, its endeavours to extinguish private wars,

235.

Literature, the cultivation of, greatly inftrumental in civilizing the nations of Europe, 86. Why the first efforts of, ill directed, 87. The good effects nevertheless of the spirit of enquiry exerted, 89. How checked in its progress, 90. Its influence on manners and government, 91.

Liturgy, the preference between the Musarabic and Romish, how

ascertained in Spain, 353.

Lombards, the first bankers in Europe, 401. The motive of their exacting exorbitant interest, 402.

London, its flourishing state at the time of Henry II., 317.

Louis le Gros, of France. his inducement to grant privileges to towns within his own domains, 39. See Charters.

St. the great attention he paid to the administration of jus-

tice, in appeals which came before him, 371.

- X. of France, his ordinances in favour of civil liberty, 48.

—XI. of France. his character, 116. His schemes for depressing the nobility, ib. Sows divisions among them, 118. Increases the standing forces, ib. Enlarges the revenues of the crown, 119. His address in overruling the assembly of states, ib. Extends the bounds of the French monarchy, 120. The activity of his external operations, 121. His treacherous baseness towards the heiress of Burgundy, 126, 127. The effects of his conduct, 128.

— XII. his hesitation in carrying on war against the Pope, 159.
Note. Afferts his right to the dutchy of Milan, and retains

Ludovico Sforza in prison, 171.

M

Manfred, his struggles for the crown of Naples, 165.

Mankind, the most calamitous period in the history of, pointed

out, II.

Manners, the barbarity of, under the feudal establishments, after the overthrow of the Roman empire, 21. When they began to improve, 24. Effects of the Crusades on, 30. How improved by the enfranchisement of cities, 42. How improved by the erection of royal courts of justice, in opposition to the barons courts, 73. Effects of the revival of the Roman law on, 78. The beneficial tendency of the spirit of chivalry on, 82. How influenced by the progress of science, 86. 91. How polished by the revival of commerce, 97.

Manumifion, particulars included in the charters of, granted to husbandmen or slaves, 321, Note xx. The form of, 323.

Maximilian, archduke of Austria, married to Mary heires of Burgundy, 128. The influence of this match on the state of Europe, ib.

Maximilian

Maximilion, Emperor, institutes the Imperial chamber, 214. Reforms the Aulic council, ib.

Medici, Cosmo do the first of the name, the influence he acquired

in Florence, 10%.

Milan, the state of the dutchy of, at the commencement of the fixteenth century, 163. Rife and progress of the disputes concern-

ing the fuccession to, 160.

Mind, the human, a view of, under the first establishment of the feudal policy in Europe, 24. The æra of its ultimate depression, and commencement of its improvement, ib. The progress of its operations, before the full exertion of it, 87.

Ministeriales, a class of the Optati, or voluntary flaves, the pious

motives of the obligations they entered into, 326.

Moors, make a conquest of Spain, 173. By what means weakened during their establishment there, 174. Remarks on their con-

duct in Spain, 176.

Mani. if al privileges, how obtained by the cities of Italy, 296, Note xv. Scored to them by the treaty of Confiance, 302. The favourite state of, under the Roman government, 311.

N

Naples, a view of the conflitution of that kingdom, at the commencement of the fixteenth century, 164. The turbulent unfettled flate of that kingdom, 165. State of the disputes concerning the succession of the crown of, ib. The pretentions of the French and Spanish monarches to the crown of, 167.

Narbonne, community of, preamble to the writ of lummons of

Philip the Long to, 318, Note xix.

Navigation, proof of the imperfect flate of, during the middle ages, 404.

Netherlands, vigorous protecution of the manufactures of hemp and

flax there, on the revival of commerce in Europe, o6.

Normans, why so few traces of their usages and language to be found in England, in comparison with those of the Saxons, 236-Note iv.

0

Ollati, or voluntary flaves, the classes of, specified, 327.

Ordeal, methods of trial by, during the middle ages, 59. The influence of superstition in dictating these means, 60.

Otto, Frifingensis, his account of the state of Italy under Frederic I.

Ottoman, empire, the origin, and despotic nature of, 223. Becomes formidable to the Christian powers, 229.

Papary.

P

Papacy. See Popedom.

Paper, when first made of the present materials, 282.

Paris, an inquiry into the pre-eminent jurifdiction of its parliament over the other parliaments of France, 204. Its origin traced, 449, Note xl. The royal edicts registered by, before admitted to be laws, 452.

Parliaments, or legislative assemblies, how formed under the feudal policy, 43. How altered by the progress of civil liberty,

44.

People, their wretched service state under the feudal system, 19, 46.
Released from their slavish state by the enfranchisement of cities,
40. How they obtained a representation in national councils,
45. Those who lived in the country and cultivated the ground,
an inquiry into their condition under the feudal policy, 272,
Note ix.

Perha, murder in, how punished there, 363.

Priter the Hermit, excites the European princes to undertake the Holy War, 24.

—— IV. King of Aragon, defeats the leaders of the Aragonese union, and dellroys the privilege of these associations, 416.

Philip the Long, preamble to his writ of fummons to the community of Narbonne, 316, Note xix.

Philotophy, cultivated by the Arabians, when lost in Europe, 387, Note xxviii. Its progress from them into Europe, 388.

Pilgrimages to the Holy Land, when first undertaken, 26. See Crusades, and Peter the Hermit.

Placentia, council of, the Holy War resolved on by, 28. See Peter

the Hermit, and Crufades.

Plunder, how divided among the ancient northern nations, 15. Il-

lustrated in an anecdote of Clovis, 254, Note vii.

Popedem, the highest dignity in Europe at the commencement of the fixteenth century, 148. Origin and progress of the papal power, 149. The territories of the Popes unequal to the support of their spiritual jurisdiction, 150. Their authority in their own territories extremely limited, 151. The check they received from the Roman barons, 152. Nicholas Rienzo attempts to establish a democratical government in Rome, and to destroy the papal jurisdiction, 153. The papal authority considerably strengthened by the Popes Alexander VI. and Julius II. 154. See Julius II. The permanent nature of ecclesiastical dominion, 155. The civil administration of, not uniform or consistent, ib. Rome the school of political intrigue during the fixteenth century, 156. The advantages derived from the union of spiritual and temporal authority, 157. A view of the contests between the Popes and the Emperors of Germany, 210.

Populoufness

Populousness, of the ancient northern nations, an inquiry into, 5. Priscus, extract from his account of the Roman embassy to Attila King of the Huns, 235, Note iii.

Procopius, his account of the cruel devastations made by the irruption of the northern nations, 236, Note v. 240, 241.

Property, the possession of, how secured by the French charters of communities, 305.

Proveditori, in the Venetian policy, their office, 160.

R

Religion, how corrupted by the northern nations established in Europe under the feudal policy, 22. Its influence in freeing mankind from the feudal servitude, 322.

Repledging, the right of, in the law of Scotland, explained, 267. Reproach, words of, the ancient Swedish law of satisfaction for, 350. Revenues, royal, very small under the feudal policy, 102. By what means increased, 138.

Rhine, origin and intention of the league of, 347.

Rienzo, Nicholas, endeavours to rescue Rome from the Papal authority, and establish a democratical form of government there,

Robbers, the anathema pronounced against them during the middle

ages, 398.

Rodulph of Hapsburgh, how he attained election to the Empire of

Germany, 212.

Romans, an inquiry into those advantages which enabled them to conquer the rest of Europe, 2. The improvements they communicated in return for their conquests, ibid. The disadvantages the provinces laboured under from their dominion, 3. Their Empire overturned by the irruption of the barbarous nations, 4. The concurrent causes of their ruin, 6. A comparison drawn between them and the northern nations, q. All the civil arts eltablished by them obliterated, 21. The monuments of their arts industriously destroyed by their barbarous invaders, 86.

Rome, papal. See Popedom. Royal truce, an account of, 339.

Salic laws, the manner in which they were enacted, 432.

Saxons, why fo many traces of their laws, language and customs, to be found in England, 236, Note iv. Inquiry into their laws for putting an end to private wars, 342.

Science, the revival and progress of, how far instrumental in civilizing the nations of Europe, 87. A fummary view of the revival and progress of, in Europe, 387, Note xxviii.

Sforza, Francis, the foundation of his pretentions to the dutchy of Milan, 170. Is murdered by his uncle Ludovico, ibid.

VOL. I. Sforza.

Sforza, Ludovico, his private views in engaging Charles VIII. of France to invade Italy, 129. See Charles VIII. Murders his nephew Francis, and feizes Milan, 170. Is stripped of his dominions by Louis XII. of France, and dies in prison, 171.

Shipwrecks, the right, lords of manors claim to, whence derived,

395.

Silk, the rarity of, and the high price it bore in ancient Rome, remarked, 399. The breeding of filk-worms, when introduced into Greece, 400.

Slanes, letters of, in the law of Scotland, what, 362.

Slaves, under the feudal policy, their wretched state, 270. Oblati,

or voluntary flaves, the feveral classes of, 325.

Society, civil, the rude state of, under the feudal establishments after the downfall of the Roman Empire, 21. The influence of the Crusades on, 30. How improved by the establishment of municipal communities, 35. The essects the enfranchisements of the people had on, 49. Private wars how destructive to, 53. These intestine hostilities, how suppressed, 54. The administration of justice improved by the prohibition of judicial combats, 56. The growth of royal courts of justice, in opposition to the barons courts, 71. How advanced by the revival of the Roman law, 78. The effects of the spirit of chivalry in improving, 82. The revival of commerce and its influences, 93.

Solyman, Sultan, his character, 228.

Spain, a summary view of its situation, at the commencement of the fifteenth century, 86. The power of the crown of, how extended by Ferdinand, 123. National infantry established in, 138. Is conquered by the Vandals, 172, and after by the Moors, 173. The empire of the Moors in, now weakened, 174. Rife of the kingdoms of Castile and Aragon, 175. Their union into the Spanish monarchy, ibid. The ancient customs still retained amidst all its revolutions, ib. Peculiarities in its constitution and laws remarked, 177. See Aragon, and Castile. Various causes which contribute to limit the regal power in, 186. The cities of, how they attained their confideration and power, 188. The schemes of Ferdinand and Isabella, to exalt the regal power, 101. The grand masterships of the three orders, annexed to the crown, 192. The affociation of the Holy Brotherhood, on what occasion formed, 195. The tendency of this association to abridge the territorial jurisdictions of the barons, ib. The cruel devastations made by the Vandals, in the invalion of that province, 237. When the cities of, acquired municipal privileges, 315. Note xviii. The long continuance of the practice of private wars there, 344. The total annual revenue of the nobility, in the time of Charles V. 422. An enquiry into the origin of communities of free cities in, 423. St.

St. Fago, the military order of, when and on what occasion instituted, 425, Note xxxvi.

Standing armies. See Armies.

States general of France, causes which rendered their authority imperfect, 199. When they lost their legislative authority, ib. When first assembled, 447. The form of proceeding in them,

Stephen earl of Chartres and Blois, his account of the progress of

the Crufaders, 289.

Stiernhook, his account of the ancient Swedish law of satisfaction for

words of reproach, 350.

Strangers, in what light confidered, and how treated during the middle ages, and under the feudal policy, 394.

Sugar-canes, when first brought from Asia into Europe, and thence

carried to America, 400.

Sultans, Turkish, their despotic power, 225. How nevertheless limited, 226.

Superstition, its influence in the legal proceedings during the middle ages, 60.

Swis, the superior discipline of their troops, in the fifteenth century, 136. Teach other nations the advantages of infantry over cavalry, ib.

Tacitus, his account of the ancient Germans compared with that of Cæfar, 246.

Tenures, feudal, the origin of, 17. See Feudal System, and Land. Theology, scholastic, the first literary pursuits at the revival of learn.

ing in Europe, 88.

Truce of God, an account of, 336.

Turkey, origin of its government, 223. The despotic genius of this government, 224. No hereditary nobility in, ib. The authority of the Sultans, how checked, 226. Origin of the Janizaries, ib. Becomes formidable to the Christian princes, 220.

Vandals, their cruel devastations in the invasion of Spain, 238.

The havoc made by them in Africa, 239. See Goths.

Vassals under the feudal system, a view of their slavish condition, 19. 46. How they obtained infranchisement, 47. How anciently distinguished from freemen, 258. Their wretched state under their feudal masters, 270, Note ix.

Venice, the long duration of its civil constitution, and its flourishing state at the time of the league of Cambray, 140. Its possessions dismembered by the confederates, 141. Dissolves the confederacy, 142. Its rise and progress, 159. Defects in its constitu-

tion,

INDEX, &c.

tion, 160. The excellency of its naval inflitutions, 161. Its extensive commerce, 162.

Visconti, rise of the family of, in Milan, 169.

Union of the Aragonese nobles to controul the undue exercise of regal power, explained, 414. This privilege abrogated by Peter IV. 416.

Universities, the first estabishment of, in Europe, 389.

W

War, a comparison between the manner of carrying on, by barbarous and by civilized nations, 10. How rendered feeble in its operations by the feudal policy, 19. The profession of arms, the most honourable in uncivilized nations, 80. The rise of standing armies traced, 110. By what means standing forces became general, 134. The superiority of infantry in, how taught, 135.

Wars, private, for the redreffing personal injuries, under the seudal policy, an inquiry into, 51. Methods taken to abolish this hostile practice, 54. Judicial combat prohibited, 56. Inquiry into the sources of these customs, 328, note xxi. Who entitled to the privileges of exercising, 329. On what occasions undertaken, 330. Who included, or bound to engage in these disputes, 331. Who excluded from undertaking, 332. The cruel manner of prosecuting them, ib. A chronological account of the expedients made use of, to suppress them, 333. Truce of God, an account of, 336. Brotherhood of God, an account of, 338. Royal truce, what, 339. Saxon laws of England, for putting an end to them, 342. The obstinate attachment of the Spaniards to this practice, 344. The calamities occasioned in Germany by, 346.

Welsh, ancient, strangers killed with impunity by them, 396.
Willa, widow of Duke Hugo, extract from her charter of manumis-

fion, granted to Cleriza, one of her flaves, 323.

Willermus, archbishop of Tyre, his account of Constantinople, 293. Wittikindus, abbot, his testimony in favour of the judicial combat,

357-

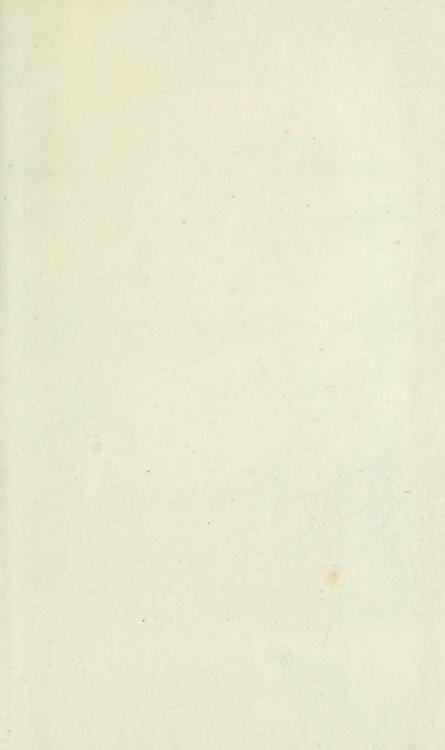
END OF THE FIRST VOLUME.













The bistory of the reign of the Enperer Author Robertson, William

UNIVERSITY OF TORONTO LIBRARY

Do not remove the card from this Pocket.

> Acme Library Card Pocket Under Pat. "Ref. Index File." Made by LIBRARY BUREAU

